THE WORLD'S CLASSICS

193

SELECTED ENGLISH SHORT STORIES

(FIRST SERIES)

Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E C 4

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON
BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS KARACHI KUALA LUMPUR
CAPE TOWN IBADAN NAIROBI ACCRA

SELECTED ENGLISH SHORT STORIES

XIX CENTURY

(FIRST SERIES)

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY

HUGH WALKER

M A , LL D

London

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

The present selection of English Short Stories *was first published in* The World's Classics *in* 1914 *and reprinted in* 1915, 1916 (*twice*), 1917, 1920 (*twice*), 1921, 1923, 1924, 1926, 1928, 1930, 1932, 1935, 1938 *Reset in* 1947 *and reprinted in* 1951, 1956, 1958, 1959 *and* 1960

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN
SET IN GREAT BRITAIN AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS OXFORD
AND REPRINTED BY JARROLD AND SONS LTD NORWICH

THE SHORT STORY IN ENGLISH

'WHATEVER men do' is a phrase which describes the theme of the story-teller as well as that of the satirist. The most universal of human interests is the interest of man in his brother man. We should expect this universal interest to manifest itself early, and to do so first in a direct and simple rather than in an indirect and critical fashion. And this is what we actually find. The literary critic can with reasonable accuracy trace the rise of satire, but who shall assign an origin to the story? Even the higher criticism would place *Genesis*—comparatively speaking—fairly near the beginning of things, and *Genesis* contains some of the finest tales ever penned. When the curtain rises on the literature of Greece, it reveals an *Iliad* and an *Odyssey*, each of which is a long story skilfully woven out of many short tales. So, again, when light breaks through the darkness of the North, it discloses that great collection of the heroic legends of Scandinavia, the *Edda*, and when our own branch of the Teutonic race migrated from the Continent, among the furniture it deemed too precious to be left behind was, apparently, the group of legends from which sprang *Beowulf*. That Celtic race which these Teutons found in possession of the land had its own heroic myths, the modern forms of which point back to a past far beyond the dawn of authentic, or at least of written history, and the differences between these two groups of stories have furnished part of the foundation for those theories of Teutonism on the one hand and of Celticism on the other, which, after having pervaded history and criticism for the last half-century, are now seriously threatened by the newer anthropology.

The story, then, is very old, and from its appearance at the dawn of literature the inference might be drawn that there can be no great difficulty in telling it. But such an inference would be unsound. It is only by comparison that *Genesis* stands near the beginning of things,

and if there is anything certain in literary criticism it is that the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* are the fine fruit of a very long process of development Evolution has taught us to think in millenniums instead of decades And while it is true that the story is, or may be, simple, it is a profound mistake to suppose that it can be effectively told by any one and without art In truth, literary simplicity is one of the most difficult of all things to attain, though the non-literary variety is within the reach of the dullest It was the latter that Shakespeare ridiculed in Dame Quickly, and Johnson in his well-known parody of the ballad style

I put my hat upon my head
  And walked into the Strand,
And there I met another man,
  With his hat in his hand

But probably more poets have rivalled the Wordsworth of the *Ode on Intimations of Immortality* than have rivalled the Wordsworth of *Michael* Further, simplicity is in no way inconsistent with the extremest depth of poignancy, a depth attainable only by the profoundest students of the human heart It is a story of childlike simplicity that leads up to that 'great and exceeding bitter cry' of Esau, which has echoed through every century since it was uttered

While, however, the short story as a form of literature is of immemorial antiquity, that particular type of it with which we have here to deal, namely, the short story told in prose and in the English language, is of quite recent growth In the main it is an affair of the nineteenth century, and the very beginnings of it—apart from translations and adaptations—cannot be traced back much farther than the age of Elizabeth For *Beowulf* is an epic in verse, and Chaucer, the first great story-teller who was English in the modern sense of the word, likewise used verse as his medium It is true, Chaucer intersperses among his vivid and racy stories in verse the prose *Tale of Meliboeus* and *The Parson's Tale*, but these are not original, and they are anything but lively

Chaucer's only rival in those early days, the author of *The Friars of Berwick*, likewise wrote in verse The early tales of both the Scandinavian and the Germanic branches of the Teutonic family are in verse The poetic *Edda* precedes the prose *Edda*, and it was in verse that the Germans celebrated Arminius and other early heroes of their race Herein certainly English literature has developed on Teutonic and not on Celtic lines, for the Celts seem to have used prose in their tales more freely and at a date relatively earlier than either the Teutonic or the Graeco-Italic peoples In English the earliest great name in the history of prose fiction is that of Malory But though the *Morte d'Arthur* is a great possession, and though it contains an element, probably considerable, of original matter, it is still, in essence, an adaptation from the French In that language the short story was already firmly rooted It had been still longer and was still more deeply rooted in Italian These were the sources from which in Elizabethan times it was transplanted into English At first we find simply translation That great storehouse of plots for the use of the dramatist, Painter's *Palace of Pleasure* (1566–7), is compiled from the resources supplied by Boccaccio, Bandello, Margaret of Navarre, and others But ten years later, in *The Petite Pallace of Pettie his Pleasure*, as Professor Atkins points out,[1] we find occasional additions made by the translator to the original, and five years later still, 'of the eight stories which make up *Rich his Farewell to the Militarie Profession* (1581), while three are taken from the Italian, the remaining five are frankly "forged onely for delight" '

Thus original prose fiction was at last established in England and in the English language It had its birth somewhat before the date last mentioned Critics are now generally agreed that *Euphues* is the earliest English novel, and the first part of *Euphues* was published in 1578 The wonder is that the development was so long delayed, for there are numerous indications that the popular appetite for tales was so keen that it might fairly be called

[1] *Cambridge History of English Literature*, iii, 343

voracious There was, therefore, plenty of stimulus to invention One indication of this appetite is the success of translations like those of Painter and Fenton, another is the fact that men like Greene, who made a precarious living by the pen, found it worth their while to write similar tales But one reason for the late development may at once be assigned It is that the skill necessary to produce either the short tale, or that longer sort of tale which we now call a novel, did not exist Highly gifted as the Elizabethans were, they had not this particular sort of talent To say that English prose was still unformed is certainly insufficient, and is only partially true Painter does well enough, and Malory and Berners do brilliantly well, when they are working on materials supplied by others When it comes to invention, Lyly flounders hopelessly, and others, like Greene and Nash, achieve only an occasional and partial success *Euphues* no doubt has merits which at one time were denied to it, but more than enough has of late been made of those merits, and, such as they are, they are certainly not merits of construction The story is naught The simple truth is, that far the greater part of *original* English prose of the Elizabethan age can now be read with enjoyment only by the few who have steeped themselves in the spirit of the time And this means, as those few are apt to forget, that the prose in question falls a long way short of greatness No such preparation is needed for the enjoyment of North's *Plutarch*, or of Malory, or Berners These men are saved through the guidance of the great artists whom they translated, or whose materials they worked up The same holds true of poetry For the enjoyment of Shakespeare we need no preparation, except such training of soul and mind as will suffice for the comprehension of greatness of any age from Adam downwards But for the enjoyment of the minor dramatists some special preparation *is* needed, and the preparation must be extensive in inverse proportion to the stature of the dramatist Hence we may formulate a useful rule for discriminating between what is assuredly great, and what is only more or less dubiously so The assuredly great is never caviare to

the general, while the critic who rediscovers greatness that for some reason has gone out of fashion and sunk into oblivion had better consider carefully the terms in which he proclaims his discovery It was some weakness in the writer that caused the oblivion, if he had been great *enough*, he would never have been forgotten The writer whom the critic has discovered may not be wholly insignificant, but that he is not a demigod is certain, and that he is not a giant is in the highest degree probable The possibilities involved in such a cataclysm as the overthrow of Rome by the barbarians are incalculable, but, such cases excepted, the rule here laid down will be found trustworthy

Now in this predicament Elizabethan prose fiction stands It is a rediscovery, the world had forgotten all about it, but the revival of interest in Elizabethan poetry which accompanied the modern revival of romance, led to a renewed interest in the prose foundations on which much of that poetry, in its dramatic form, rested It was found that there were storehouses of materials, partly original, largely borrowed, from which the dramatists had drawn Antiquaries set to work to edit rare tracts or print forgotten manuscripts, and critics followed in their steps to appraise them Both fell into the mistake of exaggerating the importance of their discoveries Nothing that they found can be ranked either in the first class or in the second What they did establish was that stories in considerable number and of considerable bulk in the aggregate were produced by the Elizabethan writers, and that these writers were the pioneers of prose fiction in English as well as of the English drama They showed, further, that this prose fiction was tolerably varied as well as extensive The short story and the novel, romance and realism, were all represented Lyly has already been mentioned as the first novelist, or rather as the writer of the first novel, for he hardly knew what he was doing, Greene may be taken as the best representative of romance, and Nash as representative of the picaresque writers There was much talent and some genius in their work Yet in the main it failed Its highest

praise is that part of it was built into the fabric of the drama. Shakespeare, as is well known, used Lodge's *Rosalynd* for *As You Like It*, and Greene's *Pandosto* for the *Winter's Tale*, but whoever turns back from the plays to the sources will find there the story without the glamour of genius, and in consequence will be apt to think the story rather commonplace.

Vigorous as it appeared for a few years, the plant of Elizabethan prose fiction soon withered away. The cause was partly the extraordinary success of the drama: the story enacted on the stage was more popular than the story read in the closet. Partly, no doubt, it lay in the defects of the story-tellers. They had no clear end in view. They did not understand the limits of their medium, prose, or the conditions of its use. Greene, for instance, encumbered himself with all the weight of euphuism. He increased the load by undertaking to point a moral before he had learnt to tell a plain tale. Of adornment his tales have only too much. He interrupts his narrative to preach, he thinks to impart variety by digression—an error serious in every kind of narrative, and fatal in short stories. Though he claimed to be learned, he has more anachronisms than Shakespeare. In *Penelope's Web*, which introduces the wife of Ulysses and her attendants, the women speak of Anacreon, Menander, and Ovid. What is far worse is the fact that Greene violates that appropriateness to character which Shakespeare observes while he flings chronology to the winds. Thus, in the same piece, the old Nurse expresses her surprise 'that Romans who covet to surpass the Grecians in all honourable and virtuous action, did not see into their own folly, when they erect temples unto Flora'—a speech hardly more fit for her mouth than it would be for that of the Nurse in *Romeo and Juliet*.

Only a few of Greene's romances can be called short stories. *Mamillia*, which fills a considerable volume, goes beyond the limit. Even *Menaphon* and *Pandosto* are upon the confines. But *Penelope's Web* and *Perimedes the Black-Smith* both contain short stories properly so called, and it is only want of skill in construction and want of precision

of purpose that prevent Greene from ranking as a story-teller still to be reckoned with

Greene occasionally crossed the space which divides romance from realism, Nash was a realist by habit and preference But Nash has little to do with the history of the short story The satirical portraits which he drew with no small skill belong to a different category, and *The Unfortunate Traveller, or the Life of Jack Wilton* (1594), by virtue of which he ranks as the forerunner of Defoe, is a long story rather than a short one, and, like the picaresque tales in general, is destitute of construction The man who came nearest to success in this particular form was one who was older in years but younger in the art than they If Thomas Deloney was born, as is supposed, in 1543, he lived to the good old age of fifty-six or fifty-seven, instead of the thirty years or so which bounded the lives of so many of his literary companions He was far past the latter limit before he entered upon a literary career He drifted from silk-weaving into ballad-writing, but he seems not to have made letters his profession much before 1586 Most of his verse is sad doggerel The prose narratives, with which alone we are concerned, were all produced during the last three or four years of his life Deloney was not only more mature than his rivals, but, writing after them, he had the advantage of their example and experience to guide him *The Gentle Craft*, a collection of stories relating to the craft of the shoemaker, is decidedly the best book of its kind that we owe to the Elizabethans *Jack of Newbury* and *Thomas of Reading* have somewhat more the character, and approach nearer to the dimensions, of novels, yet they, too, are in the main groups of stories loosely strung together on the thread of a central character In all of them Deloney shows greater skill in construction than any of his rivals, his characters are better drawn, his humour is richer, his wit less strained The cause of his success was that he was content to tell a plain story plainly, drawing from his own experience and depicting men and women whom he knew It is true he is not without his affectations Quaint and incongruous

fragments of euphuism and tags of romance remind the reader of the age to which he belonged. But in the main he is free from the strained ingenuities and far-fetched conceits which are so wearisome in his contemporaries. He is essentially a realist, and, like the giant of old, he has gained strength by contact with mother-earth. He probably gains, too, by the very absence of poetry from his nature, as Lyly and Greene were led astray by its presence.

The short story seemed, then, to be on the point of success. It was really on the verge of eclipse. When Deloney died in 1600, the short story passed into a state of suspended animation, from which it was destined, indeed, to be revived, but not through the influence of the Elizabethan story-tellers. The break between them and their modern successors is complete. The most potent cause of this eclipse was probably the overwhelming success of the drama. Deloney's stories might have held their ground against the stiffness of *Gorboduc* and the crudity of *Gammer Gurton's Needle*. But just about the time when Deloney abandoned silk-weaving for ballad-making Shakespeare migrated from Stratford to London, and when the former died the latter was in mid-career. *Jack of Newbury* and *The Gentle Craft* are nearly contemporaneous with *As You Like It* and *Twelfth Night*. Ben Jonson, Webster, Massinger, Beaumont, and Fletcher, were all to come. To their blaze the light of poor Deloney was as a farthing rushlight to the sun.

The eclipse was of long duration. Until the Puritans closed the theatres, the drama maintained the ascendancy it had won, and afterwards the energy which might have gone to the creation of stories was largely absorbed in polemics, political and religious. Such literary talent as was still artistically disinterested devoted itself to the delineation of characters rather than to narration. It was Overbury, not Deloney, who left successors. Somewhat later Bunyan proved himself to be an unsurpassed story-teller, but his religious allegories stand apart. It is not till we reach the eighteenth century that we find anything to the purpose, and in the early part

even of the eighteenth century we find rather promise than performance Swift unquestionably possessed the gift of story-telling, but he made narrative merely the vehicle of his satire So did his friend Arbuthnot And while *Robinson Crusoe* is conclusive proof of Defoe's mastership, both it and his picaresque stories are among the *incunabula* of the novel, not of the short story The periodical paper, as created and developed by Steele and Addison, seemed to be a promising medium for the publication of short stories, and in their dreams and allegories these writers approached the verge of the tale, as in the De Coverley papers they all but made a novel But in both cases what they gave was rather hints and suggestions than the thing itself Nevertheless, the medium they created was as good for the tale as it was for the essay of manners and society, and in due time the tale was born anew Not, however, until after the birth of the novel It might have been expected *a priori* that story-tellers would work up from small to great In point of fact they did the opposite, and when *Tom Jones* was published hardly a beginning had been made with the short story The first of the periodicals in which stories were a conspicuous feature was *The Adventurer*, and to its conductor, Hawkesworth, must be assigned the credit of this development Even in *The Adventurer* the tale was used in a tentative way, as if Hawkesworth thought that it required some justification other than its merit as a tale Each of his stories embodies some moral and inculcates a lesson This affords great comfort to the conscientious Nathan Drake, who praises the story of *Amurath*, perhaps Hawkesworth's masterpiece, because 'its instructive tendency is so great, its imagery and incidents are so ingeniously appropriate, that few compilers for youth have omitted to avail themselves of the lesson' The tale is a good one, but the praise, though deserved, will probably be felt at the present time to be a dubious recommendation Since the days of *Sandford and Merton* compilers for youth have learnt to be less direct in their methods The moral pill is now more thickly coated with the sugar of adventure and incident *Amurath* is, as the

name indicates, an Eastern tale, and this was the sort which Hawkesworth particularly affected. He was conscious, however, of the advantage of variety, indeed, the search for variety is the most notable feature of his conduct of *The Adventurer*. Accordingly we find tales of English life as well as tales of the East. The one feature common to all is that they have invariably that 'instructive tendency', which was so pleasing to the conscience of Drake, however the natural man in him may have delighted in story pure and simple. And Drake's criticism is important, not because it expresses his own opinion, but because it is a deduction from the actual practice of the eighteenth-century story-tellers, it was either *their* opinion, or the opinion which they felt themselves obliged to adopt.

Hawkesworth's innovation proved to be popular, and his example was followed in several of the periodical essays subsequent to *The Adventurer*. By far the greatest of those who in this respect imitated him was Oliver Goldsmith, whose *Asem, an Eastern Tale or a Vindication of the Wisdom of Providence in the Moral Government of the World*, is exactly in the manner of Hawkesworth. It has the same Eastern setting and the same 'instructive tendency'. But it has also the beauty of style which enabled Goldsmith to adorn all he touched, and in addition to that it has a force and depth of thought which deserve the attention of those who accept the 'inspired idiot' theory with regard to its author. The *Adventures of a Strolling Player* shows that Goldsmith could tell another kind of tale as well.

After Goldsmith the periodical essay was moribund, but the tale was doomed to no second Rip Van Winkle sleep. For now not the drama but prose fiction was becoming the dominant form of literature, and prose had shaken itself free from poetic tradition and influence. Thanks to the Queen Anne writers, the secret of a lucid and simple structure of sentence was attainable by any one who would take a little trouble. Through two centuries of experience and effort the limits of what was possible, or of what it was expedient to attempt, had

been more or less determined Hence the revival of romance produced no such result as had followed in the wake of the earlier romance The Elizabethan romancer rambled where he pleased He could not deny himself the pleasure of producing an effect which seemed to him good in itself His successor of the later eighteenth century, generally a less richly gifted man, had a keener eye to business and a sounder sense of what was relevant, and therefore effective, because not merely good in itself, but good in its setting Lyly had a richer mind than Mrs Radcliffe, but *The Mysteries of Udolpho* is, as a story, incomparably better than *Euphues*—than which, indeed, nothing could well be worse The indispensable conditions of the art had at last been learnt, there were Englishmen who combined with the power to tell stories with effect, the will to tell them for their own sake, and no longer for their 'instructive tendency'

One of the difficulties of the short story had hitherto been that of publication The tale was not a thing that could stand alone, as it were The long story, the novel, had, naturally, a substantive existence of its own it was a book The short story required support This had not been so great a difficulty in the earlier days of frequent and multifarious tracts and pamphlets But that mode of publication had long ceased to be one that was favourable to the prospects of a short story 'Burning questions' could be discussed, because readers were drawn by the blaze and heat, but the short story had no such power of attraction The periodical, as Steele and Addison and their successors understood it, might have afforded the solution of the difficulty, but, as we have seen, it was now itself in decay Its decay was, however, coincident with the rise of another species of periodical, which has supplied just the medium necessary for the short story The 'magazine', by its very name, indicates a scope and a variety which were never aimed at by *The Tatler*, *The Spectator*, or *The Rambler* Already *The Gentleman's Magazine* illustrated that variety, and the day was approaching when the periodicals similarly varied were destined to multiply beyond the dreams of an earlier time There is

the closest connexion between the development of this class of periodicals and the short story They have acted and reacted upon one another, and each has been in turn cause and effect of the increase of the other The more magazines the more need of stories to fill them, and the more stories the wider the demand for magazines It is therefore a fact of the first importance in the history of the story that, while *The Tatler* and *The Spectator* were fading into *The Mirror* and *The Lounger* and *The Looker-on*, and these in turn into *The Ruminator*, *The Reasoner*, *The Moderator*, and *The Spy*, about which few people know more than they learn from the industrious Drake, there sprang into being that other periodical literature of more diversified contents which has since grown to such astonishing proportions The earlier periodical was the nurse of the essay The periodical of our own day nourishes it still, but with a difference We rather like our essay to be solid, to embody facts, to be useful, and the light play of Addison scarcely reaches our standard of utility Men have been known to think that poetry itself would be much more satisfactory if it only proved something, and even poets have been known to give them some excuse by professing to 'justify' something to something else In this respect the modern magazine is less literary than the eighteenth-century periodical But there seems to be a law of compensation at work, for, *per contra*, the story, which the modern magazine nourishes also, now needs to be nothing but a story It requires no longer to be written with one eye upon the tale and the other upon the 'compilers for youth' The imagery and incidents have to be ingeniously appropriate to nothing but the story itself It is a blessed emancipation It is the final and indispensable step which alone can make literature fully and emphatically literary

'I'll larn ye for bein' a toad', is the exclamation of the little boy who feels himself an instrument of divine vengeance in beating the poor ugly creature to death The rigid moralist who prides himself on being nothing but a moralist, and who is hardly more competent to judge than is the little boy to be the agent of omnipotence,

would 'larn' all literature that does not carry its moral on the surface 'for bein' literary' To him it is ugly, and with ludicrous inconsistency he, who cares nothing for beauty, acts on the principle that ugliness is the unpardonable sin He might seem to be negligible, but he is not, he has repeatedly been a power in the land He has imposed his principle on every form of literature in turn Milton himself was influenced by it Wordsworth ruined much of his work by his determination to be a teacher Not that the determination was itself wrong, the error lay in the poet's failure to perceive that he was a better teacher in proportion as he forgot that he was anything but a poet So if our moralist selected a volume of essays, among the contents would be dissertations buttressed with columns of figures and stiff with facts, and 'useful' discussions as to the best means of supplying the negroes of the West Indies with moral pocket-handkerchiefs The literary selector would insert instead something from Lamb, as sinuous and as sweet as a tendril of honeysuckle And in the long run, by the mysterious alchemy of nature, the essay on Roast Pig would prove a more potent agent of morality than the essay on moral pocket-handkerchiefs The little boy was wrong He was not an instrument of divine vengeance If any supernatural power guided him, it was one of a widely different sort It is best not to 'larn' the toad to be anything but a toad The business of literature is just to be literary, and every form of it has a right to develop in its own way, subject only to the laws of beauty A great poet has declared beauty to be identical with truth We may follow him at least so far as to believe that they are closely connected, and then draw the further easy inference that morality, if it be sound, cannot be far off from the pair

This priceless freedom was won for the short story in the nineteenth century It was partly due to the multiplicity of the magazines, for what was unpleasing to one editor might be the very thing another desired And hence the nineteenth century is, with the few years of the present century that are already gone, emphatically the period of the short story in English What went before

was merely preparatory To that freedom is due the variety, grave and gay, weird and grotesque, romantic and realistic, illustrated in the present volume To the ample practice it ensured must be ascribed, too, the skill in construction here shown A Robert Louis Stevenson would have been impossible in the Elizabethan age Possibly Shakespeare could have told the story of *Markheim* if he had tried, but we may be sure that no lesser contemporary could have done so

Perhaps a word of caution may be necessary with regard to what has been said above concerning the moral in the story Some of the stories here printed embody a moral Wherein, therefore, it may be asked, do they differ from the stories of the eighteenth century to which reference has been made? The answer is twofold In the first place, occasionally to convey a moral is a very different thing from feeling under the obligation to convey a moral always That feeling marks one excess, which is bad In the eighteenth century it stunted the development of the story But reaction led, in criticism at least, to an opposite excess It cannot be sound to criticize the novel of purpose, as it has frequently been criticized, because of the presence of the purpose The question always is, how is the purpose handled? And this leads to the second part of the answer It is certainly true that some of the stories here included are stories with a moral The selections from Hawthorne are clearly of that character, and yet most people will feel that they are among the most artistic of all How, then, can that be good in Hawthorne which is bad, or at the best dubiously good, in Hawkesworth and Goldsmith? The difference is the difference between perfect and imperfect fusion In Hawkesworth the moral is obtruded, and the story seems to labour under its weight, in Hawthorne there is perfect balance—the story *is* the moral Sydney Smith jested about the diminutive body of his friend Jeffrey Jeffrey, he said, had not body enough to cover his mind, his intellect was 'indecently exposed' So it is with the moral of the story There is artistic indecency in the exposure of the moral in Hawkesworth's stories

In Hawthorne's case, for the reason already given, there is no exposure at all We have to strip off the covering of story before we see the moral Hawkesworth had his moral first clear before his mind, and then asked how he was to illustrate it Hawthorne was the Puritan grown into an artist, who could not have separated story from moral if he had tried Probably no other man has blended the two so perfectly as Hawthorne, but where a direct moral is conveyed at all, success is to be measured by the nearness of approach to him On this principle, and on no other, can purpose be judged

It is in construction that the nineteenth-century story-tellers are most conspicuously superior to their predecessors Strange as it seems in the case of men who were dramatists, the Elizabethans were absolutely incompetent in this respect, and Deloney, who was no dramatist, is the only exception among them In the eighteenth century the story was made to develop in obedience to a law which was external to itself But in the nineteenth century the story-tellers had become conscious of the vital importance of skilful evolution, and were convinced that the evolution must be from within They showed this mastery from the first Scott's *Wandering Willie* is almost faultless in construction, and, much as Scott has been criticized for carelessness in matters of art, there is no better example in English of art skilfully applied to this purpose The result is all the finer because Scott probably gave very little conscious heed to the matter The art is concealed from the reader until he deliberately reflects, because it was almost as completely hid from the writer Other examples hardly less perfect may be found in this volume Hawthorne's, Bret Harte's, and Stevenson's stories are models of literary art—an art, however, which is somewhat more obtruded than it is in the case of Scott This is especially true in the case of Poe His stories lack nothing of art except the concealment of art They grow under his hand like a building at the bidding of the architect, with stroke of axe and clang of hammer *Wandering Willie* seems to spring from the brain of the author as silently as Solomon's temple

rose No other story in the language gives quite the same impression of masterly ease

This mastery of the art of construction was partly due to the example and transmitted experience of the novelists In *Tom Jones* Fielding had supplied a model which has rarely been equalled in its own kind For the short story this art was even more important than for the novel, because flaws which would be serious in the former may pass unobserved in the latter The miniature-painter is not greater than the portrait-painter, but his work must necessarily be finer Hence the importance of avoiding divagation and irrelevancy Thackeray may stop the progress of *Vanity Fair* in order to preach a sermon, Dickens may introduce a crowd of characters who have little or nothing to do with the story, and it remains an open question whether the gain in richness be not more than sufficient compensation for the loss of symmetry But in a short story redundancy would be like a splash of vivid colour from a large brush on a miniature, and consequently strict limitation to the matter in hand is among the laws of perfect obligation Now one of the conditions without which obedience to the law is impossible is that the writer must be perfectly clear in his own mind as to the effect he wishes to produce Here was the rock on which the Elizabethans made shipwreck They did not know clearly their own purpose, and were in consequence ready to take up any suggestion of the moment Like the Knights of the Round Table they followed wandering fires The Galahad who finds the Grail is he who knows precisely what he seeks, and seeks that alone We have such Galahads of art among the nineteenth-century story-tellers Take, for example, either Bret Harte's *Tennessee's Partner* or *Miggles*, or Stevenson's *Markheim* In each of these stories the writer knows beyond all peradventure what he wishes to do, and he does it, and rigidly excludes all else Another condition, without which perfect obedience to the law would hardly be possible, is that the matter in hand must be simple But, as has already been shown, simple here is far from meaning superficial The story may be as

profound as the writer is capable of making it Hawthorne again and again handles problems deeper than human plummet ever sounded, and he shows that the essence of the most carefully wrought novel may be condensed into the tale *The Minister's Black Veil*, a story for which space has not been found, is *The Scarlet Letter* in abstract and brief summary But while profundity is not excluded, complexity is That which is complex requires lengthy treatment, and it obscures the distinction between the relevant and the irrelevant Thus the outlines are blurred, and that unity of impression which is essential to the short story becomes exceedingly difficult, if not impossible, of attainment

Unity of impression is the end, and limitation to the matter in hand, the means Here, perhaps, light is thrown upon the failure of the Elizabethans The principles of the short story are more akin to the laws of the Greek than to those of the Elizabethan drama It was because the Greeks aimed at unity of impression that they obeyed the law of the three unities The Elizabethans, aiming at holding the mirror up to nature, flung two of the unities to the winds, and greatly modified the third Nature is not simple, she is highly complex, the impression she produces is not one, but multifarious The dramatic experience of the Elizabethans may therefore have been misleading rather than helpful Their genius for the stage may have militated against their success, as their genius for poetry certainly did, and the fact that the one successful story-teller among them was not a dramatist may be less paradoxical than at first it seems

The stories of the nineteenth century are remarkable for their variety They cover nearly the whole range of human interests and appeal to every emotion, from horror and fear to tenderness and pity They touch heaven and earth and hell They are dreamy or intensely active, domestic or adventurous They illustrate crime almost inhuman or virtue almost superhuman They are such as boys may read and fully understand, or they convey suggestions which the wisest man cannot wholly

exhaust—they are stories of adventure or profound psychological studies They are masterpieces of construction, or they are so simply put together that it is doubtful whether they should be called essays or stories Such, for example, is the case with *Rab and his Friends* But has not Brown himself settled the question by calling the first part a story, and declaring his opinion that 'Homer, or King David, or Sir Walter, alone were worthy to rehearse' it? All or nearly all this variety is illustrated in the present volume But it must be borne in mind that the selection here presented has been partly determined by conditions of space Thus Mrs Gaskell's *Cousin Phillis* is perhaps the finest example in English of the domestic idyll, and is surpassed among its author's works only by the exquisite *Cranford* But *Cousin Phillis* is too long to be included Again, Hogg's *Confessions of a Justified Sinner* is one of the most masterly psychological studies we possess, and if it had been possible this ought certainly to have been included, both for its intrinsic merits, and as an example of a single triumph won by a man who wrote many stories, but no other than this which is worth reading But, again, the *Confessions* is too long, and so the collection is the poorer for the absence of a tale which is unique in English The same consideration explains the absence of two other great names On their merit as stories De Quincey's *Kalmuck Tartars* and Ruskin's *King of the Golden River* certainly deserved inclusion, but they would take too much space William Carleton, too, has been regretfully excluded His *Tubber Derg* would have been among the stories selected, but for the fact that it is too long, while such stories of his as are suitable in length seemed hardly to harmonize in tone with the volume as a whole

The list of authors shows clearly enough, as we should expect, a close connexion between novel-writing and the telling of short stories Many of the most prominent novelists, English and American, are here represented Scott, Dickens, Hawthorne, Meredith, and Stevenson, all contribute On the other hand, the names that are absent are almost as striking as those that are present

We have no Thackeray, no George Eliot, no Bronte, no Jane Austen Why is it that the female absentees so much outnumber the male? Except Mrs Gaskell, not one of our first-rate women novelists appears Have the women disdained the art, or is there something in its conditions which renders it less perfectly adapted to their genius than the novel? Certainly there are differences between the two forms Notwithstanding their occasional success, we should hardly rank either Scott or Dickens as typical narrators of short stories It may be merely that they were too busy telling long ones, but at any rate the fact remains that their short stories are few and relatively unimportant On the other hand, there are great novelists who are equally great in both arts, or who perhaps in the short tale excel their own work on the larger scale There may be a doubt even about Hawthorne He has written two or three very great novels, but so many very great tales that a volume might be compiled from him alone Stevenson, again, notwithstanding the triumph of *Weir of Hermiston,* is perhaps even greater in the tale than in the novel, and Bret Harte is so beyond any question Comparatively few who have not written novels appear on the list, but they are sufficient to demonstrate that the highest success may be achieved in the tale by those who are not novelists No one will dispute Poe's extraordinary skill, and Washington Irving's *Rip Van Winkle* is unsurpassed for charm

The fact that the two writers just named are Americans suggests the reflection that the American element is remarkably conspicuous in this volume If a selection were made of essays, English and American, or of lyrical poems, the American element would certainly be in much smaller proportion to the whole Here, measured by number of tales, about one-third are American Would any competent judge give, for the period covered, a proportion of one-tenth in poetry? It is interesting to speculate as to the cause of this relative preponderance, but very difficult to find a satisfactory explanation We might imagine that the hurry of American life had something to do with it Is not the short story the literary

form we should expect to find flourishing in a country where there is hardly time to eat meals? The whole tone of the stories selected negatives any such supposition. They seem to emanate from and to be written for Sleepy Hollow. This is the character not only of Washington Irving's tale, but of Hawthorne's stories as well. The author of the *Twice-Told Tales* had time to brood and meditate, and he expected his readers to find time too. They are not the sort of literature to be taken on the street-car and read to the 'scoosh' of the electric wire. Hawthorne, it is true, belongs to a time when English influence was more potent in American literature than it is now. But even Bret Harte's tales, written in the midst of the rush and tumult of the Californian gold fever, are fanciful and introspective rather than hurried and adventurous. The curtain rises that we may see Tennessee's Partner conduct a funeral, and his heart is in the coffin there with Tennessee. Life has come to a stop with Miggles, and the whole point of the story is to illustrate her fidelity to the paralytic Jim. The outcasts of Poker Flat are shown at the moment when the problem before them is just how to die—and how to die, not in action, not with the tense strain of every muscle, but simply in the mood of acquiescence in inevitable fate. To come down to a still later date, the exquisite New England pictures of Miss Wilkins are pictures of quietude, and sometimes of stagnation. There are undoubtedly correlations between literature and life, but they are of a subtle kind. The suggested correlation between a bustling life and a literature of hurry and adventure is too obvious. And it is not true, the facts contradict it. There is more ground for the theory that the cause is to be found in the freedom which American publishers have enjoyed and taken to print the works of English authors without paying for them. They were not likely to pay for native talent when the works of the English romancers from Scott downwards were theirs already. In the case of the novel this was a weighty consideration, in the case of the short story it was much less important. And other considerations had to be taken into account

Local colour could only be supplied by men of the locality New England had a life and traditions of its own, the Southern States had their negroes, only a Californian could thoroughly understand California But though we may believe that there is an element of truth in this theory, it would be rash to take it as a full explanation of the fact If it were, the case of poetry ought to correspond with that of prose We should expect England to produce the long epics and the ambitious tragedies, but both countries to be equally prolific of lyrics and occasional verse But it is not so While the American story-tellers are the equals of any, not only Shelley and Keats and Coleridge, but in later days Tennyson and Browning and Swinburne stand as supreme in the lyric as they do in their longer works It must suffice to note the fact that there is no other form of literature in which America is so eminent as in the writing of short stories, and to leave it unexplained The wind of genius bloweth where it listeth Science can imperfectly explain the direction of the winds, and criticism can explain still more imperfectly the activities of genius

HUGH WALKER

ST DAVID'S COLLEGE,
LAMPETER
1914

NOTE

THE task of selecting the stories for this volume and that of writing the introduction have fallen to different persons, but, as they have proceeded by way of friendly criticism and suggestion, they are not unwilling to accept a joint responsibility for the volume as a whole The aim has been to make the selection representative of the best work of the kind in the nineteenth century, and, while many excellent stories have necessarily been excluded, it is hoped that none has been included which wise criticism would pronounce unworthy

HUGH WALKER
H. S MILFORD

CONTENTS

SIR WALTER SCOTT

1771–1832

THE TWO DROVERS

[From *Chronicles of the Canongate* 1827]

CHAPTER I

IT was the day after Doune Fair when my story commences It had been a brisk market, several dealers had attended from the northern and midland counties in England, and English money had flown so merrily about as to gladden the hearts of the Highland farmers Many large droves were about to set off for England, under the protection of their owners, or of the topsmen whom they employed in the tedious, laborious, and responsible office of driving the cattle for many hundred miles, from the market where they had been purchased, to the fields or farm-yards where they were to be fattened for the shambles

The Highlanders, in particular, are masters of this difficult trade of driving, which seems to suit them as well as the trade of war It affords exercise for all their habits of patient endurance and active exertion They are required to know perfectly the drove-roads, which lie over the wildest tracts of the country, and to avoid as much as possible the highways, which distress the feet of the bullocks, and the turnpikes, which annoy the spirit of the drover, whereas, on the broad green or grey track, which leads across the pathless moor, the herd not only move at ease and without taxation, but, if they mind their business, may pick up a mouthful of food by the way At night, the drovers usually sleep along with their cattle, let the weather be what it will, and many of these hardy men do not once rest under a roof during a journey on foot from Lochaber to Lincolnshire They are paid very highly, for the trust reposed is of the last importance, as it depends on their prudence,

vigilance, and honesty, whether the cattle reach the final market in good order, and afford a profit to the grazier But as they maintain themselves at their own expense, they are especially economical in that particular At the period we speak of, a Highland drover was victualled for his long and toilsome journey with a few handfuls of oatmeal, and two or three onions, renewed from time to time, and a ram's horn filled with whisky, which he used regularly, but sparingly, every night and morning His dirk, or *skene-dhu* (i e black-knife), so worn as to be concealed beneath the arm, or by the folds of the plaid, was his only weapon, excepting the cudgel with which he directed the movements of the cattle A Highlander was never so happy as on these occasions There was a variety in the whole journey, which exercised the Celt's natural curiosity and love of motion, there were the constant change of place and scene, the petty adventures incidental to the traffic, and the intercourse with the various farmers, graziers, and traders, intermingled with occasional merry-makings, not the less acceptable to Donald that they were void of expense,—and there was the consciousness of superior skill, for the Highlander, a child amongst flocks, is a prince amongst herds, and his natural habits induce him to disdain the shepherd's slothful life, so that he feels himself nowhere more at home than when following a gallant drove of his country cattle in the character of their guardian

Of the number who left Doune in the morning, and with the purpose we described, not a *Glunamie* of them all cocked his bonnet more briskly, or gartered his tartan hose under knee over a pair of more promising *spiogs* (legs) than did Robin Oig M'Combich, called familiarly Robin Oig, that is, Young, or the Lesser, Robin Though small of stature, as the epithet Oig implies, and not very strongly limbed, he was as light and alert as one of the deer of his mountains He had an elasticity of step which, in the course of a long march, made many a stout fellow envy him, and the manner in which he busked his plaid and adjusted his bonnet, argued a consciousness that so smart a John Highlandman as

himself would not pass unnoticed among the Lowland lasses The ruddy cheek, red lips, and white teeth, set off a countenance which had gained by exposure to the weather a healthful and hardy rather than a rugged hue If Robin Oig did not laugh, or even smile frequently, as indeed is not the practice among his countrymen, his bright eyes usually gleamed from under his bonnet with an expression of cheerfulness ready to be turned into mirth

The departure of Robin Oig was an incident in the little town, in and near which he had many friends, male and female He was a topping person in his way, transacted considerable business on his own behalf, and was entrusted by the best farmers in the Highlands, in preference to any other drover in that district He might have increased his business to any extent had he condescended to manage it by deputy, but except a lad or two, sister's sons of his own, Robin rejected the idea of assistance, conscious, perhaps, how much his reputation depended upon his attending in person to the practical discharge of his duty in every instance He remained, therefore, contented with the highest premium given to persons of his description, and comforted himself with the hopes that a few journeys to England might enable him to conduct business on his own account, in a manner becoming his birth For Robin Oig's father, Lachlan M'Combich (or *son of my friend*, his actual clan-surname being M'Gregor), had been so called by the celebrated Rob Roy, because of the particular friendship which had subsisted between the grandsire of Robin and that renowned cateran Some people even say that Robin Oig derived his Christian name from one as renowned in the wilds of Loch Lomond as ever was his namesake Robin Hood, in the precincts of merry Sherwood 'Of such ancestry,' as James Boswell says, 'who would not be proud?' Robin Oig was proud accordingly, but his frequent visits to England and to the Lowlands had given him tact enough to know that pretensions, which still gave him a little right to distinction in his own lonely glen, might be both obnoxious and ridiculous if

preferred elsewhere The pride of birth, therefore, was like the miser's treasure, the secret subject of his contemplation, but never exhibited to strangers as a subject of boasting

Many were the words of gratulation and good luck which were bestowed on Robin Oig The judges commended his drove, especially Robin's own property, which were the best of them Some thrust out their snuff-mulls for the parting pinch—others tendered the *doch-an-dorrach*, or parting cup All cried—'Good luck travel out with you and come home with you —Give you luck in the Saxon market—brave notes in the *leabhar-dhu*' (black pocket-book), 'and plenty of English gold in the *sporran*' (pouch of goatskin)

The bonny lasses made their adieus more modestly, and more than one, it was said, would have given her best brooch to be certain that it was upon her that his eye last rested as he turned towards the road

Robin Oig had just given the preliminary '*Hoo-hoo!*' to urge forward the loiterers of the drove, when there was a cry behind him

'Stay, Robin—bide a blink Here is Janet of Tomahourich—auld Janet, your father's sister '

'Plague on her, for an auld Highland witch and spaewife,' said a farmer from the Carse of Stirling, 'she'll cast some of her cantrips on the cattle '

'She canna do that,' said another sapient of the same profession—'Robin Oig is no the lad to leave any of them, without tying St Mungo's knot on their tails, and that will put to her speed the best witch that ever flew over Dimayet upon a broomstick '

It may not be indifferent to the reader to know, that the Highland cattle are peculiarly liable to be *taken*, or infected, by spells and witchcraft, which judicious people guard against by knitting knots of peculiar complexity on the tuft of hair which terminates the animal's tail

But the old woman who was the object of the farmer's suspicion, seemed only busied about the drover, without paying any attention to the drove Robin, on the contrary, appeared rather impatient of her presence

'What auld-world fancy,' he said, 'has brought you so early from the ingle-side this morning, Muhme? I am sure I bid you good-even, and had your God-speed, last night.'

'And left me more siller than the useless old woman will use till you come back again, bird of my bosom,' said the sibyl. 'But it is little I would care for the food that nourishes me, or the fire that warms me, or for God's blessed sun itself, if aught but weel should happen to the grandson of my father. So let me walk the *deasil* round you, that you may go safe out into the foreign land, and come safe home.'

Robin Oig stopped, half embarrassed, half laughing, and signing to those near that he only complied with the old woman to soothe her humour. In the meantime, she traced around him, with wavering steps, the propitiation, which some have thought has been derived from the Druidical mythology. It consists, as is well known, in the person who makes the *deasil* walking three times round the person who is the object of the ceremony, taking care to move according to the course of the sun. At once, however, she stopped short, and exclaimed, in a voice of alarm and horror, 'Grandson of my father, there is blood on your hand.'

'Hush, for God's sake, aunt,' said Robin Oig, 'you will bring more trouble on yourself with this *taishataragh*' (second sight) 'than you will be able to get out of for many a day.'

The old woman only repeated, with a ghastly look, 'There is blood on your hand, and it is English blood. The blood of the Gael is richer and redder. Let us see—let us'——

Ere Robin Oig could prevent her, which, indeed, could only have been done by positive violence, so hasty and peremptory were her proceedings, she had drawn from his side the dirk which lodged in the folds of his plaid, and held it up, exclaiming, although the weapon gleamed clear and bright in the sun, 'Blood, blood—Saxon blood again. Robin Oig M'Combich, go not this day to England!'

'Prutt trutt,' answered Robin Oig, 'that will never do neither—it would be next thing to running the country For shame, Muhme—give me the dirk You cannot tell by the colour the difference betwixt the blood of a black bullock and a white one, and you speak of knowing Saxon from Gaelic blood All men have their blood from Adam, Muhme Give me my skene-dhu, and let me go on my road I should have been half-way to Stirling Brig by this time —Give me my dirk, and let me go'

'Never will I give it to you,' said the old woman—'Never will I quit my hold on your plaid, unless you promise me not to wear that unhappy weapon'

The women around him urged him also, saying few of his aunt's words fell to the ground, and as the Lowland farmers continued to look moodily on the scene, Robin Oig determined to close it at any sacrifice

'Well, then,' said the young drover, giving the scabbard of the weapon to Hugh Morrison, 'you Lowlanders care nothing for these freats Keep my dirk for me I cannot give it to you, because it was my father's, but your drove follows ours, and I am content it should be in your keeping, not in mine —Will this do, Muhme?'

'It must,' said the old woman—'that is, if the Lowlander is mad enough to carry the knife'

The strong westlandman laughed aloud

'Goodwife,' said he, 'I am Hugh Morrison from Glenae, come of the Manly Morrisons of auld langsyne, that never took short weapon against a man in their lives And neither needed they They had their broadswords, and I have this bit supple,' showing a formidable cudgel—'for dirking ower the board, I leave that to John Highlandman—Ye needna snort, none of you Highlanders, and you in especial, Robin I'll keep the bit knife, if you are feared for the auld spaewife's tale, and give it back to you whenever you want it'

Robin was not particularly pleased with some part of Hugh Morrison's speech, but he had learned in his travels more patience than belonged to his Highland constitution originally, and he accepted the service of

the descendant of the Manly Morrisons without finding fault with the rather depreciating manner in which it was offered

'If he had not had his morning in his head, and been but a Dumfriesshire hog into the boot, he would have spoken more like a gentleman But you cannot have more of a sow than a grumph It's shame my father's knife should ever slash a haggis for the like of him'

Thus saying (but saying it in Gaelic), Robin drove on his cattle, and waved farewell to all behind him He was in the greater haste, because he expected to join at Falkirk a comrade and brother in profession, with whom he proposed to travel in company

Robin Oig's chosen friend was a young Englishman, Harry Wakefield by name, well known at every northern market, and in his way as much famed and honoured as our Highland driver of bullocks He was nearly six feet high, gallantly formed to keep the rounds at Smithfield, or maintain the ring at a wrestling match, and although he might have been overmatched, perhaps, among the regular professors of the Fancy, yet, as a yokel, or rustic, or a chance customer, he was able to give a bellyful to any amateur of the pugilistic art Doncaster races saw him in his glory, betting his guinea, and generally successfully, nor was there a main fought in Yorkshire, the feeders being persons of celebrity, at which he was not to be seen, if business permitted But though a *sprack* lad, and fond of pleasure and its haunts, Harry Wakefield was steady, and not the cautious Robin Oig M'Combich himself was more attentive to the main chance His holidays were holidays indeed, but his days of work were dedicated to steady and persevering labour In countenance and temper, Wakefield was the model of old England's merry yeomen, whose clothyard shafts, in so many hundred battles, asserted her superiority over the nations, and whose good sabres, in our own time, are her cheapest and most assured defence His mirth was readily excited, for, strong in limb and constitution, and fortunate in circumstances, he was disposed to be pleased with

everything about him, and such difficulties as he might occasionally encounter were, to a man of his energy, rather matter of amusement than serious annoyance. With all the merits of a sanguine temper, our young English drover was not without his defects. He was irascible, sometimes to the verge of being quarrelsome, and perhaps not the less inclined to bring his disputes to a pugilistic decision, because he found few antagonists able to stand up to him in the boxing ring.

It is difficult to say how Harry Wakefield and Robin Oig first became intimates, but it is certain a close acquaintance had taken place betwixt them, although they had apparently few common subjects of conversation or of interest, so soon as their talk ceased to be of bullocks. Robin Oig, indeed, spoke the English language rather imperfectly upon any other topics but stots and kyloes, and Harry Wakefield could never bring his broad Yorkshire tongue to utter a single word of Gaelic. It was in vain Robin spent a whole morning, during a walk over Minch Moor, in attempting to teach his companion to utter, with true precision, the shibboleth *Llhu*, which is the Gaelic for a calf. From Traquair to Murder-cairn, the hill rang with the discordant attempts of the Saxon upon the unmanageable monosyllable, and the heartfelt laugh which followed every failure. They had, however, better modes of awakening the echoes, for Wakefield could sing many a ditty to the praise of Moll, Susan, and Cicely, and Robin Oig had a particular gift at whistling interminable pibrochs through all their involutions, and what was more agreeable to his companion's southern ear, knew many of the northern airs, both lively and pathetic, to which Wakefield learned to pipe a bass. Thus, though Robin could hardly have comprehended his companion's stories about horse-racing, and cock-fighting or fox-hunting, and although his own legends of clan-fights and *creaghs*, varied with talk of Highland goblins and fairy folk, would have been caviare to his companion, they contrived nevertheless to find a degree of pleasure in each other's company, which had for three years back induced them to join

company and travel together, when the direction of their journey permitted Each, indeed, found his advantage in this companionship, for where could the Englishman have found a guide through the Western Highlands like Robin Oig M'Combich? and when they were on what Harry called the *right* side of the Border, his patronage, which was extensive, and his purse, which was heavy, were at all times at the service of his Highland friend, and on many occasions his liberality did him genuine yeoman's service

Chapter II

Were ever two such loving friends!—
  How could they disagree?
Oh thus it was, he loved him dear,
  And thought how to requite him,
And having no friend left but he,
  He did resolve to fight him

Duke upon Duke

The pair of friends had traversed with their usual cordiality the grassy wilds of Liddesdale, and crossed the opposite part of Cumberland, emphatically called The Waste In these solitary regions, the cattle under the charge of our drovers derived their subsistence chiefly by picking their food as they went along the drove-road, or sometimes by the tempting opportunity of a *start and owerloup*, or invasion of the neighbouring pasture, where an occasion presented itself But now the scene changed before them, they were descending towards a fertile and enclosed country, where no such liberties could be taken with impunity, or without a previous arrangement and bargain with the possessors of the ground This was more especially the case, as a great northern fair was upon the eve of taking place, where both the Scotch and English drover expected to dispose of a part of their cattle, which it was desirable to produce in the market, rested and in good order Fields were therefore difficult to be obtained, and only upon high terms This necessity occasioned a temporary

separation betwixt the two friends, who went to bargain, each as he could, for the separate accommodation of his herd Unhappily it chanced that both of them, unknown to each other, thought of bargaining for the ground they wanted on the property of a country gentleman of some fortune, whose estate lay in the neighbourhood The English drover applied to the bailiff on the property, who was known to him It chanced that the Cumbrian squire, who had entertained some suspicions of his manager's honesty, was taking occasional measures to ascertain how far they were well founded, and had desired that any inquiries about his enclosures, with a view to occupy them for a temporary purpose, should be referred to himself As, however, Mr Ireby had gone the day before upon a journey of some miles' distance to the northward, the bailiff chose to consider the check upon his full powers as for the time removed, and concluded that he should best consult his master's interest, and perhaps his own, in making an agreement with Harry Wakefield Meanwhile, ignorant of what his comrade was doing, Robin Oig, on his side, chanced to be overtaken by a good-looking smart little man upon a pony, most knowingly hogged and cropped, as was then the fashion, the rider wearing tight leather breeches and long-necked bright spurs This cavalier asked one or two pertinent questions about markets and the price of stock So Robin, seeing him a well-judging civil gentleman, took the freedom to ask him whether he could let him know if there was any grassland to be let in that neighbourhood, for the temporary accommodation of his drove He could not have put the question to more willing ears The gentleman of the buckskin was the proprieter with whose bailiff Harry Wakefield had dealt or was in the act of dealing

'Thou art in good luck, my canny Scot,' said Mr Ireby, 'to have spoken to me, for I see thy cattle have done their day's work, and I have at my disposal the only field within three miles that is to be let in these parts'

'The drove can pe gang two, three, four miles very

pratty weel indeed,' said the cautious Highlander, 'put what would his honour be axing for the peasts pe the head, if she was to tak the park for twa or three days?'

'We won't differ, Sawney, if you let me have six stots for winterers, in the way of reason'

'And which peasts wad vour honour pe for having?'

'Why—let me see—the two black—the dun one—yon doddy—him with the twisted horn—the brocket—How much by the head?'

'Ah,' said Robin, 'your honour is a shudge—a real shudge—I couldna have set off the pest six peasts petter mysell, me that ken them as if they were my pairns, puir things'

'Well, how much per head, Sawney?' continued Mr Ireby

'It was high markets at Doune and Falkirk,' answered Robin

And thus the conversation proceeded, until they had agreed on the *prix juste* for the bullocks, the squire throwing in the temporary accommodation of the enclosure for the cattle into the boot, and Robin making, as he thought, a very good bargain, provided the grass was but tolerable The squire walked his pony alongside of the drove, partly to show him the way, and see him put into possession of the field, and partly to learn the latest news of the northern markets

They arrived at the field, and the pasture seemed excellent But what was their surprise when they saw the bailiff quietly inducting the cattle of Harry Wakefield into the grassy Goshen which had just been assigned to those of Robin Oig M'Combich by the proprietor himself! Squire Ireby set spurs to his horse, dashed up to his servant, and learning what had passed between the parties, briefly informed the English drover that his bailiff had let the ground without his authority, and that he might seek grass for his cattle wherever he would, since he was to get none there At the same time he rebuked his servant severely for having transgressed his commands, and ordered him instantly to assist in ejecting the hungry and weary cattle of Harry

Wakefield, which were just beginning to enjoy a meal of unusual plenty, and to introduce those of his comrade, whom the English drover now began to consider as a rival

The feelings which arose in Wakefield's mind would have induced him to resist Mr Ireby's decision, but every Englishman has a tolerably accurate sense of law and justice, and John Fleecebumpkin, the bailiff, having acknowledged that he had exceeded his commission, Wakefield saw nothing else for it than to collect his hungry and disappointed charge, and drive them on to seek quarters elsewhere Robin Oig saw what had happened with regret, and hastened to offer to his English friend to share with him the disputed possession But Wakefield's pride was severely hurt, and he answered disdainfully, 'Take it all, man—take it all—never make two bites of a cherry—thou canst talk over the gentry, and blear a plain man's eye—Out upon you, man—I would not kiss any man's dirty latchets for leave to bake in his oven'

Robin Oig, sorry but not surprised at his comrade's displeasure, hastened to entreat his friend to wait but an hour till he had gone to the squire's house to receive payment for the cattle he had sold, and he would come back and help him to drive the cattle into some convenient place of rest, and explain to him the whole mistake they had both of them fallen into But the Englishman continued indignant 'Thou hast been selling, hast thou? Aye, aye,—thou is a cunning lad for kenning the hours of bargaining Go to the devil with thyself, for I will ne'er see thy fause loon's visage again—thou should be ashamed to look me in the face'

'I am ashamed to look no man in the face,' said Robin Oig, something moved, 'and, moreover, I will look you in the face this blessed day, if you will bide at the clachan down yonder'

'Mayhap you had as well keep away,' said his comrade, and turning his back on his former friend, he collected his unwilling associates, assisted by the bailiff, who took some real and some affected interest in seeing Wakefield accommodated

After spending some time in negotiating with more than one of the neighbouring farmers, who could not, or would not, afford the accommodation desired, Henry Wakefield at last, and in his necessity, accomplished his point by means of the landlord of the ale-house at which Robin Oig and he had agreed to pass the night, when they first separated from each other Mine host was content to let him turn his cattle on a piece of barren moor, at a price little less than the bailiff had asked for the disputed enclosure, and the wretchedness of the pasture, as well as the price paid for it, were set down as exaggerations of the breach of faith and friendship of his Scottish crony This turn of Wakefield's passions was encouraged by the bailiff (who had his own reasons for being offended against poor Robin, as having been the unwitting cause of his falling into disgrace with his master), as well as by the innkeeper, and two or three chance guests, who stimulated the drover in his resentment against his quondam associate,—some from the ancient grudge against the Scots which, when it exists anywhere, is to be found lurking in the Border counties, and some from the general love of mischief, which characterizes mankind in all ranks of life, to the honour of Adam's children be it spoken Good John Barleycorn also, who always heightens and exaggerates the prevailing passions, be they angry or kindly, was not wanting in his offices on this occasion, and confusion to false friends and hard masters was pledged in more than one tankard

In the meanwhile Mr Ireby found some amusement in detaining the northern drover at his ancient hall He caused a cold round of beef to be placed before the Scot in the butler's pantry, together with a foaming tankard of home-brewed, and took pleasure in seeing the hearty appetite with which these unwonted edibles were discussed by Robin Oig M'Combich The squire himself lighting his pipe, compounded between his patrician dignity and his love of agricultural gossip, by walking up and down while he conversed with his guest

'I passed another drove,' said the squire, 'with one

of your countrymen behind them—they were something less beasts than your drove, doddies most of them—a big man was with them—none of your kilts though, but a decent pair of breeches—D'ye know who he may be?'

'Hout aye—that might, could, and would be Hughie Morrison—I didna think he could hae peen sae weel up He has made a day on us, but his Argyleshires will have wearied shanks How far was he pehind?'

'I think about six or seven miles,' answered the squire, 'for I passed them at the Christenbury Crag, and I overtook you at the Hollan Bush If his beasts be leg-weary, he will be maybe selling bargains'

'Na, na, Hughie Morrison is no the man for pargains—ye maun come to some Highland body like Robin Oig hersell for the like of these—put I maun pe wishing you goot night, and twenty of them let alane ane, and I maun down to the Clachan to see if the lad Harry Waakfelt is out of his humdudgeons yet'

The party at the ale-house were still in full talk, and the treachery of Robin Oig still the theme of conversation, when the supposed culprit entered the apartment His arrival, as usually happens in such a case, put an instant stop to the discussion of which he had furnished the subject, and he was received by the company assembled with that chilling silence which, more than a thousand exclamations, tells an intruder that he is unwelcome Surprised and offended, but not appalled by the reception which he experienced, Robin entered with an undaunted and even a haughty air, attempted no greeting as he saw he was received with none, and placed himself by the side of the fire, a little apart from a table at which Harry Wakefield, the bailiff, and two or three other persons, were seated The ample Cumbrian kitchen would have afforded plenty of room, even for a larger separation

Robin, thus seated, proceeded to light his pipe, and call for a pint of twopenny

'We have no twopence ale,' answered Ralph Heskett, the landlord, 'but as thou find'st thy own tobacco, it's

like thou may'st find thy own liquor too—it's the wont of thy country, I wot.'

'Shame, goodman,' said the landlady, a blithe bustling house-wife, hastening herself to supply the guest with liquor—'Thou knowest well enow what the strange man wants, and it's thy trade to be civil, man. Thou shouldst know, that if the Scot likes a small pot, he pays a sure penny.'

Without taking any notice of this nuptial dialogue, the Highlander took the flagon in his hand, and addressing the company generally, drank the interesting toast of 'Good markets', to the party assembled.

'The better that the wind blew fewer dealers from the north,' said one of the farmers, 'and fewer Highland runts to eat up the English meadows.'

'Saul of my pody, put you are wrang there, my friend,' answered Robin, with composure, 'it is your fat Englishmen that eat up our Scots cattle, puir things.'

'I wish there was a summat to eat up their drovers,' said another, 'a plain Englishman canna make bread within a kenning of them.'

'Or an honest servant keep his master's favour, but they will come sliding in between him and the sunshine,' said the bailiff.

'If these pe jokes,' said Robin Oig, with the same composure, 'there is ower mony jokes upon one man.'

'It is no joke, but downright earnest,' said the bailiff. 'Harkye, Mr. Robin Ogg, or whatever is your name, it's right we should tell you that we are all of one opinion, and that is, that you, Mr. Robin Ogg, have behaved to our friend Mr. Harry Wakefield here, like a raff and a blackguard.'

'Nae doubt, nae doubt,' answered Robin, with great composure, 'and you are a set of very pretty judges, for whose prains or pehaviour I wad not gie a pinch of sneeshing. If Mr. Harry Waakfelt kens where he is wranged, he kens where he may be righted.'

'He speaks truth,' said Wakefield, who had listened to what passed, divided between the offence which he

had taken at Robin's late behaviour, and the revival of his habitual feelings of regard

He now arose, and went towards Robin, who got up from his seat as he approached, and held out his hand

'That's right, Harry—go it—serve him out,' resounded on all sides—'tip him the nailer—show him the mill'

'Hold your peace all of you, and be——,' said Wakefield, and then addressing his comrade, he took him by the extended hand, with something alike of respect and defiance 'Robin,' he said, 'thou hast used me ill enough this day, but if you mean, like a frank fellow, to shake hands, and make a tussle for love on the sod, why I'll forgie thee, man, and we shall be better friends than ever'

'And would it not pe petter to pe cood friends without more of the matter?' said Robin, 'we will be much petter friendships with our panes hale than proken'

Harry Wakefield dropped the hand of his friend, or rather threw it from him

'I did not think I had been keeping company for three years with a coward'

'Coward pelongs to none of my name,' said Robin, whose eyes began to kindle, but keeping the command of his temper 'It was no coward's legs or hands, Harry Waakfelt, that drew you out of the fords of Frew, when you was drifting ower the plack rock, and every eel in the river expected his share of you'

'And that is true enough, too,' said the Englishman, struck by the appeal

'Adzooks!' exclaimed the bailiff—'sure Harry Wakefield, the nattiest lad at Whitson Tryste, Wooler Fair, Carlisle Sands, or Stagshaw Bank, is not going to show white feather? Ah, this comes of living so long with kilts and bonnets—men forget the use of their daddles'

'I may teach you, Master Fleecebumpkin, that I have not lost the use of mine,' said Wakefield, and then went on 'This will never do, Robin We must have a turn-up, or we shall be the talk of the country-side I'll be d——d if I hurt thee—I'll put on the gloves gin thou like Come, stand forward like a man'

'To pe peaten like a dog,' said Robin, 'is there any reason in that? If you think I have done you wrong, I'll go before your shudge, though I neither know his law nor his language'

A general cry of 'No, no—no law, no lawyer! a bellyful and be friends,' was echoed by the bystanders

'But,' continued Robin, 'if I am to fight, I've no skill to fight like a jackanapes, with hands and nails'

How would you fight, then,' said his antagonist, 'though I am thinking it would be hard to bring you to the scratch anyhow'

'I would fight with proadswords, and sink point on the first plood drawn—like a gentlemans'

A loud shout of laughter followed the proposal, which indeed had rather escaped from poor Robin's swelling heart, than been the dictate of his sober judgement

'Gentleman, quotha!' was echoed on all sides, with a shout of unextinguishable laughter, 'a very pretty gentleman, God wot—Canst get two swords for the gentlemen to fight with, Ralph Heskett?'

'No, but I can send to the armoury at Carlisle, and lend them two forks, to be making shift with in the meantime'

'Tush, man,' said another, 'the bonny Scots come into the world with the blue bonnet on their heads, and dirk and pistol at their belt'

'Best send post,' said Mr Fleecebumpkin, 'to the squire of Corby Castle, to come and stand second to the *gentleman*'

In the midst of this torrent of general ridicule, the Highlander instinctively griped beneath the folds of his plaid

'But it's better not,' he said in his own language 'A hundred curses on the swine-eaters, who know neither decency nor civility!'

'Make room, the pack of you,' he said, advancing to the door

But his former friend interposed his sturdy bulk, and opposed his leaving the house, and when Robin Oig attempted to make his way by force, he hit him down

on the floor, with as much ease as a boy bowls down a nine-pin

A ring, a ring!' was now shouted, until the dark rafters, and the hams that hung on them, trembled again, and the very platters on the *bink* clattered against each other 'Well done, Harry,'—'Give it him home, Harry,'—'Take care of him now,—he sees his own blood!'

Such were the exclamations, while the Highlander, starting from the ground, all his coldness and caution lost in frantic rage, sprang at his antagonist with the fury, the activity, and the vindictive purpose, of an incensed tiger-cat But when could rage encounter science and temper? Robin Oig again went down in the unequal contest, and as the blow was necessarily a severe one, he lay motionless on the floor of the kitchen The landlady ran to offer some aid, but Mr Fleecebumpkin would not permit her to approach

'Let him alone,' he said, 'he will come to within time, and come up to the scratch again He has not got half his broth yet'

'He has got all I mean to give him, though,' said his antagonist, whose heart began to relent towards his old associate, 'and I would rather by half give the rest to yourself, Mr Fleecebumpkin, for you pretend to know a thing or two, and Robin had not art enough even to peel before setting to, but fought with his plaid dangling about him —Stand up, Robin, my man! all friends now, and let me hear the man that will speak a word against you, or your country, for your sake'

Robin Oig was still under the dominion of his passion, and eager to renew the onset, but being withheld on the one side by the peace-making Dame Heskett, and on the other, aware that Wakefield no longer meant to renew the combat, his fury sank into gloomy sullenness

'Come, come, never grudge so much at it, man,' said the brave-spirited Englishman, with the placability of his country, 'shake hands, and we will be better friends than ever'

'Friends!' exclaimed Robin Oig, with strong emphasis —'friends!—Never Look to yourself, Harry Waakfelt'

'Then the curse of Cromwell on your proud Scots stomach, as the man says in the play, and you may do your worst, and be d——d, for one man can say nothing more to another after a tussle, than that he is sorry for it '

On these terms the friends parted, Robin Oig drew out, in silence, a piece of money, threw it on the table, and then left the ale-house But turning at the door, he shook his hand at Wakefield, pointing with his forefinger upwards, in a manner which might imply either a threat or a caution He then disappeared in the moonlight

Some words passed after his departure, between the bailiff, who piqued himself on being a little of a bully, and Harry Wakefield, who, with generous inconsistency, was now not indisposed to begin a new combat in defence of Robin Oig's reputation, 'although he could not use his daddles like an Englishman, as it did not come natural to him ' But Dame Heskett prevented this second quarrel from coming to a head by her peremptory interference 'There should be no more fighting in her house,' she said, 'there had been too much already — And you, Mr Wakefield, may live to learn,' she added, 'what it is to make a deadly enemy out of a good friend '

'Pshaw, dame! Robin Oig is an honest fellow, and will never keep malice '

'Do not trust to that—you do not know the dour temper of the Scots, though you have dealt with them so often I have a right to know them, my mother being a Scot '

'And so is well seen on her daughter,' said Ralph Heskett

This nuptial sarcasm gave the discourse another turn, fresh customers entered the tap-room or kitchen, and others left it The conversation turned on the expected markets, and the report of prices from different parts both of Scotland and England—treaties were commenced, and Harry Wakefield was lucky enough to find a chap for a part of his drove, and at a very considerable profit, an event of consequence more than sufficient to blot

out all remembrances of the unpleasant scuffle in the earlier part of the day But there remained one party from whose mind that recollection could not have been wiped away by the possession of every head of cattle betwixt Esk and Eden

This was Robin Oig M'Combich —'That I should have had no weapon,' he said, 'and for the first time in my life!—Blighted be the tongue that bids the Highlander part with the dirk—the dirk—ha! the English blood!—My Muhme's word—when did her word fall to the ground?'

The recollection of the fatal prophecy confirmed the deadly intention which instantly sprang up in his mind

'Ha! Morrison cannot be many miles behind, and if it were a hundred, what then?'

His impetuous spirit had now a fixed purpose and motive of action, and he turned the light foot of his country towards the wilds, through which he knew, by Mr Ireby's report, that Morrison was advancing His mind was wholly engrossed by the sense of injury—injury sustained from a friend, and by the desire of vengeance on one whom he now accounted his most bitter enemy The treasured ideas of self-importance and self-opinion—of ideal birth and quality, had become more precious to him, like the hoard to the miser, because he could only enjoy them in secret But that hoard was pillaged, the idols which he had secretly worshipped had been desecrated and profaned Insulted, abused, and beaten, he was no longer worthy, in his own opinion, of the name he bore, or the lineage which he belonged to—nothing was left to him—nothing but revenge, and, as the reflection added a galling spur to every step, he determined it should be as sudden and signal as the offence

When Robin Oig left the door of the ale-house, seven or eight English miles at least lay betwixt Morrison and him The advance of the former was slow, limited by the sluggish pace of his cattle, the last left behind him stubble-field and hedge-row, crag and dark heath, all glittering with frost-rime in the broad November

moonlight, at the rate of six miles an hour And now the distant lowing of Morrison's cattle is heard, and now they are seen creeping like moles in size and slowness of motion on the broad face of the moor, and now he meets them—passes them, and stops their conductor

'May good betide us,' said the Southlander—'Is this you, Robin M'Combich, or your wraith?'

'It is Robin Oig M'Combich,' answered the Highlander, 'and it is not —But never mind that, put pe giving me the skene-dhu '

'What! you are for back to the Highlands—The devil!—Have you selt all off before the fair? This beats all for quick markets!'

'I have not sold—I am not going north—May pe I will never go north again —Give me pack my dirk, Hugh Morrison, or there will pe words petween us '

'Indeed, Robin, I'll be better advised before I gie it back to you—it is a wanchancy weapon in a Highlandman's hand, and I am thinking you will be about some barns-breaking '

'Prutt, trutt! let me have my weapon,' said Robin Oig, impatiently

'Hooly, and fairly,' said his well-meaning friend 'I'll tell you what will do better than these dirking doings—Ye ken Highlander, and Lowlander, and Border-men, are a' ae man's bairns when you are over the Scots dyke See, the Eskdale callants, and fighting Charlie of Liddesdale, and the Lockerby lads, and the four Dandies of Lustruther, and a wheen mair grey plaids, are coming up behind, and if you are wranged, there is the hand of a Manly Morrison, we'll see you righted, if Carlisle and Stanwix baith took up the feud '

'To tell you the truth,' said Robin Oig, desirous of eluding the suspicions of his friend, 'I have enlisted with a party of the Black Watch, and must march off to-morrow morning '

'Enlisted! Were you mad or drunk?—You must buy yourself off—I can lend you twenty notes, and twenty to that, if the drove sell '

'I thank you—thank ye, Hughie, but I go with good

will the gate that I am going,—so the dirk—the dirk!'

'There it is for you then, since less wunna serve But think on what I was saying —Waes me, it will be sair news in the braes of Balquidder, that Robin Oig M'Combich should have run an ill gate, and ta'en on '

'Ill news in Balquidder, indeed!' echoed poor Robin 'But Cot speed you, Hughie, and send you good marcats Ye winna meet with Robin Oig again, either at tryste or fair '

So saying, he shook hastily the hand of his acquaintance, and set out in the direction from which he had advanced, with the spirit of his former pace

'There is something wrang with the lad,' muttered the Morrison to himself, 'but we'll maybe see better into it the morn's morning '

But long ere the morning dawned, the catastrophe of our tale had taken place It was two hours after the affray had happened, and it was totally forgotten by almost every one, when Robin Oig returned to Heskett's inn The place was filled at once by various sorts of men, and with noises corresponding to their character There were the grave low sounds of men engaged in busy traffic, with the laugh, the song, and the riotous jest of those who had nothing to do but to enjoy themselves Among the last was Harry Wakefield, who, amidst a grinning group of smock-frocks, hobnailed shoes, and jolly English physiognomies, was trolling forth the old ditty,

> What though my name be Roger,
> Who drives the plough and cart—

when he was interrupted by a well-known voice saying in a high and stern tone, marked by the sharp Highland accent, 'Harry Waakfelt—if you be a man, stand up!'

'What is the matter?—what is it?' the guests demanded of each other

'It is only a d——d Scotsman,' said Fleecebumpkin, who was by this time very drunk, 'whom Harry Wake-

field helped to his broth the day, who is now come to have *his cauld kail* het again '

'Harry Waakfelt,' repeated the same ominous summons, 'stand up, if you be a man!'

There is something in the tone of deep and concentrated passion, which attracts attention and imposes awe, even by the very sound The guests shrank back on every side, and gazed at the Highlander as he stood in the middle of them, his brows bent, and his features rigid with resolution

'I will stand up with all my heart, Robin, my boy, but it shall be to shake hands with you, and drink down all unkindness It is not the fault of your heart, man, that you don't know how to clench your hands '

But this time he stood opposite to his antagonist, his open and unsuspecting look strangely contrasted with the stern purpose, which gleamed wild, dark, and vindictive in the eyes of the Highlander

' 'Tis not thy fault, man, that, not having the luck to be an Englishman, thou canst not fight more than a schoolgirl '

'I *can* fight,' answered Robin Oig sternly, but calmly, 'and you shall know it You, Harry Waakfelt, showed me to-day how the Saxon churls fight—I show you now how the Highland Dunniè-wassel fights '

He seconded the word with the action, and plunged the dagger, which he suddenly displayed, into the broad breast of the English yeoman, with such fatal certainty and force, that the hilt made a hollow sound against the breast-bone, and the double-edged point split the very heart of his victim Harry Wakefield fell and expired with a single groan His assassin next seized the bailiff by the collar, and offered the bloody poniard to his throat, whilst dread and surprise rendered the man incapable of defence

'It were very just to lay you beside him,' he said, 'but the blood of a base pickthank shall never mix on my father's dirk with that of a brave man '

As he spoke, he cast the man from him with so much force that he fell on the floor, while Robin, with his

other hand, threw the fatal weapon into the blazing turf-fire

'There,' he said, 'take me who likes—and let fire cleanse blood if it can'

The pause of astonishment still continuing, Robin Oig asked for a peace-officer, and a constable having stepped out, he surrendered himself to his custody

'A bloody night's work you have made of it,' said the constable

'Your own fault,' said the Highlander 'Had you kept his hands off me twa hours since, he would have been now as well and merry as he was twa minutes since'

'It must be sorely answered,' said the peace-officer

'Never you mind that—death pays all debts, it will pay that too'

The horror of the bystanders began now to give way to indignation, and the sight of a favourite companion murdered in the midst of them, the provocation being, in their opinion, so utterly inadequate to the excess of vengeance, might have induced them to kill the perpetrator of the deed even upon the very spot The constable, however, did his duty on this occasion, and with the assistance of some of the more reasonable persons present, procured horses to guard the prisoner to Carlisle, to abide his doom at the next assizes While the escort was preparing, the prisoner neither expressed the least interest nor attempted the slightest reply Only, before he was carried from the fatal apartment, he desired to look at the dead body, which, raised from the floor, had been deposited upon the large table (at the head of which Harry Wakefield had presided but a few minutes before, full of life, vigour, and animation) until the surgeons should examine the mortal wound The face of the corpse was decently covered with a napkin To the surprise and horror of the bystanders, which displayed itself in a general *Ah!* drawn through clenched teeth and half-shut lips, Robin Oig removed the cloth, and gazed with a mournful but steady eye on the lifeless visage, which had been so lately animated, that the smile of good-humoured confidence in his own

strength, of conciliation at once and contempt towards his enemy, still curled his lip. While those present expected that the wound, which had so lately flooded the apartment with gore, would send forth fresh streams at the touch of the homicide, Robin Oig replaced the covering, with the brief exclamation—'He was a pretty man!'

My story is nearly ended. The unfortunate Highlander stood his trial at Carlisle. I was myself present, and as a young Scottish lawyer, or barrister at least, and reputed a man of some quality, the politeness of the Sheriff of Cumberland offered me a place on the bench. The facts of the case were proved in the manner I have related them, and whatever might be at first the prejudice of the audience against a crime so un-English as that of assassination from revenge, yet when the rooted national prejudices of the prisoner had been explained, which made him consider himself as stained with indelible dishonour when subjected to personal violence, when his previous patience, moderation, and endurance, were considered, the generosity of the English audience was inclined to regard his crime as the wayward aberration of a false idea of honour rather than as flowing from a heart naturally savage, or perverted by habitual vice. I shall never forget the charge of the venerable judge to the jury, although not at that time liable to be much affected either by that which was eloquent or pathetic.

'We have had,' he said, 'in the previous part of our duty' (alluding to some former trials) 'to discuss crimes which infer disgust and abhorrence, while they call down the well-merited vengeance of the law. It is now our still more melancholy task to apply its salutary though severe enactments to a case of a very singular character, in which the crime (for a crime it is, and a deep one) arose less out of the malevolence of the heart, than the error of the understanding—less from any idea of committing wrong, than from an unhappily perverted notion of that which is right. Here we have two men, highly esteemed, it has been stated, in their rank of life,

and attached, it seems, to each other as friends, one of whose lives has been already sacrificed to a punctilio, and the other is about to prove the vengeance of the offended laws, and yet both may claim our commiseration at least, as men acting in ignorance of each other's national prejudices, and unhappily misguided rather than voluntarily erring from the path of right conduct

'In the original cause of the misunderstanding, we must in justice give the right to the prisoner at the bar He had acquired possession of the enclosure, which was the object of competition, by a legal contract with the proprietor, Mr Ireby, and yet, when accosted with reproaches undeserved in themselves, and galling doubtless to a temper at least sufficiently susceptible of passion, he offered notwithstanding to yield up half his acquisition for the sake of peace and good neighbourhood, and his amicable proposal was rejected with scorn Then follows the scene at Mr Heskett the publican's, and you will observe how the stranger was treated by the deceased, and, I am sorry to observe, by those around, who seem to have urged him in a manner which was aggravating in the highest degree While he asked for peace and for composition, and offered submission to a magistrate, or to a mutual arbiter, the prisoner was insulted by a whole company, who seem on this occasion to have forgotten the national maxim of ' fair play", and while attempting to escape from the place in peace, he was intercepted, struck down, and beaten to the effusion of his blood

'Gentlemen of the jury, it was with some impatience that I heard my learned brother, who opened the case for the crown, give an unfavourable turn to the prisoner's conduct on this occasion He said the prisoner was afraid to encounter his antagonist in fair fight, or to submit to the laws of the ring, and that therefore, like a cowardly Italian, he had recourse to his fatal stiletto, to murder the man whom he dared not meet in manly encounter I observed the prisoner shrink from this part of the accusation with the abhorrence natural to a brave man and as I would wish to make my words impressive

when I point his real crime, I must secure his opinion of my impartiality, by rebutting everything that seems to me a false accusation There can be no doubt that the prisoner is a man of resolution—too much resolution—I wish to Heaven that he had less, or rather that he had had a better education to regulate it

'Gentlemen, as to the laws my brother talks of, they may be known in the bull-ring, or the bear-garden, or the cockpit, but they are not known here Or, if they should be so far admitted as furnishing a species of proof that no malice was intended in this sort of combat, from which fatal accidents do sometimes arise, it can only be so admitted when both parties are *in pari casu*, equally acquainted with, and equally willing to refer themselves to, that species of arbitrement But will it be contended that a man of superior rank and education is to be subjected, or is obliged to subject himself, to this coarse and brutal strife, perhaps in opposition to a younger, stronger, or more skilful opponent? Certainly even the pugilistic code, if founded upon the fair play of Merry Old England, as my brother alleges it to be, can contain nothing so preposterous And, gentlemen of the jury, if the laws would support an English gentleman, wearing, we will suppose, his sword, in defending himself by force against a violent personal aggression of the nature offered to this prisoner, they will not less protect a foreigner and a stranger, involved in the same unpleasing circumstances If, therefore, gentlemen of the jury, when thus pressed by a *vis major*, the object of obloquy to a whole company, and of direct violence from one at least, and, as he might reasonably apprehend, from more, the panel had produced the weapon which his countrymen, as we are informed, generally carry about their persons, and the same unhappy circumstance had ensued which you have heard detailed in evidence, I could not in my conscience have asked from you a verdict of murder The prisoner's personal defence might, indeed, even in that case, have gone more or less beyond the *Moderamen inculpatae tutelae*, spoken of by lawyers, but the punishment incurred would have

been that of manslaughter, not of murder I beg leave to add that I should have thought this milder species of charge was demanded in the case supposed, notwithstanding the statute of James I, cap 8, which takes the case of slaughter by stabbing with a short weapon, even without malice prepense, out of the benefit of clergy For this statute of stabbing, as it is termed, arose out of a temporary cause, and as the real guilt is the same, whether the slaughter be committed by the dagger, or by sword or pistol, the benignity of the modern law places them all on the same, or nearly the same footing

'But, gentlemen of the jury, the pinch of the case lies in the interval of two hours interposed betwixt the reception of the injury and the fatal retaliation In the heat of affray and *chaude mêlée*, law, compassionating the infirmities of humanity, makes allowance for the passions which rule such a stormy moment—for the sense of present pain, for the apprehension of further injury, for the difficulty of ascertaining with due accuracy the precise degree of violence which is necessary to protect the person of the individual, without annoying or injuring the assailant more than is absolutely requisite But the time necessary to walk twelve miles, however speedily performed, was an interval sufficient for the prisoner to have recollected himself, and the violence with which he carried his purpose into effect, with so many circumstances of deliberate determination, could neither be induced by the passion of anger, nor that of fear It was the purpose and the act of predetermined revenge, for which law neither can, will, nor ought to have sympathy or allowance

'It is true, we may repeat to ourselves, in alleviation of this poor man's unhappy action, that his case is a very peculiar one The country which he inhabits, was, in the days of many now alive, inaccessible to the laws, not only of England, which have not even yet penetrated thither, but to those to which our neighbours of Scotland are subjected, and which must be supposed to be, and no doubt actually are, founded upon the general prin-

ciples of justice and equity which pervade every civilized country. Amongst their mountains, as among the North American Indians, the various tribes were wont to make war upon each other, so that each man was obliged to go armed for his own protection. These men, from the ideas which they entertained of their own descent and of their own consequence, regarded themselves as so many cavaliers or men-at-arms, rather than as the peasantry of a peaceful country. Those laws of the ring, as my brother terms them, were unknown to the race of warlike mountaineers; that decision of quarrels by no other weapons than those which nature has given every man, must to them have seemed as vulgar and as preposterous as to the noblesse of France. Revenge, on the other hand, must have been as familiar to their habits of society as to those of the Cherokees or Mohawks. It is indeed, as described by Bacon, at bottom a kind of wild untutored justice; for the fear of retaliation must withhold the hands of the oppressor where there is no regular law to check daring violence. But though all this may be granted, and though we may allow that, such having been the case of the Highlands in the days of the prisoner's fathers, many of the opinions and sentiments must still continue to influence the present generation, it cannot, and ought not, even in this most painful case, to alter the administration of the law, either in your hands, gentlemen of the jury, or in mine. The first object of civilization is to place the general protection of the law, equally administered, in the room of that wild justice, which every man cut and carved for himself, according to the length of his sword and the strength of his arm. The law says to the subjects, with a voice only inferior to that of the Deity, "Vengeance is mine." The instant that there is time for passion to cool, and reason to interpose, an injured party must become aware that the law assumes the exclusive cognizance of the right and wrong betwixt the parties, and opposes her inviolable buckler to every attempt of the private party to right himself. I repeat, that this unhappy man ought personally to be the object rather of our pity than our

abhorrence, for he failed in his ignorance, and from mistaken notions of honour But his crime is not the less that of murder, gentlemen, and, in your high and important office, it is your duty so to find Englishmen have their angry passions as well as Scots, and should this man's action remain unpunished, you may unsheath, under various pretences, a thousand daggers betwixt the Land's-end and the Orkneys'

The venerable judge thus ended what, to judge by his apparent emotion, and by the tears which filled his eyes, was really a painful task The jury, according to his instructions, brought in a verdict of Guilty, and Robin Oig M'Combich, *alias* M'Gregor, was sentenced to death and left for execution, which took place accordingly He met his fate with great firmness, and acknowledged the justice of his sentence But he repelled indignantly the observations of those who accused him of attacking an unarmed man 'I give a life for the life I took,' he said, 'and what can I do more?'

WANDERING WILLIE'S TALE

[From *Redgauntlet* 1824]

YE maun have heard of Sir Robert Redgauntlet of that Ilk, who lived in these parts before the dear years The country will lang mind him, and our fathers used to draw breath thick if ever they heard him named He was out wi' the Hielandmen in Montrose's time, and again he was in the hills wi' Glencairn in the saxteen hundred and fifty-twa, and sae when King Charles the Second came in, wha was in sic favour as the Laird of Redgauntlet? He was knighted at Lonon court, wi' the king's ain sword, and being a redhot prelatist, he came down here, rampauging like a lion, with commissions of lieutenancy (and of lunacy, for what I ken) to put down a' the Whigs and Covenanters in the country Wild wark they made of it, for the Whigs were as dour as the Cavaliers were fierce, and it was which should first tire the other Redgauntlet was ay for the strong hand, and his name is kend as wide in the country as

Claverhouse's or Tam Dalyell's Glen, nor dargle, nor mountain, nor cave, could hide the puir hill-folk when Redgauntlet was out with bugle and bloodhound after them, as if they had been sae mony deer And troth when they fand them, they didna mak muckle mair ceremony than a Hielandman wi' a roebuck—it was just, 'Will ye tak the test?'—if not, 'Make ready—present—fire!' —and there lay the recusant

Far and wide was Sir Robert hated and feared Men thought he had a direct compact with Satan—that he was proof against steel—and that bullets happed aff his buff-coat like hailstanes from a hearth—that he had a mear that would turn a hare on the side of Carritra-gawns[1]—and muckle to the same purpose, of whilk mair anon The best blessing they wared on him was, 'Deil scowp wi' Redgauntlet!' He wasna a bad master to his ain folk, though, and was weel aneugh liked by his tenants, and as for the lackies and troopers that raid out wi' him to the persecutions, as the Whigs caa'd those killing times, they wad hae drunken themsells blind to his health at ony time

Now you are to ken that my gudesire lived on Red-gauntlet's grund—they ca' the place Primrose Knowe We had lived on the grund, and under the Redgauntlets, since the riding days, and lang before It was a pleasant bit, and I think the air is callerer and fresher there than onywhere else in the country It's a' deserted now, and I sat on the broken door-cheek three days since, and was glad I couldna see the plight the place was in, but that's a' wide o' the mark There dwelt my gudesire, Steenie Steenson, a rambling, rattling chiel' he had been in his young days, and could play weel on the pipes, he was famous at 'Hoopers and Girders'—a' Cumberland couldna touch him at 'Jockie Lattin'—and he had the finest finger for the back-lilt between Berwick and Car-lisle The like o' Steenie wasna the sort that they made Whigs o' And so he became a Tory, as they ca' it, which we now ca' Jacobites, just out of a kind of need-cessity, that he might belang to some side or other

[1] A precipitous side of a mountain in Moffatdale

He had nae ill will to the Whig bodies, and liked little to see the blude rin, though, being obliged to follow Sir Robert in hunting and hoisting, watching and warding, he saw muckle mischief, and maybe did some, that he couldna avoid

Now Steenie was a kind of favourite with his master, and kend a' the folks about the castle, and was often sent for to play the pipes when they were at their merriment Auld Dougal MacCallum, the butler, that had followed Sir Robert through gude and ill, thick and thin, pool and stream, was specially fond of the pipes, and ay gae my gudesire his gude word wi' the laird, for Dougal could turn his master round his finger

Weel, round came the Revolution, and it had like to have broken the hearts baith of Dougal and his master But the change was not a'thegether sae great as they feared, and other folk thought for The Whigs made an unco crawing what they wad do with their auld enemies, and in special wi' Sir Robert Redgauntlet But there were ower mony great folks dipped in the same doings, to mak a spick and span new warld So Parliament passed it a' ower easy, and Sir Robert, bating that he was held to hunting foxes instead of Covenanters, remained just the man he was [1] His revel was as loud, and his hall as weel lighted, as ever it had been, though maybe he lacked the fines of the nonconformists, that used to come to stock his larder and cellar, for it is certain he began to be keener about the rents than his tenants used to find him before, and they behoved to be prompt to the rent-day, or else the laird wasna pleased And he was sic an awsome body, that naebody cared to anger him, for the oaths he

[1] The caution and moderation of King William III, and his principles of unlimited toleration, deprived the Cameronians of the opportunity they ardently desired, to retaliate the injuries which they had received during the reign of prelacy, and purify the land, as they called it, from the pollution of blood They esteemed the Revolution, therefore, only a half measure, which neither comprehended the rebuilding the Kirk in its full splendour, nor the revenge of the death of the Saints on their persecutors

swore, and the rage that he used to get into, and the looks that he put on, made men sometimes think him a devil incarnate

Weel, my gudesire was nae manager—no that he was a very great misguider—but he hadna the saving gift, and he got twa terms' rent in arrear He got the first brash at Whitsunday put ower wi' fair word and piping, but when Martinmas came, there was a summons from the grund-officer to come wi' the rent on a day preceese, or else Steenie behoved to flit Sair wark he had to get the siller, but he was weel-freended, and at last he got the haill scraped thegether—a thousand merks—the maist of it was from a neighbour they ca'd Laurie Lapraik—a sly tod Laurie had walth o' gear—could hunt wi' the hound and rin wi' the hare—and be Whig or Tory, saunt or sinner, as the wind stood He was a professor in this Revolution warld, but he liked an orra sough of this warld, and a tune on the pipes weel aneugh at a bytime, and abune a', he thought he had gude security for the siller he lent my gudesire ower the stocking at Primrose Knowe

Away trots my gudesire to Redgauntlet Castle wi' a heavy purse and a light heart, glad to be out of the laird's danger Weel, the first thing he learned at the castle was, that Sir Robert had fretted himsell into a fit of the gout, because he did not appear before twelve o'clock It wasna a'thegether for sake of the money, Dougal thought, but because he didna like to part wi' my gudesire aff the grund. Dougal was glad to see Steenie, and brought him into the great oak parlour, and there sat the laird his leesome lane, excepting that he had beside him a great, ill-favoured jackanape, that was a special pet of his, a cankered beast it was, and mony an ill-natured trick it played—ill to please it was, and easily angered—ran about the haill castle, chattering and yowling, and pinching and biting folk, specially before ill weather, or disturbances in the state Sir Robert caa'd it Major Weir, after the warlock that was burnt,[1] and few folk liked

[1] A celebrated wizard, executed at Edinburgh for sorcery and other crimes

either the name or the conditions of the creature—they thought there was something in it by ordinar—and my gudesire was not just easy in mind when the door shut on him, and he saw himself in the room wi' naebody but the laird, Dougal MacCallum, and the major, a thing that hadna chanced to him before

Sir Robert sat, or, I should say, lay, in a great armed chair, wi' his grand velvet gown, and his feet on a cradle, for he had baith gout and gravel, and his face looked as gash and ghastly as Satan's Major Weir sat opposite to him, in a red laced coat, and the laird's wig on his head, and ay as Sir Robert girned wi' pain, the jackanape girned too, like a sheep's-head between a pair of tangs—an ill-faur'd, fearsome couple they were The laird's buff-coat was hung on a pin behind him, and his broadsword and his pistols within reach, for he keepit up the auld fashion of having the weapons ready, and a horse saddled day and night, just as he used to do when he was able to loup on horseback, and away after ony of the hill-folk he could get speerings of Some said it was for fear of the Whigs taking vengeance, but I judge it was just his auld custom —he wasna gien to fear onything The rental-book, wi' its black cover and brass clasps, was lying beside him, and a book of sculduddry sangs was put betwixt the leaves, to keep it open at the place where it bore evidence against the Goodman of Primrose Knowe, as behind the hand with his mails and duties Sir Robert gave my gudesire a look, as if he would have withered his heart in his bosom Ye maun ken he had a way of bending his brows, that men saw the visible mark of a horseshoe in his forehead, deep dinted, as if it had been stamped there

'Are ye come light-handed, ye son of a toom whistle?' said Sir Robert 'Zounds! if you are'——

My gudesire, with as gude a countenance as he could put on, made a leg, and placed the bag of money on the table wi' a dash, like a man that does something clever The laird drew it to him hastily—'Is it all here, Steenie, man?'

'Your honour will find it right,' said my gudesire

'Here, Dougal,' said the laird, 'gie Steenie a tass of

funeral Now, Dougal looked ay waur and waur when night was coming, and was ay the last to gang to his bed, whilk was in a little round just opposite the chamber of dais, whilk his master occupied while he was living, and where he now lay in state, as they caa'd it, weel-a-day! The night before the funeral, Dougal could keep his awn counsel nae langer, he came doun with his proud spirit, and fairly asked auld Hutcheon to sit in his room with him for an hour When they were in the round, Dougal took ae tass of brandy to himsell, and gave another to Hutcheon, and wished him all health and lang life, and said that, for himsell, he wasna lang for this world, for that, every night since Sir Robert's death, his silver call had sounded from the state chamber, just as it used to do at nights in his lifetime, to call Dougal to help to turn him in his bed Dougal said that being alone with the dead on that floor of the tower (for naebody cared to wake Sir Robert Redgauntlet like another corpse) he had never daured to answer the call, but that now his conscience checked him for neglecting his duty, for, 'though death breaks service,' said MacCallum, 'it shall never break my service to Sir Robert, and I will answer his next whistle, so be you will stand by me, Hutcheon '

Hutcheon had nae will to the wark, but he had stood by Dougal in battle and broil, and he wad not fail him at this pinch, so down the carles sat ower a stoup of brandy, and Hutcheon, who was something of a clerk, would have read a chapter of the Bible, but Dougal would hear naething but a blaud of Davie Lindsay, whilk was the waur preparation

When midnight came, and the house was quiet as the grave, sure enough the silver whistle sounded as sharp and shrill as if Sir Robert was blowing it, and up got the twa auld serving-men, and tottered into the room where the dead man lay Hutcheon saw aneugh at the first glance, for there were torches in the room, which showed him the foul fiend, in his ain shape, sitting on the laird's coffin! Ower he cowped as if he had been dead He could not tell how lang he lay in a trance at the door, but when he gathered himself, he cried on his neighbour,

and getting nae answer, raised the house, when Dougal was found lying dead within twa steps of the bed where his master's coffin was placed As for the whistle, it was gaen anes and ay, but mony a time was it heard at the top of the house on the bartizan, and amang the auld chimneys and turrets where the howlets have their nests Sir John hushed the matter up, and the funeral passed over without mair bogle-wark

But when a' was ower, and the laird was beginning to settle his affairs, every tenant was called up for his arrears, and my gudesire for the full sum that stood against him in the rental-book Weel, away he trots to the castle, to tell his story, and there he is introduced to Sir John, sitting in his father's chair, in deep mourning, with weepers and hanging cravat, and a small walking rapier by his side, instead of the auld broadsword that had a hundredweight of steel about it, what with blade, chape, and basket-hilt I have heard their communing so often tauld ower, that I almost think I was there mysell, though I couldna be born at the time (In fact, Alan, my companion mimicked, with a good deal of humour, the flattering, conciliating tone of the tenant's address, and the hypocritical melancholy of the laird's reply His grandfather, he said, had, while he spoke, his eye fixed on the rental-book, as if it were a mastiff-dog that he was afraid would spring up and bite him)

'I wuss ye joy, sir, of the head seat, and the white loaf, and the braid lairdship Your father was a kind man to friends and followers, muckle grace to you, Sir John, to fill his shoon—his boots, I suld say, for he seldom wore shoon, unless it were muils when he had the gout '

'Aye, Steenie,' quoth the laird, sighing deeply, and putting his napkin to his een, 'his was a sudden call, and he will be missed in the country, no time to set his house in order—weel prepared Godward, no doubt, which is the root of the matter—but left us behind a tangled hesp to wind, Steenie —Hem! hem! We maun go to business, Steenie, much to do, and little time to do it in '

Here he opened the fatal volume I have heard of a

thing they call Doomsday Book—I am clear it has been a rental of back-ganging tenants

'Stephen,' said Sir John, still in the same soft, sleekit tone of voice—'Stephen Stevenson, or Steenson, ye are down here for a year's rent behind the hand—due at last term'

Stephen 'Please your honour, Sir John, I paid it to your father'

Sir John 'Ye took a receipt, then, doubtless, Stephen, and can produce it?'

Stephen 'Indeed I hadna time, an it like your honour, for nae sooner had I set doun the siller, and just as his honour, Sir Robert, that's gaen, drew it till him to count it, and write out the receipt, he was ta'en wi' the pains that removed him'

'That was unlucky,' said Sir John, after a pause 'But ye maybe paid it in the presence of somebody I want but a *talis qualis* evidence, Stephen I would go ower strictly to work with no poor man'

Stephen 'Troth, Sir John, there was naebody in the room but Dougal MacCallum the butler But, as your honour kens, he has e'en followed his auld master'

'Very unlucky again, Stephen,' said Sir John, without altering his voice a single note 'The man to whom ye paid the money is dead—and the man who witnessed the payment is dead too—and the siller, which should have been to the fore, is neither seen nor heard tell of in the repositories How am I to believe a' this?'

Stephen 'I dinna ken, your honour, but there is a bit memorandum note of the very coins, for, God help me! I had to borrow out of twenty purses, and I am sure that ilka man there set down will take his grit oath for what purpose I borrowed the money'

Sir John 'I have little doubt ye *borrowed* the money, Steenie It is the *payment* to my father that I want to have some proof of'

Stephen 'The siller maun be about the house, Sir John And since your honour never got it, and his honour that was canna have taen it wi' him, maybe some of the family may have seen it'

Sir John. 'We will examine the servants, Stephen, that is but reasonable.'

But lackey and lass, and page and groom, all denied stoutly that they had ever seen such a bag of money as my gudesire described. What was waur, he had unluckily not mentioned to any living soul of them his purpose of paying his rent. Ae quean had noticed something under his arm, but she took it for the pipes.

Sir John Redgauntlet ordered the servants out of the room, and then said to my gudesire, 'Now, Steenie, ye see ye have fair play, and, as I have little doubt ye ken better where to find the siller than ony other body, I beg, in fair terms, and for your own sake, that you will end this fasherie, for, Stephen, ye maun pay or flit.'

'The Lord forgie your opinion,' said Stephen, driven almost to his wit's end—'I am an honest man.'

'So am I, Stephen,' said his honour, 'and so are all the folks in the house, I hope. But if there be a knave amongst us, it must be he that tells the story he cannot prove.' He paused, and then added, mair sternly, 'If I understand your trick, sir, you want to take advantage of some malicious reports concerning things in this family, and particularly respecting my father's sudden death, thereby to cheat me out of the money, and perhaps take away my character, by insinuating that I have received the rent I am demanding. Where do you suppose this money to be? I insist upon knowing.'

My gudesire saw everything look so muckle against him, that he grew nearly desperate—however, he shifted from one foot to another, looked to every corner of the room, and made no answer.

'Speak out, sirrah,' said the laird, assuming a look of his father's, a very particular ane, which he had when he was angry—it seemed as if the wrinkles of his frown made that selfsame fearful shape of a horse's shoe in the middle of his brow,—'Speak out, sir! I *will* know your thoughts,—do you suppose that I have this money?'

'Far be it frae me to say so,' said Stephen.

'Do you charge any of my people with having taken it?'

'I wad be laith to charge them that may be innocent,'

said my gudesire, 'and if there be any one that is guilty, I have nae proof'

'Somewhere the money must be, if there is a word of truth in your story,' said Sir John, 'I ask where you think it is—and demand a correct answer?'

'In hell, if you *will* have my thoughts of it,' said my gudesire, driven to extremity, 'in hell! with your father, his jackanape, and his silver whistle'

Down the stairs he ran (for the parlour was nae place for him after such a word) and he heard the laird swearing blood and wounds behind him, as fast as ever did Sir Robert, and roaring for the bailie and the baron-officer

Away rode my gudesire to his chief creditor (him they ca'd Laurie Lapraik) to try if he could make onything out of him, but when he tauld his story, he got but the worst word in his wame—thief, beggar, and dyvour, were the saftest terms, and to the boot of these hard terms, Laurie brought up the auld story of his dipping his hand in the blood of God's saunts, just as if a tenant could have helped riding with the laird, and that a laird like Sir Robert Redgauntlet My gudesire was, by this time, far beyond the bounds of patience, and, while he and Laurie were at deil speed the liars, he was wanchancie aneugh to abuse Lapraik's doctrine as weel as the man, ond said things that garr'd folks' flesh grue that heard them,—he wasna just himsell, and he had lived wi' a wild set in his day

At last they parted, and my gudesire was to ride hame through the wood of Pitmurkie, that is a' fou of black firs, as they say —I ken the wood, but the firs may be black or white for what I can tell —At the entry of the wood there is a wild common, and on the edge of the common, a little lonely change-house, that was keepit then by an ostler-wife, they suld hae caa'd her Tibbie Faw, and there puir Steenie cried for a mutchkin of brandy, for he had had no refreshment the haill day Tibbie was earnest wi' him to take a bite of meat, but he couldna think o't, nor would he take his foot out of the stirrup, and took off the brandy wholely at twa draughts, and named a toast at each —the first was the memory of Sir Robert Red-

gauntlet, and might he never lie quiet in his grave till he had righted his poor bond-tenant, and the second was a health to Man's Enemy, if he would but get him back the pock of siller or tell him what came o't, for he saw the haill world was like to regard him as a thief and a cheat, and he took that waur than even the ruin of his house and hauld

On he rode, little caring where It was a dark night turned, and the trees made it yet darker, and he let the beast take its ain road through the wood, when all of a sudden, from tired and wearied that it was before, the nag began to spring and flee, and stend, that my gudesire could hardly keep the saddle Upon the whilk, a horseman, suddenly riding up beside him, said, 'That's a mettle beast of yours, freend, will you sell him?' So saying, he touched the horse's neck with his riding-wand, and it fell into its auld heigh-ho of a stumbling trot 'But his spunk's soon out of him, I think,' continued the stranger, 'and that is like mony a man's courage, that thinks he wad do great things till he come to the proof'

My gudesire scarce listened to this, but spurred his horse, with 'Gude e'en to you, freend'

But it's like the stranger was ane that doesna lightly yield his point, for, ride as Steenie liked, he was ay beside him at the selfsame pace At last my gudesire, Steenie Steenson, grew half angry, and, to say the truth, half feared

'What is it that ye want with me, freend?' he said 'If ye be a robber, I have nae money, if ye be a leal man, wanting company, I have nae heart to mirth or speaking, and if ye want to ken the road, I scarce ken it mysell'

'If you will tell me your grief,' said the stranger, 'I am one that, though I have been sair miscaa'd in the world, am the only hand for helping my freends'

So my gudesire, to ease his ain heart, mair than from any hope of help, told him the story from beginning to end

'It's a hard pinch,' said the stranger, 'but I think I can help you'

'If you could lend the money, sir, and take a lang day —I ken nae other help on earth,' said my gudesire

'But there may be some under the earth,' said the stranger 'Come, I'll be frank wi' you, I could lend you the money on bond, but you would maybe scruple my terms Now, I can tell you, that your auld laird is disturbed in his grave by your curses, and the wailing of your family, and if ye daur venture to go to see him, he will give you the receipt'

My gudesire's hair stood on end at this proposal, but he thought his companion might be some humoursome chield that was trying to frighten him, and might end with lending him the money Besides, he was bauld wi' brandy, and desperate wi' distress, and he said he had courage to go to the gate of hell, and a step farther, for that receipt The stranger laughed

Weel, they rode on through the thickest of the wood, when, all of a sudden, the horse stopped at the door of a great house, and, but that he knew the place was ten miles off, my father would have thought he was at Redgauntlet Castle They rode into the outer courtyard, through the muckle faulding yetts and aneath the auld portcullis, and the whole front of the house was lighted, and there were pipes and fiddles, and as much dancing and deray within as used to be at Sir Robert's house at Pace and Yule, and such high seasons They lap off, and my gudesire, as seemed to him, fastened his horse to the very ring he had tied him to that morning, when he gaed to wait on the young Sir John

'God!' said my gudesire, 'if Sir Robert's death be but a dream!'

He knocked at the ha' door just as he was wont, and his auld acquaintance, Dougal MacCallum—just after his wont, too,—came to open the door, and said, 'Piper Steenie, are ye there, lad? Sir Robert has been crying for you'

My gudesire was like a man in a dream—he looked for the stranger, but he was gane for the time At last he just tried to say, 'Ha! Dougal Driveower, are ye living? I thought ye had been dead'

'Never fash yoursell wi' me,' said Dougal, 'but look to yoursell, and see ye tak naething frae ony body here,

neither meat, drink, or siller, except just the receipt that is your ain '

So saying, he led the way out through halls and trances that were weel kend to my gudesire, and into the auld oak parlour, and there was as much singing of profane sangs, and birling of red wine, and speaking blasphemy and sculduddry, as had ever been in Redgauntlet Castle when it was at the blithest

But, Lord take us in keeping, what a set of ghastly revellers they were that sat around that table! My gudesire kend mony that had long before gane to their place, for often had he piped to the most part in the hall of Redgauntlet There was the fierce Middleton, and the dissolute Rothes, and the crafty Lauderdale, and Dalyell, with his bald head and a beard to his girdle, and Earlshall, with Cameron's blude on his hand, and wild Bonshaw, that tied blessed Mr Cargill's limbs till the blude sprung, and Dunbarton Douglas, the twice-turned traitor baith to country and king There was the Bluidy Advocate MacKenyie, who, for his worldly wit and wisdom had been to the rest as a god And there was Claverhouse, as beautiful as when he lived, with his long, dark, curled locks streaming down over his laced buff-coat, and his left hand always on his right spule-blade, to hide the wound that the silver bullet had made He sat apart from them all, and looked at them with a melancholy, haughty countenance, while the rest hallooed, and sang, and laughed, that the room rang But their smiles were fearfully contorted from time to time, and their laugh passed into such wild sounds as made my gudesire's very nails grow blue, and chilled the marrow in his banes

They that waited at the table were just the wicked serving-men and troopers, that had done their work and cruel bidding on earth There was the Lang Lad of the Nethertown, that helped to take Argyle, and the bishop's summoner, that they called the Deil's Rattle-bag, and the wicked guardsmen in their laced coats, and the savage Highland Amorites, that shed blood like water, and many a proud serving-man, haughty of heart and bloody of hand, cringing to the rich, and making them

wickeder than they would be, grinding the poor to powder, when the rich had broken them to fragments And mony, mony mair were coming and ganging, a' as busy in their vocation as if they had been alive

Sir Robert Redgauntlet, in the midst of a' this fearful riot, cried, wi' a voice like thunder, on Steenie Piper to come to the board-head where he was sitting, his legs stretched out before him, and swathed up with flannel, with his holster pistols aside him, while the great broadsword rested against his chair, just as my gudesire had seen him the last time upon earth—the very cushion for the jackanape was close to him, but the creature itself was not there—it wasna its hour, it's likely, for he heard them say as he came forward, 'Is not the major come yet?' And another answered, 'The jackanape will be here betimes the morn ' And when my gudesire came forward, Sir Robert, or his ghaist, or the deevil in his likeness, said, 'Weel, piper, hae ye settled wi' my son for the year's rent?'

With much ado my father gat breath to say that Sir John would not settle without his honour's receipt

'Ye shall hae that for a tune of the pipes, Steenie,' said the appearance of Sir Robert—'Play us up "Weel hoddled, Luckie" '

Now this was a tune my gudesire learned frae a warlock, that heard it when they were worshipping Satan at their meetings, and my gudesire had sometimes played it at the ranting suppers in Redgauntlet Castle, but never very willingly, and now he grew cauld at the very name of it, and said, for excuse, he hadna his pipes wi' him

'MacCallum, ye limb of Beelzebub,' said the fearfu' Sir Robert, 'bring Steenie the pipes that I am keeping for him!'

MacCallum brought a pair of pipes might have served the piper of Donald of the Isles But he gave my gudesire a nudge as he offered them, and looking secretly and closely, Steenie saw that the chanter was of steel, and heated to a white heat, so he had fair warning not to trust his fingers with it So he excused himself again, and said he was faint and frightened, and had not wind aneugh to fill the bag

he had the receipt in his hand, fairly written and signed by the auld laird, only the last letters of his name were a little disorderly, written like one seized with sudden pain

Sorely troubled in his mind, he left that dreary place, rode through the mist to Redgauntlet Castle, and with much ado he got speech of the laird

'Well, you dyvour bankrupt,' was the first word, 'have you brought me my rent?'

'No,' answered my gudesire, 'I have not, but I have brought your honour Sir Robert's receipt for it'

'How, sirrah? Sir Robert's receipt! You told me he had not given you one'

'Will your honour please to see if that bit line is right?'

Sir John looked at every line, and at every letter, with much attention, and at last, at the date, which my gudesire had not observed,—'*From my appointed place*,' he read, '*this twenty-fifth of November*'—'What!—That is yesterday!—Villain, thou must have gone to hell for this!'

'I got it from your honour's father—whether he be in heaven or hell, I know not,' said Steenie

'I will delate you for a warlock to the Privy Council!' said Sir John 'I will send you to your master, the devil, with the help of a tar-barrel and a torch!'

'I intend to delate mysell to the Presbytery,' said Steenie, 'and tell them all I have seen last night, whilk are things fitter for them to judge of than a borrel man like me'

Sir John paused, composed himsell, and desired to hear the full history, and my gudesire told it him from point to point, as I have told it you—word for word, neither more nor less

Sir John was silent again for a long time, and at last he said, very composedly, 'Steenie, this story of yours concerns the honour of many a noble family besides mine, and if it be a leasing-making, to keep yourself out of my danger, the least you can expect is to have a redhot iron driven through your tongue, and that will be as bad as scauding your fingers wi' a redhot chanter But yet it may be true, Steenie, and if the money cast up, I shall not know what to think of it But where shall we find the Cat's Cradle? There are cats enough about the old

house, but I think they kitten without the ceremony of bed or cradle '

'We were best ask Hutcheon,' said my gudesire, 'he kens a' the odd corners about as weel as—another serving-man that is now gane, and that I wad not like to name '

Aweel, Hutcheon, when he was asked, told them, that a ruinous turret, lang disused, next to the clock-house, only accessible by a ladder, for the opening was on the outside, and far above the battlements, was called of old the Cat's Cradle

'There will I go immediately,' said Sir John, and he took (with what purpose, Heaven kens) one of his father's pistols from the hall-table, where they had lain since the night he died, and hastened to the battlements

It was a dangerous place to climb, for the ladder was auld and frail, and wanted ane or twa rounds However, up got Sir John, and entered at the turret-door, where his body stopped the only little light that was in the bit turret Something flees at him wi' a vengeance, maist dang him back ower—bang gaed the knight's pistol, and Hutcheon, that held the ladder, and my gudesire that stood beside him, hears a loud skelloch A minute after, Sir John flings the body of the jackanape down to them, and cries that the siller is fund, and that they should come up and help him And there was the bag of siller sure aneugh, and mony orra thing besides, that had been missing for mony a day And Sir John, when he had riped the turret weel, led my gudesire into the dining parlour, and took him by the hand and spoke kindly to him, and said he was sorry he should have doubted his word and that he would hereafter be a good master to him to make amends

'And now, Steenie,' said Sir John, 'although this vision of yours tend, on the whole, to my father's credit, as an honest man, that he should, even after his death, desire to see justice done to a poor man like you, yet you are sensible that ill-dispositioned men might make bad constructions upon it, concerning his soul's health So, I think, we had better lay the haill dirdum on that ill-deedie creature, Major Weir, and say naething about

your dream in the wood of Pitmurkie You had taken ower muckle brandy to be very certain about onything, and, Steenie, this receipt' (his hand shook while he held it out),—'it's but a queer kind of document, and we will do best, I think, to put it quietly in the fire'

'Od, but for as queer as it is, it's a' the voucher I have for my rent,' said my gudesire, who was afraid, it may be, of losing the benefit of Sir Robert's discharge

'I will bear the contents to your credit in the rental-book, and give you a discharge under my own hand,' said Sir John, 'and that on the spot And, Steenie, if you can hold your tongue about this matter, you shall sit, from this term downward, at an easier rent'

'Mony thanks to your honour,' said Steenie, who saw easily in what corner the wind was, 'doubtless I will be conformable to all your honour's commands, only I would willingly speak wi' some powerful minister on the subject, for I do not like the sort of soumons of appointment whilk your honour's father'——

'Do not call the phantom my father!' said Sir John, interrupting him

'Weel, then, the thing that was so like him,' said my gudesire, 'he spoke of my coming back to see him this time twelvemonth, and it's a weight on my conscience'

'Aweel, then,' said Sir John, 'if you be so much distressed in mind, you may speak to our minister of the parish, he is a douce man, regards the honour of our family, and the mair that he may look for some patronage from me'

Wi' that, my father readily agreed that the receipt should be burnt, and the laird threw it into the chimney with his ain hand Burn it would not for them, though, but away it flew up the lum, wi' a lang train of sparks at its tail, and a hissing noise like a squib

My gudesire gaed down to the Manse, and the minister, when he had heard the story, said it was his real opinion that though my gudesire had gaen very far in tampering with dangerous matters, yet, as he had refused the devil's arles (for such was the offer of meat and drink) and had refused to do homage by piping at his bidding, he hoped,

that if he held a circumspect walk hereafter, Satan could take little advantage by what was come and gane And, indeed, my gudesire, of his ain accord, lang foreswore baith the pipes and the brandy—it was not even till the year was out, and the fatal day past, that he would so much as take the fiddle, or drink usquebaugh or tippeny

Sir John made up his story about the jackanape as he liked himsell, and some believe till this day there was no more in the matter than the filching nature of the brute Indeed, ye'll no hinder some to threap that it was nane o' the auld Enemy that Dougal and my gudesire saw in the laird's room, but only that wanchancy creature, the major, capering on the coffin, and that, as to the blawing on the laird's whistle that was heard after he was dead, the filthy brute could do that as weel as the laird himsell, if no better But Heaven kens the truth, whilk first came out by the minister's wife, after Sir John and her ain gudeman were baith in the moulds And then my gudesire, wha was failed in his limbs, but not in his judgement or memory—at least nothing to speak of—was obliged to tell the real narrative to his friends, for the credit of his good name He might else have been charged for a warlock

The shades of evening were growing thicker around us as my conductor finished his long narrative with this moral—'Ye see, birkie, it is nae chancy thing to tak a stranger traveller for a guide, when you are in an uncouth land'

'I should not have made that inference,' said I 'Your grandfather's adventure was fortunate for himself, whom it saved from ruin and distress, and fortunate for his landlord also, whom it prevented from committing a gross act of injustice'

'Aye, but they had baith to sup the sauce o't sooner or later,' said Wandering Willie—'what was fristed wasna forgiven Sir John died before he was much over threescore, and it was just like of a moment's illness And for my gudesire, though he departed in fullness of life, yet there was my father, a yauld man of forty-five, fell down betwixt the stilts of his pleugh, and rase never again, and

left nae bairn but me, a puir sightless, fatherless, motherless creature, could neither work nor want Things gaed weel aneugh at first, for Sir Redwald Redgauntlet, the only son of Sir John, and the oye of auld Sir Robert, and, waes me! the last of the honourable house, took the farm aff our hands, and brought me into his household to have care of me He liked music, and I had the best teachers baith England and Scotland could gie me Mony a merry year was I wi' him, but waes me! he gaed out with other pretty men in the Forty-five—I'll say nae mair about it—My head never settled weel since I lost him, and if I say another word about it, deil a bar will I have the heart to play the night —Look out, my gentle chap,' he resumed in a different tone, 'ye should see the lights at Brokenburn Glen by this time '

CHARLES LAMB

1775–1834

THE WITCH AUNT

[From *Mrs Leicester's School or, The History of several Young Ladies related by themselves*]

I WAS brought up in the country From my infancy I was always a weak and tender-spirited girl, subject to fears and depressions My parents, and particularly my mother, were of a very different disposition They were what is usually called gay they loved pleasure, and parties, and visiting, but as they found the turn of my mind to be quite opposite, they gave themselves little trouble about me, but upon such occasions generally left me to my choice, which was much oftener to stay at home, and indulge myself in my solitude, than to join in their rambling visits I was always fond of being alone, yet always in a manner afraid There was a book-closet which led into my mother's dressing-room Here I was for ever fond of being shut up by myself, to take down whatever volumes I pleased, and pore upon them, no matter whether they were fit for my years or no, or whether I understood them Here, when the weather would not permit my going into the dark walk, *my walk*, as it was called, in the garden, here when my parents have been from home, I have stayed for hours together, till the loneliness which pleased me so at first, has at length become quite frightful, and I have rushed out of the closet into the inhabited parts of the house, and sought refuge in the lap of some one of the female servants, or of my aunt, who would say, seeing me look pale, that Hannah had been frightening herself with some of those *nasty books* so she used to call my favourite volumes, which I would not have parted with, no not with one of the least of them, if I had had the choice to be made a fine princess and to govern the world But my aunt was

no reader She used to excuse herself, and say, that reading hurt her eyes I have been naughty enough to think that this was only an excuse, for I found that my aunt's weak eyes did not prevent her from poring ten hours a day upon her prayer-book, or her favourite Thomas a Kempis But this was always her excuse for not reading any of the books I recommended My aunt was my father's sister She had never been married My father was a good deal older than my mother, and my aunt was ten years older than my father As I was often left at home with her, and as my serious disposition so well agreed with hers, an intimacy grew up between the old lady and me, and she would often say, that she only loved one person in the world, and that was me Not that she and my parents were on very bad terms, but the old lady did not feel herself respected enough The attention and fondness which she showed to me, conscious as I was that I was almost the only being she felt any thing like fondness to, made me love her, as it was natural, indeed I am ashamed to say that I fear I almost loved her better than both my parents put together But there was an oddness, a silence about my aunt, which was never interrupted but by her occasional expressions of love to me, that made me stand in fear of her An odd look from under her spectacles would sometimes scare me away, when I had been peering up in her face to make her kiss me Then she had a way of muttering to herself, which, though it was good words and religious words that she was mumbling, somehow I did not like My weak spirits, and the fears I was subject to, always made me afraid of any personal singularity or oddness in any one I am ashamed, ladies, to lay open so many particulars of our family, but, indeed it is necessary to the understanding of what I am going to tell you, of a very great weakness, if not wickedness, which I was guilty of towards my aunt But I must return to my studies, and tell you what books I found in the closet, and what reading I chiefly admired There was a great Book of Martyrs in which I used to read, or rather I used to spell out meanings, for I was too ignorant to make out many

words, but there it was written all about those good men who chose to be burnt alive, rather than forsake their religion, and become naughty papists Some words I could make out, some I could not, but I made out enough to fill my little head with vanity, and I used to think I was so courageous I could be burnt too, and I would put my hands upon the flames which were pictured in the pretty pictures which the book had, and feel them, but, you know, ladies, there is a great difference between the flames in a picture, and real fire, and I am now ashamed of the conceit which I had of my own courage, and think how poor a martyr I should have made in those days Then there was a book not so big, but it had pictures in it, was called Culpepper's Herbal, it was full of pictures of plants and herbs, but I did not much care for that Then there was Salmon's Modern History, out of which I picked a good deal It had pictures of Chinese gods, and the great hooded serpent which ran strangely in my fancy There were some law books too, but the old English frighted me from reading them But above all, what I relished was Stackhouse's History of the Bible, where there was the picture of the Ark and all the beasts getting into it This delighted me, because it puzzled me, and many an aching head have I got with poring into it, and contriving how it might be built, with such and such rooms, to hold all the world if there should be another flood, and sometimes settling what pretty beasts should be saved, and what should not, for I would have no ugly or deformed beast in my pretty ark But this was only a piece of folly and vanity, that a little reflection might cure me of Foolish girl that I was! to suppose that any creature is really ugly, that has all its limbs contrived with heavenly wisdom, and was doubtless formed to some beautiful end, though a child cannot comprehend it — Doubtless a frog or a toad is not uglier in itself than a squirrel or a pretty green lizard, but we want understanding to see it

[Here I must remind you, my dear Miss Howe, that one of the young ladies smiled, and two or three were seen to titter, at this

part of your narration, and you seemed, I thought, a little too angry for a girl of your sense and reading, but you will remember, my dear, that young heads are not always able to bear strange and unusual assertions, and if some elder person possibly, or some book which you have found, had not put it into your head, you would hardly have discovered by your own reflection, that a frog or a toad was equal in real loveliness to a frisking squirrel, or a pretty green lizard, as you called it, not remembering that at this very time you gave the lizard the name of pretty, *and left it out to the frog—so liable we all are to prejudices But you went on with your story*]

These fancies, ladies, were not so very foolish or naughty perhaps, but they may be forgiven in a child of six years old, but what I am going to tell I shall be ashamed of, and repent, I hope, as long as I live It will teach me not to form rash judgements Besides the picture of the Ark, and many others which I have forgot, Stackhouse contained one picture which made more impression upon my childish understanding than all the rest It was the picture of the raising up of Samuel, which I used to call the Witch of Endor picture I was always very fond of picking up stories about witches There was a book called Glanvil on Witches, which used to lie about in this closet, it was thumbed about, and showed it had been much read in former times This was my treasure Here I used to pick out the strangest stories My not being able to read them very well probably made them appear more strange and out of the way to me But I could collect enough to understand that witches were old women who gave themselves up to do mischief,—how, by the help of spirits as bad as themselves, they lamed cattle, and made the corn not grow, and how they made images of wax to stand for people that had done them any injury, or they thought had done them injury, and how they burnt the images before a slow fire, and stuck pins in them, and the persons which these waxen images represented, however far distant, felt all the pains and torments in good earnest, which were inflicted in show upon these images and such a horror I had of these

wicked witches, that though I am now better instructed, and look upon all these stories as mere idle tales, and invented to fill people's heads with nonsense, yet I cannot recall to mind the horrors which I then felt, without shuddering and feeling something of the old fit return

[Here, my dear Miss Howe, you may remember, that Miss M——, the youngest of our party, showing some more curiosity than usual, I winked upon you to hasten to your story, lest the terrors which you were describing should make too much impression upon a young head, and you kindly understood my sign, and said less upon the subject of your fears, than I fancy you first intended]

This foolish book of witch stories had no pictures in it, but I made up for them out of my own fancy, and out of the great picture of the raising up of Samuel in Stackhouse I was not old enough to understand the difference there was between these silly improbable tales which imputed such powers to poor old women, who are the most helpless things in the creation, and the narrative in the Bible, which does not say, that the witch, or pretended witch, raised up the dead body of Samuel by her own power, but as it clearly appears, he was permitted by the divine will to appear, to confound the presumption of Saul, and that the witch herself was really as much frightened and confounded at the miracle as Saul himself, not expecting a real appearance, but probably having prepared some juggling, slight-of-hand tricks and sham appearance, to deceive the eyes of Saul whereas she, nor any one living, had ever the power to raise the dead to life, but only He who made them from the first These reasons I might have read in Stackhouse itself, if I had been old enough, and have read them in that very book since I was older, but at that time I looked at little beyond the picture

These stories of witches so terrified me, that my sleeps were broken, and in my dreams I always had a fancy of a witch being in the room with me I know now that it was only nervousness, but though I can laugh at it now as well as you, ladies, if you knew what I suffered, you

would be thankful that you have had sensible people about you to instruct you and teach you better I was let grow up wild like an ill weed, and thrived accordingly One night that I had been terrified in my sleep with my imaginations, I got out of bed, and crept softly to the adjoining room My room was next to where my aunt usually sat when she was alone Into her room I crept for relief from my fears The old lady was not yet retired to rest, but was sitting with her eyes half open, half closed, her spectacles tottering upon her nose, her head nodding over her prayer-book, her lips mumbling the words as she read them, or half read them, in her dozing posture her grotesque appearance, her old-fashioned dress, resembling what I had seen in that fatal picture in Stackhouse, all this, with the dead time of night, as it seemed to me, (for I had gone through my first sleep,) all joined to produce a wicked fancy in me, that the form which I had beheld was not my aunt, but some witch Her mumbling of her prayers confirmed me in this shocking idea I had read in Glanvil of those wicked creatures reading their prayers *backwards*, and I thought that this was the operation which her lips were at this time employed about Instead of flying to her friendly lap for that protection which I had so often experienced when I have been weak and timid, I shrunk back terrified and bewildered to my bed, where I lay in broken sleeps and miserable fancies, till the morning, which I had so much reason to wish for, came My fancies a little wore away with the light, but an impression was fixed, which could not for a long time be done away In the day-time, when my father and mother were about the house, when I saw them familiarly speak to my aunt, my fears all vanished, and when the good creature has taken me upon her knees, and shown me any kindness more than ordinary, at such times I have melted into tears, and longed to tell her what naughty foolish fancies I had had of her But when night returned, that figure which I had seen recurred,—the posture, the half-closed eyes, the mumbling and muttering which I had heard, a confusion was in my head, *who* it was I had seen that night —it was my aunt,

and it was not my aunt —it was that good creature who loved me above all the world, engaged at her good task of devotions—perhaps praying for some good to me Again, it was a witch,—a creature hateful to God and man, reading backwards the good prayers, who would perhaps destroy me In these conflicts of mind I passed several weeks, till, by a revolution in my fate, I was removed to the house of a female relation of my mother's, in a distant part of the county, who had come on a visit to our house, and observing my lonely ways, and apprehensive of the ill effect of my mode of living upon my health, begged leave to take me home to her house to reside for a short time I went, with some reluctance at leaving my closet, my dark walk, and even my aunt, who had been such a source of both love and terror to me But I went, and soon found the good effects of a change of scene Instead of melancholy closets, and lonely avenues of trees, I saw lightsome rooms and cheerful faces, I had companions of my own age, no books were allowed me but what were rational or sprightly, that gave me mirth, or gave me instruction I soon learned to laugh at witch stories, and when I returned after three or four months' absence to our own house, my good aunt appeared to me in the same light in which I had viewed her from my infancy, before that foolish fancy possessed me, or rather, I should say, more kind, more fond, more loving than before It is impossible to say how much good that lady, the kind relation of my mother's that I spoke of, did to me by changing the scene Quite a new turn of ideas was given to me I became sociable and companionable my parents soon discovered a change in me, and I have found a similar alteration in them They have been plainly more fond of me since that change, as from that time I learned to conform myself more to their way of living I have never since had that aversion to company, and going out with them, which used to make them regard me with less fondness than they would have wished to show I impute almost all that I had to complain of in their neglect, to my having been a little unsociable, uncompanionable mortal I lived in this manner for a year

or two, passing my time between our house, and the lady's who so kindly took me in hand, till by her advice, I was sent to this school, where I have told to you, ladies, what, for fear of ridicule, I never ventured to tell any person besides, the story of my foolish and naughty fancy

WASHINGTON IRVING

1783–1859

RIP VAN WINKLE

A POSTHUMOUS WRITING OF DIEDRICH KNICKERBOCKER

[From *The Sketch Book of Geoffrey Crayon* 1820]

By Woden, God of Saxons,
From whence comes Wensday, that is Wodensday,
Truth is a thing that ever I will keep
Unto thylke day in which I creep into
My sepulchre—— CARTWRIGHT

WHOEVER has made a voyage up the Hudson must remember the Kaatskill mountains They are a dismembered branch of the great Appalachian family, and are seen away to the west of the river, swelling up to a noble height, and lording it over the surrounding country Every change of season, every change of weather, indeed every hour of the day, produces some change in the magical hues and shapes of these mountains, and they are regarded by all the good wives, far and near, as perfect barometers When the weather is fair and settled, they are clothed in blue and purple, and print their bold outlines on the clear evening sky, but sometimes, when the rest of the landscape is cloudless, they will gather a hood of gray vapours about their summits, which, in the last rays of the setting sun, will glow and light up like a crown of glory

At the foot of these fairy mountains, the voyager may have descried the light smoke curling up from a village, whose shingle-roofs gleam among the trees, just where the blue tints of the upland melt away into the fresh green of the nearer landscape It is a little village, of great antiquity, having been founded by some of the Dutch colonists, in the early times of the province, just about the beginning of the government of the good Peter

Stuyvesant (may he rest in peace!), and there were some of the houses of the original settlers standing within a few years, built of small yellow bricks brought from Holland, having latticed windows and gable fronts, surmounted with weathercocks

In that same village, and in one of these very houses (which, to tell the precise truth, was sadly time-worn and weather-beaten), there lived many years since, while the country was yet a province of Great Britain, a simple good-natured fellow, of the name of Rip Van Winkle He was a descendant of the Van Winkles who figured so gallantly in the chivalrous days of Peter Stuyvesant, and accompanied him to the siege of Fort Christina He inherited, however, but little of the martial character of his ancestors I have observed that he was a simple good-natured man, he was, moreover, a kind neighbour, and an obedient hen-pecked husband Indeed, to the latter circumstance might be owing that meekness of spirit which gained him such universal popularity, for those men are most apt to be obsequious and conciliating abroad, who are under the discipline of shrews at home Their tempers, doubtless, are rendered pliant and malleable in the fiery furnace of domestic tribulation, and a curtain lecture is worth all the sermons in the world for teaching the virtues of patience and long-suffering A termagant wife may, therefore, in some respects, be considered a tolerable blessing, and if so, Rip Van Winkle was thrice blessed

Certain it is that he was a great favourite among all the good wives of the village, who, as usual with the amiable sex, took his part in all family squabbles, and never failed, whenever they talked those matters over in their evening gossipings, to lay all the blame on Dame Van Winkle The children of the village, too, would shout with joy whenever he approached He assisted at their sports, made their playthings, taught them to fly kites and shoot marbles, and told them long stories of ghosts, witches, and Indians Whenever he went dodging about the village, he was surrounded by a troop of them, hanging on his skirts, clambering on his back, and playing

a thousand tricks on him with impunity, and not a dog would bark at him throughout the neighbour hood

The great error in Rip's composition was an insuperable aversion to all kinds of profitable labour It could not be from the want of assiduity or perseverance, for he would sit on a wet rock, with a rod as long and heavy as a Tartar's lance, and fish all day without a murmur, even though he should not be encouraged by a single nibble He would carry a fowling-piece on his shoulder for hours together, trudging through woods and swamps, and up hill and down dale, to shoot a few squirrels or wild pigeons He would never refuse to assist a neighbour even in the roughest toil, and was a foremost man at all country frolics for husking Indian corn, or building stone fences, the women of the village, too, used to employ him to run their errands, and to do such little odd jobs as their less obliging husbands would not do for them In a word, Rip was ready to attend to anybody's business but his own, but as to doing family duty, and keeping his farm in order, he found it impossible

In fact, he declared it was of no use to work on his farm, it was the most pestilent little piece of ground in the whole country, everything about it went wrong, and would go wrong, in spite of him His fences were continually falling to pieces, his cow would either go astray or get among the cabbages, weeds were sure to grow quicker in his fields than anywhere else, the rain always made a point of setting in just as he had some outdoor work to do, so that though his patrimonial estate had dwindled away under his management, acre by acre, until there was little more left than a mere patch of Indian corn and potatoes, yet it was the worst-conditioned farm in the neighbourhood

His children, too, were as ragged and wild as if they belonged to nobody His son Rip, an urchin begotten in his own likeness, promised to inherit the habits, with the old clothes of his father He was generally seen trooping like a colt at his mother's heels, equipped in a pair of his father's cast-off galligaskins, which he had much ado to

hold up with one hand, as a fine lady does her train in bad weather

Rip Van Winkle, however, was one of those happy mortals, of foolish, well-oiled dispositions, who take the world easy, eat white bread or brown, whichever can be got with least thought or trouble, and would rather starve on a penny than work for a pound If left to himself, he would have whistled life away in perfect contentment, but his wife kept continually dinning in his ears about his idleness, his carelessness, and the ruin he was bringing on his family Morning, noon, and night, her tongue was incessantly going, and everything he said or did was sure to produce a torrent of household eloquence Rip had but one way of replying to all lectures of the kind, and that, by frequent use, had grown into a habit He shrugged his shoulders, shook his head, cast up his eyes, but said nothing This, however, always provoked a fresh volley from his wife, so that he was fain to draw off his forces, and take to the outside of the house—the only side which, in truth, belongs to a hen-pecked husband

Rip's sole domestic adherent was his dog Wolf, who was as much hen-pecked as his master, for Dame Van Winkle regarded them as companions in idleness, and even looked upon Wolf with an evil eye, as the cause of his master's going so often astray True it is, in all points of spirit befitting an honourable dog, he was as courageous an animal as ever scoured the woods—but what courage can withstand the ever-during and all-besetting terrors of a woman's tongue? The moment Wolf entered the house his crest fell, his tail drooped to the ground or curled between his legs, he sneaked about with a gallows air, casting many a side-long glance at Dame Van Winkle, and at the least flourish of a broomstick or ladle, he would fly to the door with yelping precipitation

Times grew worse and worse with Rip Van Winkle as years of matrimony rolled on, a tart temper never mellows with age, and a sharp tongue is the only edged tool that grows keener with constant use For a long while he used to console himself, when driven from home, by frequent-

ing a kind of perpetual club of the sages, philosophers, and other idle personages of the village, which held its sessions on a bench before a small inn, designated by a rubicund portrait of his Majesty George the Third. Here they used to sit in the shade through a long, lazy summer's day, talking listlessly over village gossip, or telling endless sleepy stories about nothing. But it would have been worth any statesman's money to have heard the profound discussions that sometimes took place, when by chance an old newspaper fell into their hands from some passing traveller. How solemnly they would listen to the contents, as drawled out by Derrick Van Bummel, the schoolmaster, a dapper learned little man, who was not to be daunted by the most gigantic word in the dictionary, and how sagely they would deliberate upon public events some months after they had taken place.

The opinions of this junto were completely controlled by Nicholas Vedder, a patriarch of the village, and landlord of the inn, at the door of which he took his seat from morning till night, just moving sufficiently to avoid the sun and keep in the shade of a large tree, so that the neighbours could tell the hour by his movements as accurately as by a sundial. It is true he was rarely heard to speak, but smoked his pipe incessantly. His adherents, however (for every great man has his adherents), perfectly understood him, and knew how to gather his opinions. When anything that was read or related displeased him, he was observed to smoke his pipe vehemently, and to send forth short, frequent, and angry puffs, but when pleased, he would inhale the smoke slowly and tranquilly, and emit it in light and placid clouds, and sometimes, taking the pipe from his mouth, and letting the fragrant vapour curl about his nose, would gravely nod his head in token of perfect approbation.

From even this stronghold the unlucky Rip was at length routed by his termagant wife, who would suddenly break in upon the tranquillity of the assemblage and call the members all to naught, nor was that august personage, Nicholas Vedder himself, sacred from the daring tongue of this terrible virago, who charged him

outright with encouraging her husband in habits of idleness

Poor Rip was at last reduced almost to despair, and his only alternative, to escape from the labour of the farm and clamour of his wife, was to take gun in hand and stroll away into the woods Here he would sometimes seat himself at the foot of a tree, and share the contents of his wallet with Wolf, with whom he sympathized as a fellow-sufferer in persecution 'Poor Wolf,' he would say, 'thy mistress leads thee a dog's life of it, but never mind, my lad, whilst I live thou shalt never want a friend to stand by thee!' Wolf would wag his tail, look wistfully in his master's face, and if dogs can feel pity, I verily believe he reciprocated the sentiment with all his heart

In a long ramble of the kind on a fine autumnal day, Rip had unconsciously scrambled to one of the highest parts of the Kaatskill mountains He was after his favourite sport of squirrel-shooting, and the still solitudes had echoed and re-echoed with the reports of his gun Panting and fatigued, he threw himself, late in the afternoon, on a green knoll, covered with mountain herbage, that crowned the brow of a precipice From an opening between the trees he could overlook all the lower country for many a mile of rich woodland He saw at a distance the lordly Hudson, far, far below him, moving on its silent but majestic course, with the reflection of a purple cloud, or the sail of a lagging bark, here and there sleeping on its glassy bosom, and at last losing itself in the blue highlands

On the other side he looked down into a deep mountain glen, wild, lonely, and shagged, the bottom filled with fragments from the impending cliffs, and scarcely lighted by the reflected rays of the setting sun For some time Rip lay musing on this scene, evening was gradually advancing, the mountains began to throw their long blue shadows over the valleys, he saw that it would be dark long before he could reach the village, and he heaved a heavy sigh when he thought of encountering the terrors of Dame Van Winkle

As he was about to descend, he heard a voice from a

distance, hallooing, 'Rip Van Winkle! Rip Van Winkle!' He looked round, but could see nothing but a crow winging its solitary flight across the mountain He thought his fancy must have deceived him, and turned again to descend, when he heard the same cry ring through the still evening air 'Rip Van Winkle! Rip Van Winkle!'—at the same time Wolf bristled up his back, and, giving a loud growl, skulked to his master's side, looking fearfully down into the glen Rip now felt a vague apprehension stealing over him, he looked anxiously in the same direction, and perceived a strange figure toiling up the rocks, and bending under the weight of something he carried on his back He was surprised to see any human being in this lonely and unfrequented place, but supposing it to be some one of the neighbourhood in need of his assistance, he hastened down to yield it

On nearer approach he was still more surprised at the singularity of the stranger's appearance He was a short, square-built old fellow, with thick bushy hair and a grizzled beard His dress was of the antique Dutch fashion—a cloth jerkin, strapped round the waist—several pair of breeches, the outer one of ample volume, decorated with rows of buttons down the sides, and bunches at the knees He bore on his shoulder a stout keg, that seemed full of liquor, and made signs for Rip to approach and assist him with the load Though rather shy and distrustful of this new acquaintance, Rip complied with his usual alacrity, and mutually relieving each other, they clambered up a narrow gully, apparently the dry bed of a mountain torrent As they ascended, Rip every now and then heard long rolling peals, like distant thunder, that seemed to issue out of a deep ravine, or rather cleft, between lofty rocks, toward which their rugged path conducted He paused for an instant, but supposing it to be the muttering of one of those transient thunder-showers which often take place in mountain heights, he proceeded Passing through the ravine, they came to a hollow, like a small amphitheatre, surrounded by perpendicular precipices, over the brinks of which impending trees shot their branches, so that you only caught glimpses of the

azure sky and the bright evening cloud During the whole time, Rip and his companion had laboured on in silence, for though the former marvelled greatly what could be the object of carrying a keg of liquor up this wild mountain, yet there was something strange and incomprehensible about the unknown, that inspired awe and checked familiarity

On entering the amphitheatre, new objects of wonder presented themselves On a level spot in the centre was a company of odd-looking personages playing at ninepins They were dressed in a quaint outlandish fashion, some wore short doublets, others jerkins, with long knives in their belts, and most of them had enormous breeches, of similar style with that of the guide's Their visages, too, were peculiar, one had a large beard, broad face, and small piggish eyes, the face of another seemed to consist entirely of nose, and was surmounted by a white sugar-loaf hat, set off with a little red cock's tail They all had beards, of various shapes and colours There was one who seemed to be the commander He was a stout old gentleman, with a weather-beaten countenance, he wore a laced doublet, broad belt and hanger, high-crowned hat and feather, red stockings, and high-heeled shoes, with roses in them The whole group reminded Rip of the figures in an old Flemish painting in the parlour of Dominie Van Shaick, the village parson, and which had been brought over from Holland at the time of the settlement

What seemed particularly odd to Rip was, that though these folks were evidently amusing themselves, yet they maintained the gravest faces, the most mysterious silence, and were, withal, the most melancholy party of pleasure he had ever witnessed Nothing interrupted the stillness of the scene but the noise of the balls, which, whenever they were rolled, echoed along the mountains like rumbling peals of thunder

As Rip and his companion approached them, they suddenly desisted from their play, and stared at him with such fixed, statue-like gaze, and such strange, uncouth, lack-lustre countenances, that his heart turned within him, and his knees smote together His companion now

emptied the contents of the keg into large flagons, and made signs to him to wait upon the company He obeyed with fear and trembling, they quaffed the liquor in profound silence, and then returned to their game

By degrees Rip's awe and apprehension subsided He even ventured, when no eye was fixed upon him, to taste the beverage, which he found had much of the flavour of excellent Hollands He was naturally a thirsty soul, and was soon tempted to repeat the draught One taste provoked another, and he reiterated his visits to the flagon so often, that at length his senses were overpowered, his eyes swam in his head, his head gradually declined, and he fell into a deep sleep

On waking, he found himself on the green knoll whence he had first seen the old man of the glen He rubbed his eyes—it was a bright sunny morning The birds were hopping and twittering among the bushes, and the eagle was wheeling aloft, and breasting the pure mountain breeze 'Surely,' thought Rip, 'I have not slept here all night' He recalled the occurrences before he fell alseep The strange man with a keg of liquor—the mountain ravine—the wild retreat among the rocks—the woebegone party at ninepins—the flagon—'Oh! that flagon! that wicked flagon!' thought Rip, 'what excuse shall I make to Dame Van Winkle?'

He looked round for his gun, but in place of the clean, well-oiled fowling-piece, he found an old firelock lying by him, the barrel encrusted with rust, the lock falling off, and the stock worm-eaten He now suspected that the grave roysters of the mountain had put a trick upon him, and, having dosed him with liquor, had robbed him of his gun Wolf, too, had disappeared, but he might have strayed away after a squirrel or partridge He whistled after him, and shouted his name, but all in vain, the echoes repeated his whistle and shout, but no dog was to be seen

He determined to revisit the scene of the last evening's gambol, and, if he met with any of the party, to demand his dog and gun As he rose to walk, he found himself stiff in the joints, and wanting in his usual activity 'These

mountain beds do not agree with me,' thought Rip, 'and if this frolic should lay me up with a fit of the rheumatism, I shall have a blessed time with Dame Van Winkle' With some difficulty he got down into the glen he found the gully up which he and his companion had ascended the preceding evening, but, to his astonishment, a mountain stream was now foaming down it—leaping from rock to rock, and filling the glen with babbling murmurs He, however, made shift to scramble up its sides, working his toilsome way through thickets of birch, sassafras, and witch-hazel, and sometimes tripped up or entangled by the wild grape-vines that twisted their coils or tendrils from tree to tree, and spread a kind of network in his path

At length he reached to where the ravine had opened through the cliffs to the amphitheatre, but no traces of such opening remained The rocks presented a high impenetrable wall, over which the torrent came tumbling in a sheet of feathery foam, and fell into a broad deep basin, black from the shadows of the surrounding forest Here, then, poor Rip was brought to a stand He again called and whistled after his dog, he was only answered by the cawing of a flock of idle crows, sporting high in air about a dry tree that overhung a sunny precipice, and who, secure in their elevation, seemed to look down and scoff at the poor man's perplexities What was to be done?—the morning was passing away, and Rip felt famished for want of his breakfast He grieved to give up his dog and gun, he dreaded to meet his wife, but it would not do to starve among the mountains He shook his head, shouldered the rusty firelock, and, with a heart full of trouble and anxiety, turned his steps homeward

As he approached the village he met a number of people, but none whom he knew, which somewhat surprised him, for he had thought himself acquainted with every one in the country round Their dress, too, was of a different fashion from that to which he was accustomed They all stared at him with equal marks of surprise, and, whenever they cast their eyes upon him, invariably stroked their chins The constant recurrence of this gesture induced Rip, involuntarily, to do the same—when,

to his astonishment, he found his beard had grown a foot long!

He had now entered the skirts of the village A troop of strange children ran at his heels, hooting after him, and pointing at his grey beard The dogs, too, not one of which he recognized for an old acquaintance, barked at him as he passed The very village was altered, it was larger and more populous There were rows of houses which he had never seen before, and those which had been his familiar haunts had disappeared Strange names were over the doors—strange faces at the windows—everything was strange His mind now misgave him, he began to doubt whether both he and the world around him were not bewitched Surely this was his native village, which he had left but the day before There stood the Kaatskill mountains—there ran the silver Hudson at a distance—there was every hill and dale precisely as it had always been Rip was sorely perplexed 'That flagon last night,' thought he, 'has addled my poor head sadly!'

It was with some difficulty that he found the way to his own house, which he approached with silent awe, expecting every moment to hear the shrill voice of Dame Van Winkle He found the house gone to decay—the roof fallen in, the windows shattered, and the doors off the hinges A half-starved dog, that looked like Wolf, was skulking about it Rip called him by name, but the cur snarled, showed his teeth, and passed on This was an unkind cut indeed—'My very dog,' sighed poor Rip, 'has forgotten me!'

He entered the house, which, to tell the truth, Dame Van Winkle had always kept in neat order It was empty, forlorn, and apparently abandoned The desolateness overcame all his connubial fears—he called loudly for his wife and children—the lonely chambers rang for a moment with his voice, and then all again was silence

He now hurried forth, and hastened to his old resort, the village inn—but it too was gone A large rickety wooden building stood in its place, with great gaping

windows, some of them broken and mended with old hats and petticoats, and over the door was painted, 'The Union Hotel, by Jonathan Doolittle.' Instead of the great tree that used to shelter the quiet little Dutch inn of yore, there now was reared a tall naked pole, with something on the top that looked like a red nightcap, and from it was fluttering a flag, on which was a singular assemblage of stars and stripes—all this was strange and incomprehensible. He recognized on the sign, however, the ruby face of King George, under which he had smoked so many a peaceful pipe; but even this was singularly metamorphosed. The red coat was changed for one of blue and buff, a sword was held in the hand instead of a sceptre, the head was decorated with a cocked hat, and underneath was painted in large characters, GENERAL WASHINGTON.

There was, as usual, a crowd of folk about the door, but none that Rip recollected. The very character of the people seemed changed. There was a busy, bustling, disputatious tone about it, instead of the accustomed phlegm and drowsy tranquillity. He looked in vain for the sage Nicholas Vedder, with his broad face, double chin, and fair long pipe, uttering clouds of tobacco-smoke instead of idle speeches; or Van Bummel, the schoolmaster, doling forth the contents of an ancient newspaper. In place of these, a lean, bilious-looking fellow, with his pockets full of handbills, was haranguing vehemently about rights of citizens—elections—members of Congress—liberty—Bunker's Hill—heroes of seventy-six—and other words, which were a perfect Babylonish jargon to the bewildered Van Winkle.

The appearance of Rip, with his long grizzled beard, his rusty fowling-piece, his uncouth dress, and an army of women and children at his heels, soon attracted the attention of the tavern politicians. They crowded round him, eyeing him from head to foot with great curiosity. The orator bustled up to him, and, drawing him partly aside, inquired 'on which side he voted?' Rip stared in vacant stupidity. Another short but busy little fellow pulled him by the arm, and, rising on tiptoe, inquired in his ear,

'Whether he was Federal or Democrat?' Rip was equally at a loss to comprehend the question, when a knowing, self-important old gentleman, in a sharp cocked hat, made his way through the crowd, putting them to the right and left with his elbows as he passed, and planting himself before Van Winkle, with one arm akimbo, the other resting on his cane, his keen eyes and sharp hat penetrating, as it were, into his very soul, demanded in an austere tone, 'What brought him to the election with a gun on his shoulder, and a mob at his heels, and whether he meant to breed a riot in the village?'—'Alas! gentlemen,' cried Rip, somewhat dismayed, 'I am a poor quiet man, a native of the place, and a loyal subject of the king, God bless him!'

Here a general shout burst from the bystanders—'A tory! a tory! a spy! a refugee! hustle him! away with him!' It was with great difficulty that the self-important man in the cocked hat restored order, and, having assumed a tenfold austerity of brow, demanded again of the unknown culprit, what he came there for, and whom he was seeking? The poor man humbly assured him that he meant no harm, but merely came there in search of some of his neighbours, who used to keep about the tavern

'Well—who are they?—name them'

Rip bethought himself a moment, and inquired, 'Where's Nicholas Vedder?'

There was a silence for a little while, when an old man replied in a thin piping voice, 'Nicholas Vedder! why, he is dead and gone these eighteen years! There was a wooden tombstone in the churchyard that used to tell all about him, but that's rotten and gone too'

'Where's Brom Dutcher?'

'Oh, he went off to the army in the beginning of the war, some say he was killed at the storming of Stony Point—others say he was drowned in a squall at the foot of Antony's Nose I don't know—he never came back again'

'Where's Van Bummel, the schoolmaster?'

'He went off to the wars too, was a great militia general, and is now in Congress'

Rip's heart died away at hearing of these sad changes in his home and friends, and finding himself thus alone in the world Every answer puzzled him too, by treating of such enormous lapses of time, and of matters which he could not understand war—Congress—Stony Point,—he had no courage to ask after any more friends, but cried out in despair, 'Does nobody here know Rip Van Winkle?'

'Oh, Rip Van Winkle!' exclaimed two or three, 'Oh, to be sure! that's Rip Van Winkle yonder, leaning against the tree'

Rip looked, and beheld a precise counterpart of himself, as he went up the mountain apparently as lazy, and certainly as ragged The poor fellow was now completely confounded He doubted his own identity, and whether he was himself or another man In the midst of his bewilderment, the man in the cocked hat demanded who he was, and what was his name?

'God knows,' exclaimed he, at his wit's end, 'I'm not myself—I'm somebody else—that's me yonder—no—that's somebody else got into my shoes—I was myself last night, but I fell asleep on the mountain, and they've changed my gun, and everything's changed, and I'm changed, and I can't tell what's my name, or who I am!'

The bystanders began now to look at each other, nod, wink significantly, and tap their fingers against their foreheads There was a whisper, also, about securing the gun, and keeping the old fellow from doing mischief, at the very suggestion of which the self-important man in the cocked hat retired with some precipitation At this critical moment a fresh comely woman pressed through the throng to get a peep at the grey-bearded man She had a chubby child in her arms, which, frightened at his looks, began to cry 'Hush, Rip,' cried she, 'hush, you little fool, the old man won't hurt you' The name of the child, the air of the mother, the tone of her voice, all awakened a train of recollections in his mind

'What is your name, my good woman?' asked he

'Judith Gardenier'

'And your father's name?'

'Ah, poor man, Rip Van Winkle was his name, but it's

twenty years since he went away from home with his gun, and never has been heard of since—his dog came home without him, but whether he shot himself, or was carried away by the Indians, nobody can tell I was then but a little girl '

Rip had but one question more to ask, but he put it with a faltering voice

'Where's your mother?'

'Oh, she too had died but a short time since, she broke a blood-vessel in a fit of passion at a New England pedler '

There was a drop of comfort, at least, in this intelligence The honest man could contain himself no longer He caught his daughter and her child in his arms 'I am your father!' cried he—'Young Rip Van Winkle once—old Rip Van Winkle now!—Does nobody know poor Rip Van Winkle?'

All stood amazed, until an old woman, tottering out from among the crowd, put her hand to her brow, and peering under it in his face for a moment, exclaimed, 'Sure enough! it is Rip Van Winkle—it is himself! Welcome home again, old neighbour—Why, where have you been these twenty long years?'

Rip's story was soon told, for the whole twenty years had been to him but as one night The neighbours stared when they heard it, some were seen to wink at each other, and put their tongues in their cheeks and the self-important man in the cocked hat, who, when the alarm was over, had returned to the field, screwed down the corners of his mouth, and shook his head—upon which there was a general shaking of the head throughout the assemblage

It was determined, however, to take the opinion of old Peter Vanderdonk, who was seen slowly advancing up the road He was a descendant of the historian of that name, who wrote one of the earliest accounts of the province Peter was the most ancient inhabitant of the village, and well versed in all the wonderful events and traditions of the neighbourhood He recollected Rip at once, and corroborated his story in the most satisfactory manner He assured the company that it was a fact,

handed down from his ancestor the historian, that the Kaatskill mountains had always been haunted by strange beings That it was affirmed that the great Hendrick Hudson, the first discoverer of the river and country, kept a kind of vigil there every twenty years, with his crew of the Half-moon, being permitted in this way to revisit the scenes of his enterprise, and keep a guardian eye upon the river, and the great city called by his name That his father had once seen them in their old Dutch dresses playing at ninepins in a hollow of the mountain, and that he himself had heard, one summer afternoon, the sound of their balls, like distant peals of thunder

To make a long story short, the company broke up, and returned to the more important concerns of the election Rip's daughter took him home to live with her, she had a snug, well-furnished house, and a stout cheery farmer for her husband, whom Rip recollected for one of the urchins that used to climb upon his back As to Rip's son and heir, who was the ditto of himself, seen leaning against the tree, he was employed to work on the farm, but evinced an hereditary disposition to attend to anything else but his business

Rip now resumed his old walks and habits, he soon found many of his former cronies, though all rather the worse for the wear and tear of time, and preferred making friends among the rising generation, with whom he soon grew into great favour

Having nothing to do at home, and being arrived at that happy age when a man can be idle with impunity, he took his place once more on the bench at the inn door, and was reverenced as one of the patriarchs of the village, and a chronicle of the old times 'before the war' It was some time before he could get into the regular track of gossip, or could be made to comprehend the strange events that had taken place during his torpor How that there had been a revolutionary war—that the country had thrown off the yoke of old England—and that, instead of being a subject of his Majesty George the Third, he was now a free citizen of the United States Rip, in fact, was no politician, the changes of states and empires made but

little impression on him, but there was one species of despotism under which he had long groaned, and that was—petticoat government Happily that was at an end, he had got his neck out of the yoke of matrimony, and could go in and out whenever he pleased, without dreading the tyranny of Dame Van Winkle Whenever her name was mentioned, however, he shook his head, shrugged his shoulders, and cast up his eyes, which might pass either for an expression of resignation to his fate, or joy at his deliverance

He used to tell his story to every stranger that arrived at Mr Doolittle's hotel He was observed, at first, to vary on some points every time he told it, which was, doubtless, owing to his having so recently awaked It at last settled down precisely to the tale I have related, and not a man, woman, or child in the neighbourhood but knew it by heart Some always pretended to doubt the reality of it, and insisted that Rip had been out of his head, and that this was one point on which he always remained flighty The old Dutch inhabitants, however, almost universally gave it full credit Even to this day they never hear a thunder-storm of a summer afternoon about the Kaatskill, but they say Hendrick Hudson and his crew are at their game of ninepins, and it is a common wish of all hen-pecked husbands in the neighbourhood, when life hangs heavy on their hands, that they might have a quieting draught out of Rip Van Winkle's flagon

NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE

1804–1864

THE SNOW-IMAGE

A CHILDISH MIRACLE

[From *The Snow Image*, &c 1852]

ONE afternoon of a cold winter's day, when the sun shone forth with chilly brightness, after a long storm, two children asked leave of their mother to run out and play in the new-fallen snow The elder child was a little girl, whom, because she was of a tender and modest disposition, and was thought to be very beautiful, her parents, and other people who were familiar with her, used to call Violet But her brother was known by the style and title of Peony on account of the ruddiness of his broad and round little phiz, which made everybody think of sunshine and great scarlet flowers The father of these two children, a certain Mr Lindsey, it is important to say, was an excellent but exceedingly matter-of-fact sort of man, a dealer in hardware, and was sturdily accustomed to take what is called the common-sense view of all matters that came under his consideration With a heart about as tender as other people's, he had a head as hard and impenetrable, and therefore, perhaps, as empty, as one of the iron pots which it was a part of his business to sell The mother's character, on the other hand, had a strain of poetry in it, a trait of unworldly beauty,—a delicate and dewy flower, as it were, that had survived out of her imaginative youth, and still kept itself alive amid the dusty realities of matrimony and motherhood

So, Violet and Peony, as I began with saying, besought their mother to let them run out and play in the new snow, for, though it had looked so dreary and dismal, drifting downward out of the grey sky, it had a very cheerful aspect, now that the sun was shining on it The children dwelt in a city, and had no wider play-place

than a little garden before the house, divided by a white fence from the street, and with a pear-tree and two or three plum-trees overshadowing it, and some rose-bushes just in front of the parlour windows The trees and shrubs, however, were now leafless, and their twigs were enveloped in the light snow, which thus made a kind of wintry foliage, with here and there a pendent icicle for the fruit

'Yes, Violet,—yes, my little Peony,' said their kind mother, 'you may go out and play in the new snow'

Accordingly, the good lady bundled up her darlings in woollen jackets and wadded sacks, and put comforters round their necks, and a pair of striped gaiters on each little pair of legs, and worsted mittens on their hands, and gave them a kiss apiece, by way of a spell to keep away Jack Frost Forth sallied the two children, with a hop-skip-and-jump, that carried them at once into the very heart of a huge snow-drift, whence Violet emerged like a snow-bunting, while little Peony floundered out with his round face in full bloom Then what a merry time had they! To look at them frolicking in the wintry garden, you would have thought that the dark and pitiless storm had been sent for no other purpose but to provide a new plaything for Violet and Peony, and that they themselves had been created, as the snow-birds were, to take delight only in the tempest, and in the white mantle which it spread over the earth

At last, when they had frosted one another all over with handfuls of snow, Violet, after laughing heartily at little Peony's figure, was struck with a new idea

'You look exactly like a snow-image, Peony,' said she, 'if your cheeks were not so red And that puts me in mind! Let us make an image out of snow,—an image of a little girl,—and it shall be our sister, and shall run about and play with us all winter long Won't it be nice?'

'Oh, yes!' cried Peony, as plainly as he could speak, for he was but a little boy 'That will be nice! And mamma shall see it!'

'Yes,' answered Violet, 'mamma shall see the new little

girl But she must not make her come into the warm parlour, for, you know, our little snow-sister will not love the warmth '

And forthwith the children began this great business of making a snow-image that should run about, while their mother, who was sitting at the window and overheard some of their talk, could not help smiling at the gravity with which they set about it They really seemed to imagine that there would be no difficulty whatever in creating a live little girl out of the snow And, to say the truth, if miracles are ever to be wrought, it will be by putting our hands to the work in precisely such a simple and undoubting frame of mind as that in which Violet and Peony now undertook to perform one, without so much as knowing that it was a miracle So thought the mother, and thought, likewise, that the new snow, just fallen from heaven, would be excellent material to make new beings of, if it were not so very cold She gazed at the children a moment longer, delighting to watch their little figures,—the girl, tall for her age, graceful and agile, and so delicately coloured that she looked like a cheerful thought, more than a physical reality,—while Peony expanded in breadth rather than height, and rolled along on his short and sturdy legs, as substantial as an elephant, though not quite so big Then the mother resumed her work What it was I forget, but she was either trimming a silken bonnet for Violet, or darning a pair of stockings for little Peony's short legs Again, however, and again, and yet other agains, she could not help turning her head to the window, to see how the children got on with their snow-image

Indeed, it was an exceedingly pleasant sight, those bright little souls at their tasks! Moreover, it was really wonderful to observe how knowingly and skilfully they managed the matter Violet assumed the chief direction, and told Peony what to do, while, with her own delicate fingers, she shaped out all the nicer parts of the snow-figure It seemed, in fact, not so much to be made by the children, as to grow up under their hands, while they were playing and prattling about it Their mother was

quite surprised at this, and the longer she looked, the more and more surprised she grew.

'What remarkable children mine are!' thought she, smiling with a mother's pride, and smiling at herself, too, for being so proud of them. 'What other children could have made anything so like a little girl's figure out of snow, at the first trial? Well,—but now I must finish Peony's new frock, for his grandfather is coming to-morrow, and I want the little fellow to look handsome.'

So she took up the frock, and was soon as busily at work again with her needle as the two children with their snow-image. But still, as the needle travelled hither and thither through the seams of the dress, the mother made her toil light and happy by listening to the airy voices of Violet and Peony. They kept talking to one another all the time, their tongues being quite as active as their feet and hands. Except at intervals, she could not distinctly hear what was said, but had merely a sweet impression that they were in a most loving mood, and were enjoying themselves highly, and that the business of making the snow-image went prosperously on. Now and then, however, when Violet and Peony happened to raise their voices, the words were as audible as if they had been spoken in the very parlour, where the mother sat. Oh, how delightfully those words echoed in her heart, even though they meant nothing so very wise or wonderful, after all!

But you must know a mother listens with her heart, much more than with her ears, and thus she is often delighted with the trills of celestial music, when other people can hear nothing of the kind.

'Peony, Peony!' cried Violet to her brother, who had gone to another part of the garden, 'bring me some of that fresh snow, Peony, from the very furthest corner, where we have not been trampling. I want it to shape our little snow-sister's bosom with. You know that part must be quite pure, just as it came out of the sky!'

'Here it is, Violet!' answered Peony, in his bluff tone, —but a very sweet tone, too,—as he came floundering through the half-trodden drifts. 'Here is the snow for her

little bosom. O Violet, how beau-ti-ful she begins to look!'

'Yes,' said Violet, thoughtfully and quietly, 'our snow-sister does look very lovely. I did not quite know, Peony, that we could make such a sweet little girl as this.'

The mother, as she listened, thought how fit and delightful an incident it would be, if fairies, or, still better, if angel-children were to come from paradise, and play invisibly with her own darlings, and help them to make their snow-image, giving it the features of celestial babyhood! Violet and Peony would not be aware of their immortal playmates,—only they would see that the image grew very beautiful while they worked at it, and would think that they themselves had done it all.

'My little girl and boy deserve such playmates, if mortal children ever did!' said the mother to herself, and then she smiled again at her own motherly pride.

Nevertheless, the idea seized upon her imagination, and, ever and anon, she took a glimpse out of the window, half dreaming that she might see the golden-haired children of paradise sporting with her own golden-haired Violet and bright-cheeked Peony.

Now, for a few moments, there was a busy and earnest, but indistinct hum of the two children's voices, as Violet and Peony wrought together with one happy consent. Violet still seemed to be the guiding spirit, while Peony acted rather as a labourer, and brought her the snow from far and near. And yet the little urchin evidently had a proper understanding of the matter, too!

'Peony, Peony!' cried Violet, for her brother was again at the other side of the garden. 'Bring me those light wreaths of snow that have rested on the lower branches of the pear-tree. You can clamber on the snow-drift, Peony, and reach them easily. I must have them to make some ringlets for our snow-sister's head!'

'Here they are, Violet!' answered the little boy. 'Take care you do not break them. Well done! Well done! How pretty!'

'Does she not look sweetly?' said Violet, with a very satisfied tone, 'and now we must have some little shining

bits of ice, to make the brightness of her eyes She is not finished yet Mamma will see how very beautiful she is, but papa will say, "Tush! nonsense!—come in out of the cold!"'

'Let us call mamma to look out,' said Peony, and then he shouted lustily, 'Mamma! mamma!! mamma!!! Look out, and see what a nice 'ittle girl we are making!'

The mother put down her work, for an instant, and looked out of the window But it so happened that the sun—for this was one of the shortest days of the whole year—had sunken so nearly to the edge of the world, that his setting shine came obliquely into the lady's eyes So she was dazzled, you must understand, and could not very distinctly observe what was in the garden Still, however, through all that bright, blinding dazzle of the sun and the new snow, she beheld a small white figure in the garden, that seemed to have a wonderful deal of human likeness about it And she saw Violet and Peony,—indeed, she looked more at them than at the image,—she saw the two children still at work, Peony bringing fresh snow, and Violet applying it to the figure as scientifically as a sculptor adds clay to his model Indistinctly as she discerned the snow-child, the mother thought to herself that never before was there a snow-figure so cunningly made, nor ever such a dear little girl and boy to make it

'They do everything better than other children,' said she, very complacently 'No wonder they make better snow-images!'

She sat down again to her work, and made as much haste with it as possible, because twilight would soon come, and Peony's frock was not yet finished, and grandfather was expected, by railroad, pretty early in the morning Faster and faster, therefore, went her flying fingers The children, likewise, kept busily at work in the garden, and still the mother listened, whenever she could catch a word She was amused to observe how their little imaginations had got mixed up with what they were doing, and were carried away by it They seemed

positively to think that the snow-child would run about and play with them

'What a nice playmate she will be for us, all winter long!' said Violet 'I hope papa will not be afraid of her giving us a cold! Shan't you love her dearly, Peony?'

'Oh, yes!' cried Peony 'And I will hug her, and she shall sit down close by me, and drink some of my warm milk!'

'Oh no, Peony!' answered Violet, with grave wisdom 'That will not do at all Warm milk will not be wholesome for our little snow-sister Little snow-people, like her, eat nothing but icicles No, no, Peony, we must not give her anything warm to drink!'

There was a minute or two of silence, for Peony, whose short legs were never weary, had gone on a pilgrimage again to the other side of the garden All of a sudden, Violet cried out, loudly and joyfully

'Look here, Peony! Come quickly! A light has been shining on her cheek out of that rose-coloured cloud! and the colour does not go away! Is not that beautiful?'

'Yes, it is beau-ti-ful,' answered Peony, pronouncing the three syllables with deliberate accuracy 'Oh, Violet, only look at her hair! It is all like gold!'

'Oh, certainly,' said Violet, with tranquillity, as if it were very much a matter of course 'That colour, you know, comes from the golden clouds, that we see up there in the sky She is almost finished now But her lips must be made very red,—redder than her cheeks Perhaps, Peony, it will make them red, if we both kiss them '

Accordingly, the mother heard two smart little smacks, as if both her children were kissing the snow-image on its frozen mouth But, as this did not seem to make the lips quite red enough, Violet next proposed that the snow-child should be invited to kiss Peony's scarlet cheek.

'Come, 'ittle snow-sister, kiss me,' cried Peony

'There! she has kissed you,' added Violet, 'and now her lips are very red And she blushed a little, too!'

'Oh, what a cold kiss!' cried Peony

Just then, there came a breeze of the pure west wind, sweeping through the garden and rattling the parlour

went to the door, intending to invite the little runaway into her comfortable parlour, for, now that the sunshine was withdrawn, the atmosphere, out of doors, was already growing very cold

But, after opening the house-door, she stood an instant on the threshold, hesitating whether she ought to ask the child to come in, or whether she should even speak to her Indeed, she almost doubted whether it were a real child, after all, or only a light wreath of the new-fallen snow, blown hither and thither about the garden by the intensely cold west wind There was certainly something very singular in the aspect of the little stranger Among all the children of the neighbourhood, the lady could remember no such face, with its pure white, and delicate rose-colour, and the golden ringlets tossing about the forehead and cheeks And as for her dress, which was entirely of white, and fluttering in the breeze, it was such as no reasonable woman would put upon a little girl, when sending her out to play, in the depth of winter It made this kind and careful mother shiver only to look at those small feet, with nothing in the world on them, except a very thin pair of white slippers Nevertheless, airily as she was clad, the child seemed to feel not the slightest inconvenience from the cold, but danced so lightly over the snow that the tips of her toes left hardly a print in its surface, while Violet could but just keep pace with her, and Peony's short legs compelled him to lag behind

Once, in the course of their play, the strange child placed herself between Violet and Peony, and taking a hand of each, skipped merrily forward, and they along with her Almost immediately, however, Peony pulled away his little fist, and began to rub it as if the fingers were tingling with cold, while Violet also released herself, though with less abruptness, gravely remarking that it was better not to take hold of hands The white-robed damsel said not a word, but danced about, just as merrily as before If Violet and Peony did not choose to play with her, she could make just as good a playmate of the brisk and cold west wind, which kept blowing her all about the garden, and took such liberties with her, that they seemed

to have been friends for a long time. All this while, the mother stood on the threshold, wondering how a little girl could look so much like a flying snow-drift, or how a snow-drift could look so very like a little girl.

She called Violet, and whispered to her.

'Violet, my darling, what is this child's name?' asked she. 'Does she live near us?'

'Why, dearest mamma,' answered Violet, laughing to think that her mother did not comprehend so very plain an affair, 'this is our little snow-sister, whom we have just been making!'

'Yes, dear mamma,' cried Peony, running to his mother, and looking up simply into her face. 'This is our snow-image! Is it not a nice 'ittle child?'

At this instant a flock of snow-birds came flitting through the air. As was very natural, they avoided Violet and Peony. But,—and this looked strange,—they flew at once to the white-robed child, fluttered eagerly about her head, alighted on her shoulders, and seemed to claim her as an old acquaintance. She, on her part, was evidently as glad to see these little birds, old Winter's grandchildren, as they were to see her, and welcomed them by holding out both her hands. Hereupon, they each and all tried to alight on her two palms and ten small fingers and thumbs, crowding one another off, with an immense fluttering of their tiny wings. One dear little bird nestled tenderly in her bosom, another put its bill to her lips. They were as joyous, all the while, and seemed as much in their element, as you may have seen them when sporting with a snow-storm.

Violet and Peony stood laughing at this pretty sight, for they enjoyed the merry time which their new playmate was having with these small-winged visitants, almost as much as if they themselves took part in it.

'Violet,' said her mother, greatly perplexed, 'tell me the truth, without any jest. Who is this little girl?'

'My darling mamma,' answered Violet, looking seriously into her mother's face, and apparently surprised that she should need any further explanation, 'I have told you truly who she is. It is our little snow-image, which

Peony and I have been making Peony will tell you so, as well as I '

'Yes, mamma,' asseverated Peony, with much gravity in his crimson little phiz, 'this is 'ittle snow-child Is not she a nice one? But, mamma, her hand is, oh, so very cold!'

While mamma still hesitated what to think and what to do, the street-gate was thrown open, and the father of Violet and Peony appeared, wrapped in a pilot-cloth sack, with a fur cap drawn down over his ears, and the thickest of gloves upon his hands Mr Lindsey was a middle-aged man, with a weary and yet a happy look in his wind-flushed and frost-pinched face, as if he had been busy all the day long, and was glad to get back to his quiet home His eyes brightened at the sight of his wife and children, although he could not help uttering a word or two of surprise, at finding the whole family in the open air, on so bleak a day, and after sunset too He soon perceived the little white stranger, sporting to and fro in the garden, like a dancing snow-wreath, and the flock of snow-birds fluttering about her head

'Pray, what little girl may that be?' inquired this very sensible man 'Surely her mother must be crazy, to let her go out in such bitter weather as it has been to-day, with only that flimsy white gown, and those thin slippers!'

'My dear husband,' said his wife, 'I know no more about the little thing than you do Some neighbour's child, I suppose Our Violet and Peony,' she added, laughing at herself for repeating so absurd a story, 'insist that she is nothing but a snow-image, which they have been busy about in the garden, almost all the afternoon '

As she said this, the mother glanced her eyes toward the spot where the children's snow-image had been made What was her surprise, on perceiving that there was not the slightest trace of so much labour!—no image at all!—no piled-up heap of snow!—nothing whatever, save the prints of little footsteps around a vacant space!

'This is very strange!' said she

'What is strange, dear mother?' asked Violet 'Dear

father, do not you see how it is? This is our snow-image, which Peony and I have made, because we wanted another playmate Did not we, Peony?'

'Yes, papa,' said crimson Peony 'This be our 'ittle snow-sister Is she not beau-ti-ful? But she gave me such a cold kiss!'

'Poh, nonsense, children!' cried their good, honest father, who, as we have already intimated, had an exceedingly common-sensible way of looking at matters 'Do not tell me of making live figures out of snow Come, wife, this little stranger must not stay out in the bleak air a moment longer We will bring her into the parlour, and you shall give her a supper of warm bread and milk, and make her as comfortable as you can Meanwhile, I will inquire among the neighbours, or, if necessary, send the city-crier about the streets, to give notice of a lost child'

So saying, this honest and very kind-hearted man was going toward the little white damsel, with the best intentions in the world But Violet and Peony, each seizing their father by the hand, earnestly besought him not to make her come in

'Dear father,' cried Violet, putting herself before him, 'it is true what I have been telling you! This is our little snow-girl, and she cannot live any longer than while she breathes the cold west wind Do not make her come into the hot room!'

'Yes, father,' shouted Peony, stamping his little foot, so mightily was he in earnest, 'this be nothing but our 'ittle snow-child! She will not love the hot fire!'

'Nonsense, children, nonsense, nonsense!' cried the father, half vexed, half laughing at what he considered their foolish obstinacy 'Run into the house, this moment! It is too late to play any longer, now I must take care of this little girl immediately, or she will catch her death-a-cold!'

'Husband! dear husband!' said his wife, in a low voice,—for she had been looking narrowly at the snow-child, and was more perplexed than ever,—'there is something very singular in all this You will think me foolish,—but

—but—may it not be that some invisible angel has been attracted by the simplicity and good faith with which our children set about their undertaking? May he not have spent an hour of his immortality in playing with those dear little souls? and so the result is what we call a miracle No, no! Do not laugh at me, I see what a foolish thought it is!'

'My dear wife,' replied the husband, laughing heartily, 'you are as much a child as Violet and Peony'

And in one sense so she was, for all through life she had kept her heart full of childlike simplicity and faith, which was as pure and clear as crystal, and, looking at all matters through this transparent medium, she sometimes saw truths so profound, that other people laughed at them as nonsense and absurdity

But now kind Mr Lindsey had entered the garden, breaking away from his two children, who still sent their shrill voices after him, beseeching him to let the snow-child stay and enjoy herself in the cold west wind As he approached, the snow-birds took to flight The little white damsel, also, fled backward, shaking her head, as if to say, 'Pray, do not touch me!' and roguishly, as it appeared, leading him through the deepest of the snow Once, the good man stumbled, and floundered down upon his face, so that, gathering himself up again, with the snow sticking to his rough pilot-cloth sack, he looked as white and wintry as a snow-image of the largest size Some of the neighbours, meanwhile, seeing him from their windows, wondered what could possess poor Mr Lindsey to be running about his garden in pursuit of a snow-drift, which the west wind was driving hither and thither! At length, after a vast deal of trouble, he chased the little stranger into a corner, where she could not possibly escape him His wife had been looking on, and, it being nearly twilight, was wonder-struck to observe how the snow-child gleamed and sparkled, and how she seemed to shed a glow all round about her, and when driven into the corner, she positively glistened like a star! It was a frosty kind of brightness, too, like that of an icicle in the moonlight The wife thought it strange that good Mr Lindsey

should see nothing remarkable in the snow-child's appearance

'Come, you odd little thing!' cried the honest man, seizing her by the hand, 'I have caught you at last, and will make you comfortable in spite of yourself We will put a nice warm pair of worsted stockings on your frozen little feet, and you shall have a good thick shawl to wrap yourself in Your poor white nose, I am afraid, is actually frost-bitten But we will make it all right Come along in'

And so, with a most benevolent smile on his sagacious visage, all purple as it was with the cold, this very well-meaning gentleman took the snow-child by the hand and led her towards the house She followed him, droopingly and reluctant, for all the glow and sparkle was gone out of her figure, and whereas just before she had resembled a bright, frosty, star-gemmed evening, with a crimson gleam on the cold horizon, she now looked as dull and languid as a thaw As kind Mr Lindsey led her up the steps of the door, Violet and Peony looked into his face,—their eyes full of tears, which froze before they could run down their cheeks—and again entreated him not to bring their snow-image into the house

'Not bring her in!' exclaimed the kind-hearted man 'Why, you are crazy, my little Violet!—quite crazy, my small Peony! She is so cold, already, that her hand has almost frozen mine, in spite of my thick gloves Would you have her freeze to death?'

His wife, as he came up the steps, had been taking another long, earnest, almost awe-stricken gaze at the little white stranger She hardly knew whether it was a dream or no, but she could not help fancying that she saw the delicate print of Violet's fingers on the child's neck It looked just as if, while Violet was shaping out the image, she had given it a gentle pat with her hand, and had neglected to smooth the impression quite away

'After all, husband,' said the mother, recurring to her idea that the angels would be as much delighted to play with Violet and Peony as she herself was, 'after all, she

does look strangely like a snow-image! I do believe she is made of snow!'

A puff of the west wind blew against the snow-child, and again she sparkled like a star

'Snow!' repeated good Mr Lindsey, drawing the reluctant guest over his hospitable threshold 'No wonder she looks like snow She is half frozen, poor little thing! But a good fire will put everything to rights'

Without further talk, and always with the same best intentions, this highly benevolent and common-sensible individual led the little white damsel—drooping, drooping, drooping, more and more—out of the frosty air, and into his comfortable parlour A Heidenberg stove, filled to the brim with intensely burning anthracite, was sending a bright gleam through the isinglass of its iron door, and causing the vase of water on its top to fume and bubble with excitement A warm, sultry smell was diffused throughout the room A thermometer on the wall furthest from the stove stood at eighty degrees The parlour was hung with red curtains, and covered with a red carpet, and looked just as warm as it felt The difference betwixt the atmosphere here and the cold wintry twilight out of doors, was like stepping at once from Nova Zembla to the hottest part of India, or from the North Pole into an oven Oh, this was a fine place for the little white stranger!

The common-sensible man placed the snow-child on the hearthrug, right in front of the hissing and fuming stove

'Now she will be comfortable!' cried Mr Lindsey, rubbing his hands and looking about him, with the pleasantest smile you ever saw 'Make yourself at home, my child'

Sad, sad and drooping, looked the little white maiden, as she stood on the hearthrug, with the hot blast of the stove striking through her like a pestilence Once, she threw a glance wistfully toward the windows, and caught a glimpse, through its red curtains, of the snow-covered roofs, and the stars glimmering frostily, and all the delicious intensity of the cold night The bleak wind rattled

the window-panes, as if it were summoning her to come forth. But there stood the snow-child, drooping, before the hot stove!

But the common-sensible man saw nothing amiss.

'Come, wife,' said he, 'let her have a pair of thick stockings and a woollen shawl or blanket directly, and tell Dora to give her some warm supper as soon as the milk boils. You, Violet and Peony, amuse your little friend. She is out of spirits, you see, at finding herself in a strange place. For my part, I will go around among the neighbours, and find out where she belongs.'

The mother, meanwhile, had gone in search of the shawl and stockings; for her own view of the matter, however subtle and delicate, had given way, as it always did, to the stubborn materialism of her husband. Without heeding the remonstrances of his two children, who still kept murmuring that their little snow-sister did not love the warmth, good Mr Lindsey took his departure, shutting the parlour door carefully behind him. Turning up the collar of his sack over his ears, he emerged from the house, and had barely reached the street-gate, when he was recalled by the screams of Violet and Peony, and the rapping of a thimbled finger against the parlour window.

'Husband! husband!' cried his wife, showing her horror-stricken face through the window-panes. 'There is no need of going for the child's parents!'

'We told you so, father!' screamed Violet and Peony, as he re-entered the parlour. 'You would bring her in; and now our poor—dear—beau-ti-ful little snow-sister is thawed!'

And their own sweet little faces were already dissolved in tears; so that their father, seeing what strange things occasionally happen in this everyday world, felt not a little anxious lest his children might be going to thaw too! In the utmost perplexity, he demanded an explanation of his wife. She could only reply, that, being summoned to the parlour by the cries of Violet and Peony, she found no trace of the little white maiden, unless it were the remains of a heap of snow, which, while she was gazing at it, melted quite away upon the hearthrug.

'And there you see all that is left of it!' added she, pointing to a pool of water, in front of the stove

'Yes, father,' said Violet, looking reproachfully at him, through her tears, 'there is all that is left of our dear little snow-sister!'

'Naughty father!' cried Peony, stamping his foot, and—I shudder to say—shaking his little fist at the common-sensible man 'We told you how it would be! What for did you bring her in?'

And the Heidenberg stove, through the isinglass of its door, seemed to glare at good Mr Lindsey, like a red-eyed demon, triumphing in the mischief which it had done!

This, you will observe, was one of those rare cases, which yet will occasionally happen, where common-sense finds itself at fault The remarkable story of the snow-image, though to that sagacious class of people to whom good Mr Lindsey belongs it may seem but a childish affair, is, nevertheless, capable of being moralized in various methods, greatly for their edification One of its lessons, for instance, might be, that it behoves men, and especially men of benevolence, to consider well what they are about, and, before acting on their philanthropic purposes, to be quite sure that they comprehend the nature and all the relations of the business in hand What has been established as an element of good to one being may prove absolute mischief to another, even as the warmth of the parlour was proper enough for children of flesh and blood, like Violet and Peony,—though by no means very wholesome, even for them,—but involved nothing short of annihilation to the unfortunate snow-image

But, after all, there is no teaching anything to wise men of good Mr Lindsey's stamp They know everything—oh, to be sure!—everything that has been, and everything that is, and everything that, by any future possibility, can be And, should some phenomenon of nature or providence transcend their system, they will not recognize it, even if it come to pass under their very noses

'Wife,' said Mr Lindsey, after a fit of silence, 'see what

a quantity of snow the children have brought in on their feet! It has made quite a puddle here before the stove Pray tell Dora to bring some towels and sop it up!'

THE THREEFOLD DESTINY

A FAIRY LEGEND

[From *Twice-Told Tales* 1851]

I HAVE sometimes produced a singular and not unpleasing effect, so far as my own mind was concerned, by imagining a train of incidents, in which the spirit and mechanism of the fairy legend should be combined with the characters and manners of familiar life In the little tale which follows, a subdued tinge of the wild and wonderful is thrown over a sketch of New England personages and scenery, yet, it is hoped, without entirely obliterating the sober hues of nature Rather than a story of events claiming to be real, it may be considered as an allegory, such as the writers of the last century would have expressed in the shape of an Eastern tale, but to which I have endeavoured to give a more lifelike warmth than could be infused into those fanciful productions

In the twilight of a summer eve, a tall, dark figure, over which long and remote travel had thrown an outlandish aspect, was entering a village, not in 'Fairy Londe', but within our own familiar boundaries The staff on which this traveller leaned, had been his companion from the spot where it grew, in the jungles of Hindostan, the hat that overshadowed his sombre brow, had shielded him from the suns of Spain, but his cheek had been blackened by the red-hot wind of an Arabian desert, and had felt the frozen breath of an Arctic region Long sojourning amid wild and dangerous men, he still wore beneath his vest the ataghan which he had once struck into the throat of a Turkish robber In every foreign clime he had lost something of his New England characteristics, and, perhaps, from every people he had unconsciously borrowed a new peculiarity, so that when

the world wanderer again trod the street of his native village, it is no wonder that he passed unrecognized, though exciting the gaze and curiosity of all Yet, as his arm casually touched that of a young woman, who was wending her way to an evening lecture, she started, and almost uttered a cry

'Ralph Cranfield!' was the name that she half articulated

'Can that be my old playmate, Faith Egerton?' thought the traveller, looking round at her figure, but without pausing

Ralph Cranfield, from his youth upward, had felt himself marked out for a high destiny He had imbibed the idea—we say not whether it were revealed to him by witchcraft, or in a dream of prophecy, or that his brooding fancy had palmed its own dictates upon him as the oracles of a Sibyl—but he had imbibed the idea, and held it firmest among his articles of faith, that three marvellous events of his life were to be confirmed to him by three signs

The first of these three fatalities, and perhaps the one on which his youthful imagination had dwelt most fondly, was the discovery of the maid, who alone, of all the maids on earth, could make him happy by her love He was to roam around the world till he should meet a beautiful woman, wearing on her bosom a jewel in the shape of a heart, whether of pearl, or ruby, or emerald, or carbuncle, or a changeful opal, or perhaps a priceless diamond, Ralph Cranfield little cared, so long as it were a heart of one peculiar shape On encountering this lovely stranger, he was bound to address her thus — 'Maiden, I have brought you a heavy heart May I rest its weight on you?' And if she were his fated bride—if their kindred souls were destined to form a union here below, which all eternity should only bind more closely—she would reply, with her finger on the heart-shaped jewel,—'This token, which I have worn so long, is the assurance that you may!'

And, secondly, Ralph Cranfield had a firm belief that there was a mighty treasure hidden somewhere in the

earth, of which the burial-place would be revealed to none but him. When his feet should press upon the mysterious spot, there would be a hand before him, pointing downward—whether carved of marble, or hewn in gigantic dimensions on the side of a rocky precipice, or perchance a hand of flame in empty air, he could not tell, but, at least, he would discern a hand, the forefinger pointing downward, and beneath it the Latin word EFFODE—Dig! And digging thereabouts, the gold in coin or ingots, the precious stones, or of whatever else the treasure might consist, would be certain to reward his toil.

The third and last of the miraculous events in the life of this high-destined man, was to be the attainment of extensive influence and sway over his fellow-creatures. Whether he were to be a king, and founder of an hereditary throne, or the victorious leader of a people contending for their freedom, or the apostle of a purified and regenerated faith, was left for futurity to show. As messengers of the sign, by which Ralph Cranfield might recognize the summons, three venerable men were to claim audience of him. The chief among them, a dignified and majestic person, arrayed, it may be supposed, in the flowing garments of an ancient sage, would be the bearer of a wand, or prophet's rod. With this wand, or rod, or staff, the venerable sage would trace a certain figure in the air, and then proceed to make known his heaven-instructed message, which, if obeyed, must lead to glorious results.

With this proud fate before him, in the flush of his imaginative youth, Ralph Cranfield had set forth to seek the maid, the treasure, and the venerable sage, with his gift of extended empire. And had he found them? Alas! it was not with the aspect of a triumphant man, who had achieved a nobler destiny than all his fellows, but rather with the gloom of one struggling against peculiar and continual adversity, that he now passed homeward to his mother's cottage. He had come back, but only for a time, to lay aside the pilgrim's staff, trusting that his weary manhood would regain somewhat of

the elasticity of youth in the spot where his threefold fate had been foreshown him There had been few changes in the village, for it was not one of those thriving places where a year's prosperity makes more than the havoc of a century's decay, but like a grey hair in a young man's head, an antiquated little town, full of old maids, and aged elms, and moss-grown dwellings Few seemed to be the changes here The drooping elms, indeed, had a more majestic spread, the weather-blackened houses were adorned with a denser thatch of verdant moss, and doubtless there were a few more gravestones in the burial ground, inscribed with names that had once been familiar in the village street Yet, summing up all the mischief that ten years had wrought, it seemed scarcely more than if Ralph Cranfield had gone forth that very morning, and dreamed a daydream till the twilight, and then turned back again But his heart grew cold, because the village did not remember him as he remembered the village

'Here is the change!' sighed he, striking his hand upon his breast 'Who is this man of thought and care, weary with world wandering, and heavy with disappointed hopes? The youth returns not, who went forth so joyously!'

And now Ralph Cranfield was at his mother's gate, in front of the small house where the old lady, with slender but sufficient means, had kept herself comfortable during her son's long absence Admitting himself within the enclosure, he leaned against a great, old tree, trifling with his own impatience, as people often do in those intervals when years are summed into a moment He took a minute survey of the dwelling—its windows, brightened with the sky gleam, its doorway, with the half of a millstone for a step, and the faintly-traced path waving thence to the gate He made friends again with his childhood's friend, the old tree against which he leaned, and glancing his eye adown its trunk, beheld something that excited a melancholy smile It was a half-obliterated inscription—the Latin word EFFODE—which he remembered to have carved in the bark of the tree,

with a whole day's toil, when he had first begun to muse about his exalted destiny. It might be accounted a rather singular coincidence, that the bark, just above the inscription, had put forth an excrescence, shaped not unlike a hand, with the forefinger pointing obliquely at the word of fate. Such, at least, was its appearance in the dusky light.

'Now a credulous man,' said Ralph Cranfield carelessly to himself, 'might suppose that the treasure which I have sought round the world, lies buried, after all, at the very door of my mother's dwelling. That would be a jest indeed!'

More he thought not about the matter, for now the door was opened, and an elderly woman appeared on the threshold, peering into the dusk to discover who it might be that had intruded on her premises, and was standing in the shadow of her tree. It was Ralph Cranfield's mother. Pass we over their greeting, and leave the one to her joy and the other to his rest—if quiet rest be found.

But when morning broke, he arose with a troubled brow, for his sleep and his wakefulness had alike been full of dreams. All the fervour was rekindled with which he had burned of yore to unravel the threefold mystery of his fate. The crowd of his early visions seemed to have awaited him beneath his mother's roof, and thronged riotously around to welcome his return. In the well-remembered chamber—on the pillow where his infancy had slumbered—he had passed a wilder night than ever in an Arab tent, or when he had reposed his head in the ghastly shades of a haunted forest. A shadowy maid had stolen to his bedside, and laid her finger on the scintillating heart, a hand of flame had glowed amid the darkness, pointing downward to a mystery within the earth, a hoary sage had waved his prophetic wand, and beckoned the dreamer onward to a chair of state. The same phantoms, though fainter in the daylight, still flitted about the cottage, and mingled among the crowd of familiar faces that were drawn thither by the news of Ralph Cranfield's return, to bid him welcome for his

mother's sake There they found him, a tall, dark, stately man, of foreign aspect, courteous in demeanour and mild of speech, yet with an abstracted eye, which seemed often to snatch a glance at the invisible

Meantime the widow Cranfield went bustling about the house, full of joy that she again had somebody to love, and be careful of, and for whom she might vex and tease herself with the petty troubles of daily life It was nearly noon when she looked forth from the door, and descried three personages of note coming along the street, through the hot sunshine and the masses of elm-tree shade At length they reached her gate, and undid the latch

'See, Ralph!' exclaimed she, with maternal pride 'here is Squire Hawkwood and the two other selectmen coming on purpose to see you! Now do tell them a good long story about what you have seen in foreign parts'

The foremost of the three visitors, Squire Hawkwood, was a very pompous, but excellent old gentleman, the head and prime mover in all the affairs of the village, and universally acknowledged to be one of the sagest men on earth He wore, according to a fashion even then becoming antiquated, a three-cornered hat, and carried a silver-headed cane, the use of which seemed to be rather for flourishing in the air than for assisting the progress of his legs His two companions were elderly and respectable yeomen, who, retaining an ante-revolutionary reverence for rank and hereditary wealth, kept a little in the Squire's rear As they approached along the pathway, Ralph Cranfield sat in an oaken elbow chair, half unconsciously gazing at the three visitors, and enveloping their homely figures in the misty romance that pervaded his mental world

'Here,' thought he, smiling at the conceit, 'here come three elderly personages, and the first of the three is a venerable sage with a staff What if this embassy should bring me the message of my fate!'

While Squire Hawkwood and his colleagues entered, Ralph rose from his seat, and advanced a few steps to receive them, and his stately figure and dark countenance, as he bent courteously towards his guests, had a

natural dignity, contrasting well with the bustling importance of the Squire The old gentleman, according to invariable custom, gave an elaborate preliminary flourish with his cane in the air, then removed his three-cornered hat in order to wipe his brow, and finally proceeded to make known his errand

'My colleagues and myself,' began the Squire, 'are burdened with momentous duties, being jointly selectmen of this village Our minds, for the space of three days past, have been laboriously bent on the selection of a suitable person to fill a most important office, and take upon himself a charge and rule, which, wisely considered, may be ranked no lower than those of kings and potentates And whereas you, our native townsman, are of good natural intellect, and well cultivated by foreign travel, and that certain vagaries and fantasies of your youth are doubtless long ago corrected, taking all these matters, I say, into due consideration, we are of opinion that Providence hath sent you hither, at this juncture, for our very purpose'

During this harangue, Cranfield gazed fixedly at the speaker, as if he beheld something mysterious and unearthly in his pompous little figure, and as if the Squire had worn the flowing robes of an ancient sage, instead of a square-skirted coat, flapped waistcoat, velvet breeches and silk stockings Nor was his wonder without sufficient cause, for the flourish of the Squire's staff, marvellous to relate, had described precisely the signal in the air which was to ratify the message of the prophetic Sage, whom Cranfield had sought around the world

'And what,' inquired Ralph Cranfield, with a tremor in his voice, 'what may this office be, which is to equal me with kings and potentates?'

'No less than instructor of our village school,' answered Squire Hawkwood, 'the office being now vacant by the death of the venerable Master Whitaker, after a fifty years' incumbency'

'I will consider of your proposal,' replied Ralph Cranfield, hurriedly, 'and will make known my decision within three days'

After a few more words, the village dignitary and his companions took their leave But to Cranfield's fancy their images were still present, and became more and more invested with the dim awfulness of figures which had first appeared to him in a dream, and afterwards had shown themselves in his waking moments, assuming homely aspects among familiar things His mind dwelt upon the features of the Squire, till they grew confused with those of the visionary Sage, and one appeared but the shadow of the other The same visage, he now thought, had looked forth upon him from the Pyramid of Cheops, the same form had beckoned to him among the colonnades of the Alhambra, the same figure had mistily revealed itself through the ascending steam of the Great Geyser At every effort of his memory he recognized some trait of the dreamy Messenger of Destiny, in this pompous, bustling, self-important, little great man of the village Amid such musings, Ralph Cranfield sat all day in the cottage, scarcely hearing and vaguely answering his mother's thousand questions about his travels and adventures At sunset, he roused himself to take a stroll, and, passing the aged elm-tree, his eye was again caught by the semblance of a hand, pointing downward at the half-obliterated inscription

As Cranfield walked down the street of the village, the level sunbeams threw his shadow far before him, and he fancied that, as his shadow walked among distant objects, so had there been a presentiment stalking in advance of him throughout his life And when he drew near each object, over which his tall shadow had preceded him, still it proved to be one of the familiar recollections of his infancy and youth Every crook in the pathway was remembered Even the more transitory characteristics of the scene were the same as in bygone days A company of cows were grazing on the grassy roadside, and refreshed him with their fragrant breath 'It is sweeter,' thought he, 'than the perfume which was wafted to our ship from the Spice Islands ' The round little figure of a child rolled from a doorway, and lay laughing almost beneath Cranfield's feet The dark and

stately man stooped down, and, lifting the infant, restored him to his mother's arms 'The children,' said he to himself—and sighed, and smiled—'the children are to be my charge!' And while a flow of natural feeling gushed like a wellspring in his heart, he came to a dwelling which he could nowise forbear to enter A sweet voice, which seemed to come from a deep and tender soul, was warbling a plaintive little air within

He bent his head, and passed through the lowly door As his foot sounded upon the threshold, a young woman advanced from the dusky interior of the house, at first hastily, and then with a more uncertain step, till they met face to face There was a singular contrast in their two figures, he dark and picturesque—one who had battled with the world—whom all suns had shone upon, and whom all winds had blown on a varied course, she neat, comely, and quiet—quiet even in her agitation—as if all her emotions had been subdued to the peaceful tenor of her life Yet their faces, all unlike as they were, had an expression that seemed not so alien—a glow of kindred feeling, flashing upward anew from half-extinguished embers

'You are welcome home!' said Faith Egerton

But Cranfield did not immediately answer, for his eye had been caught by an ornament in the shape of a Heart, which Faith wore as a brooch upon her bosom The material was the ordinary white quartz, and he recollected having himself shaped it out of one of those Indian arrowheads which are so often found in the ancient haunts of the red men It was precisely on the pattern of that worn by the visionary Maid When Cranfield departed on his shadowy search he had bestowed this brooch, in a gold setting, as a parting gift to Faith Egerton

'So, Faith, you have kept the Heart!' said he, at length

'Yes,' said she, blushing deeply—then more gaily, 'and what else have you brought me from beyond the sea?'

'Faith,' replied Ralph Cranfield, uttering the fated

words by an uncontrollable impulse, 'I have brought you nothing but a heavy heart! May I rest its weight on you?'

'This token, which I have worn so long,' said Faith, laying her tremulous finger on the Heart, 'is the assurance that you may!'

'Faith! Faith!' cried Cranfield, clasping her in his arms, 'you have interpreted my wild and weary dream!'

Yes, the wild dreamer was awake at last To find the mysterious treasure, he was to till the earth around his mother's dwelling, and reap its products! Instead of warlike command, or regal or religious sway, he was to rule over the village children! And now the visionary Maid had faded from his fancy, and in her place he saw the playmate of his childhood! Would all, who cherish such wild wishes, but look around them, they would oftenest find their sphere of duty, of prosperity, and happiness, within those precincts, and in that station, where Providence itself has cast their lot Happy they who read the riddle, without a weary world search, or a lifetime spent in vain!

DR HEIDEGGER'S EXPERIMENT

[From *Twice-Told Tales* 1851]

THAT very singular man, old Dr Heidegger, once invited four venerable friends to meet him in his study There were three white-bearded gentlemen, Mr Medbourne, Colonel Killigrew, and Mr Gascoigne, and a withered gentlewoman, whose name was the Widow Wycherly They were all melancholy old creatures, who had been unfortunate in life, and whose greatest misfortune it was, that they were not long ago in their graves Mr Medbourne, in the vigour of his age, had been a prosperous merchant, but had lost his all by a frantic speculation, and was now little better than a mendicant Colonel Killigrew had wasted his best years, and his health and substance, in the pursuit of sinful

pleasures, which had given birth to a brood of pains such as the gout, and divers other torments of soul and body. Mr Gascoigne was a ruined politician, a man of evil fame, or at least had been so, till time had buried him from the knowledge of the present generation, and made him obscure instead of infamous. As for the Widow Wycherly, tradition tells us that she was a great beauty in her day, but, for a long while past, she had lived in deep seclusion, on account of certain scandalous stories, which had prejudiced the gentry of the town against her. It is a circumstance worth mentioning, that each of these three old gentlemen, Mr Medbourne, Colonel Killigrew, and Mr Gascoigne, were early lovers of the Widow Wycherly, and had once been on the point of cutting each other's throats for her sake. And, before proceeding further, I will merely hint, that Dr Heidegger and all his four guests were sometimes thought to be a little beside themselves, as is not unfrequently the case with old people, when worried either by present troubles or woful recollections.

'My dear old friends,' said Dr Heidegger, motioning them to be seated, 'I am desirous of your assistance in one of those little experiments with which I amuse myself here in my study.'

If all stories were true, Dr Heidegger's study must have been a very curious place. It was a dim, old-fashioned chamber, festooned with cobwebs, and besprinkled with antique dust. Around the walls stood several oaken bookcases, the lower shelves of which were filled with rows of gigantic folios, and black-letter quartos, and the upper with little parchment-covered duodecimos. Over the central bookcase was a bronze bust of Hippocrates, with which, according to some authorities, Dr Heidegger was accustomed to hold consultations, in all difficult cases of his practice. In the obscurest corner of the room stood a tall and narrow oaken closet, with its door ajar, within which doubtfully appeared a skeleton. Between two of the bookcases hung a looking-glass, presenting its high and dusty plate within a tarnished gilt frame. Among many wonderful

stories related of this mirror, it was fabled that the spirits of all the doctor's deceased patients dwelt within its verge, and would stare him in the face whenever he looked thitherward The opposite side of the chamber was ornamented with the full-length portrait of a young lady, arrayed in the faded magnificence of silk, satin, and brocade, and with a visage as faded as her dress Above half a century ago, Dr Heidegger had been on the point of marriage with this young lady, but, being affected with some slight disorder, she had swallowed one of her lover's prescriptions, and died on the bridal evening The greatest curiosity of the study remains to be mentioned, it was a ponderous folio volume, bound in black leather, with massive silver clasps There were no letters on the back, and nobody could tell the title of the book But it was well known to be a book of magic, and once, when a chambermaid had lifted it, merely to brush away the dust, the skeleton had rattled in its closet, the picture of the young lady had stepped one foot upon the floor, and several ghastly faces had peeped forth from the mirror, while the brazen head of Hippocrates frowned, and said—'Forbear!'

Such was Dr Heidegger's study On the summer afternoon of our tale, a small round table, as black as ebony, stood in the centre of the room, sustaining a cut-glass vase, of beautiful form and elaborate workmanship The sunshine came through the window, between the heavy festoons of two faded damask curtains, and fell directly across this vase, so that a mild splendour was reflected from it on the ashen visages of the five old people who sat around Four champagne glasses were also on the table

'My dear old friends,' repeated Dr Heidegger, 'may I reckon on your aid in performing an exceedingly curious experiment?'

Now Dr Heidegger was a very strange old gentleman, whose eccentricity had become the nucleus for a thousand fantastic stories Some of these fables, to my shame be it spoken, might possibly be traced back to mine own veracious self, and if any passages of the present tale

should startle the reader's faith, I must be content to bear the stigma of a fiction-monger

When the doctor's four guests heard him talk of his proposed experiment, they anticipated nothing more wonderful than the murder of a mouse in an air-pump, or the examination of a cobweb by the microscope, or some similar nonsense, with which he was constantly in the habit of pestering his intimates But without waiting for a reply, Dr Heidegger hobbled across the chamber, and returned with the same ponderous folio, bound in black leather, which common report affirmed to be a book of magic Undoing the silver clasps, he opened the volume, and took from among its black-letter pages a rose, or what was once a rose, though now the green leaves and crimson petals had assumed one brownish hue, and the ancient flower seemed ready to crumble to dust in the doctor's hands

'This rose,' said Dr Heidegger, with a sigh, 'this same withered and crumbling flower, blossomed five and fifty years ago It was given me by Sylvia Ward, whose portrait hangs yonder, and I meant to wear it in my bosom at our wedding Five-and-fifty years it has been treasured between the leaves of this old volume Now, would you deem it possible that this rose of half a century could ever bloom again?'

'Nonsense!' said the Widow Wycherly, with a peevish toss of her head 'You might as well ask whether an old woman's wrinkled face could ever bloom again'

'See!' answered Dr Heidegger

He uncovered the vase, and threw the faded rose into the water which it contained At first, it lay lightly on the surface of the fluid, appearing to imbibe none of its moisture Soon, however, a singular change began to be visible The crushed and dried petals stirred, and assumed a deepening tinge of crimson, as if the flower were reviving from a deathlike slumber, the slender stalk and twigs of foliage became green, and there was the rose of half a century, looking as fresh as when Sylvia Ward had first given it to her lover It was scarcely full blown, for some of its delicate red leaves curled modestly

around its moist bosom, within which two or three dew-drops were sparkling

'That is certainly a very pretty deception,' said the doctor's friends, carelessly, however, for they had witnessed greater miracles at a conjurer's show, 'pray how was it effected?'

'Did you never hear of the "Fountain of Youth'?' asked Dr Heidegger, 'which Ponce de Leon, the Spanish adventurer, went in search of, two or three centuries ago?'

'But did Ponce de Leon ever find it?' said the Widow Wycherly

'No,' answered Dr Heidegger, 'for he never sought it in the right place The famous Fountain of Youth, if I am rightly informed, is situated in the southern part of the Floridian peninsula, not far from Lake Macaco Its source is overshadowed by several gigantic magnolias, which, though numberless centuries old, have been kept as fresh as violets, by the virtues of this wonderful water An acquaintance of mine, knowing my curiosity in such matters, has sent me what you see in the vase'

'Ahem!' said Colonel Killigrew, who believed not a word of the doctor's story, 'and what may be the effect of this fluid on the human frame?'

'You shall judge for yourself, my dear colonel,' replied Dr Heidegger, 'and all of you, my respected friends, are welcome to so much of this admirable fluid as may restore to you the bloom of youth For my own part, having had much trouble in growing old, I am in no hurry to grow young again With your permission, therefore, I will merely watch the progress of the experiment'

While he spoke, Dr Heidegger had been filling the four champagne glasses with the water of the Fountain of Youth It was apparently impregnated with an effervescent gas, for little bubbles were continually ascending from the depths of the glasses, and bursting in silvery spray at the surface As the liquor diffused a pleasant perfume, the old people doubted not that it possessed cordial and comfortable properties, and, though utter

sceptics as to its rejuvenescent power, they were inclined to swallow it at once But Dr Heidegger besought them to stay a moment

'Before you drink, my respectable old friends,' said he, 'it would be well that, with the experience of a lifetime to direct you, you should draw up a few general rules for your guidance, in passing a second time through the perils of youth Think what a sin and shame it would be, if, with your peculiar advantages, you should not become patterns of virtue and wisdom to all the young people of the age!'

The doctor's four venerable friends made him no answer, except by a feeble and tremulous laugh, so very ridiculous was the idea, that, knowing how closely repentance treads behind the steps of error, they should ever go astray again

'Drink, then,' said the doctor, bowing 'I rejoice that I have so well selected the subjects of my experiment'

With palsied hands, they raised the glasses to their lips The liquor, if it really possessed such virtues as Dr Heidegger imputed to it, could not have been bestowed on four human beings who needed it more wofully They looked as if they had never known what youth or pleasure was, but had been the offspring of Nature's dotage, and always the grey, decrepit, sapless, miserable creatures, who now sat stooping round the doctor's table, without life enough in their souls or bodies to be animated even by the prospect of growing young again They drank off the water, and replaced their glasses on the table

Assuredly there was an almost immediate improvement in the aspect of the party, not unlike what might have been produced by a glass of generous wine, together with a sudden glow of cheerful sunshine, brightening over all their visages at once There was a healthful suffusion on their cheeks, instead of the ashen hue that had made them look so corpse-like They gazed at one another, and fancied that some magic power had really begun to smooth away the deep and sad inscriptions which Father Time had been so long engraving on their

brows The Widow Wycherly adjusted her cap, for she felt almost like a woman again

'Give us more of this wondrous water!' cried they, eagerly 'We are younger—but we are still too old! Quick—give us more!'

'Patience, patience!' quoth Dr Heidegger, who sat watching the experiment, with philosophic coolness 'You have been a long time growing old Surely, you might be content to grow young in half an hour! But the water is at your service'

Again he filled their glasses with the liquor of youth, enough of which still remained in the vase to turn half the old people in the city to the age of their own grandchildren While the bubbles were yet sparkling on the brim, the doctor's four guests snatched their glasses from the table, and swallowed the contents at a single gulp Was it delusion? even while the draught was passing down their throats, it seemed to have wrought a change on their whole systems Their eyes grew clear and bright, a dark shade deepened among their silvery locks, they sat around the table, three gentlemen of middle age, and a woman hardly beyond her buxom prime

'My dear widow, you are charming!' cried Colonel Killigrew, whose eyes had been fixed upon her face, while the shadows of age were flitting from it like darkness from the crimson daybreak

The fair widow knew of old that Colonel Killigrew's compliments were not always measured by sober truth, so she started up and ran to the mirror, still dreading that the ugly visage of an old woman would meet her gaze Meanwhile, the three gentlemen behaved in such a manner, as proved that the water of the Fountain of Youth possessed some intoxicating qualities, unless, indeed, their exhilaration of spirits were merely a lightsome dizziness, caused by the sudden removal of the weight of years Mr Gascoigne's mind seemed to run on political topics, but whether relating to the past, present, or future, could not easily be determined, since the same ideas and phrases have been in vogue these fifty years Now he rattled forth full-throated sentences

about patriotism, national glory, and the people's right, now he muttered some perilous stuff or other, in a sly and doubtful whisper, so cautiously that even his own conscience could scarcely catch the secret, and now, again, he spoke in measured accents, and a deeply deferential tone, as if a royal ear were listening to his well-turned periods. Colonel Killigrew all this time had been trolling forth a jolly bottle song, and ringing his glass in symphony with the chorus, while his eyes wandered toward the buxom figure of the Widow Wycherly. On the other side of the table, Mr Medbourne was involved in a calculation of dollars and cents, with which was strangely intermingled a project for supplying the East Indies with ice, by harnessing a team of whales to the polar icebergs.

As for the Widow Wycherly, she stood before the mirror courtesying and simpering to her own image, and greeting it as the friend whom she loved better than all the world beside. She thrust her face close to the glass, to see whether some long-remembered wrinkle or crow's foot had indeed vanished. She examined whether the snow had so entirely melted from her hair, that the venerable cap could be safely thrown aside. At last, turning briskly away, she came with a sort of dancing step to the table.

'My dear old doctor,' cried she, 'pray favour me with another glass!'

'Certainly, my dear madam, certainly!' replied the complaisant doctor, 'see! I have already filled the glasses.'

There, in fact, stood the four glasses, brimful of this wonderful water, the delicate spray of which, as it effervesced from the surface, resembled the tremulous glitter of diamonds. It was now so nearly sunset, that the chamber had grown duskier than ever, but a mild and moonlike splendour gleamed from within the vase, and rested alike on the four guests, and on the doctor's venerable figure. He sat in a high-backed, elaborately-carved, oaken arm-chair, with a grey dignity of aspect that might have well befitted that very Father Time,

whose power had never been disputed, save by this fortunate company Even while quaffing the third draught of the Fountain of Youth, they were almost awed by the expression of his mysterious visage

But, the next moment, the exhilarating gush of young life shot through their veins They were now in the happy prime of youth Age, with its miserable train of cares, and sorrows, and diseases, was remembered only as the trouble of a dream, from which they had joyously awoke The fresh gloss of the soul, so early lost, and without which the world's successive scenes had been but a gallery of faded pictures, again threw its enchantment over all their prospects They felt like new-created beings, in a new-created universe

'We are young! We are young!' they cried exultingly

Youth, like the extremity of age, had effaced the strongly-marked characteristics of middle life, and mutually assimilated them all They were a group of merry youngsters, almost maddened with the exuberant frolicsomeness of their years The most singular effect of their gaiety was an impulse to mock the infirmity and decrepitude of which they had so lately been the victims They laughed loudly at their old-fashioned attire, the wide-skirted coats and flapped waistcoats of the young men, and the ancient cap and gown of the blooming girl One limped across the floor like a gouty grandfather, one set a pair of spectacles astride of his nose, and pretended to pore over the black-letter pages of the book of magic, a third seated himself in an arm-chair, and strove to imitate the venerable dignity of Dr Heidegger Then all shouted mirthfully, and leaped about the room The Widow Wycherly—if so fresh a damsel could be called a widow—tripped up to the doctor's chair, with a mischievous merriment in her rosy face

'Doctor, you dear old soul,' cried she, 'get up and dance with me!' And then the four young people laughed louder than ever, to think what a queer figure the poor old doctor would cut

'Pray excuse me,' answered the doctor quietly 'I am old and rheumatic, and my dancing days were over long

ago But either of these gay young gentlemen will be glad of so pretty a partner '

'Dance with me Clara !' cried Colonel Killigrew

'No, no, I will be her partner !' shouted Mr Gascoigne

'She promised me her hand, fifty years ago !' exclaimed Mr Medbourne

They all gathered round her One caught both her hands in his passionate grasp—another threw his arm about her waist—the third buried his hand among the glossy curls that clustered beneath the widow's cap Blushing, panting, struggling, chiding, laughing, her warm breath fanning each of their faces by turns, she strove to disengage herself, yet still remained in their triple embrace Never was there a livelier picture of youthful rivalship, with bewitching beauty for the prize Yet, by a strange deception, owing to the duskiness of the chamber, and the antique dresses which they still wore, the tall mirror is said to have reflected the figures of the three old, grey, withered grandsires, ridiculously contending for the skinny ugliness of a shrivelled grandam

But they were young their burning passions proved them so Inflamed to madness by the coquetry of the girl-widow, who neither granted nor quite withheld her favours, the three rivals began to interchange threatening glances Still keeping hold of the fair prize, they grappled fiercely at one another's throats As they struggled to and fro, the table was overturned, and the vase dashed into a thousand fragments The precious Water of Youth flowed in a bright stream across the floor, moistening the wings of a butterfly, which, grown old in the decline of summer, had alighted there to die The insect fluttered lightly through the chamber, and settled on the snowy head of Dr Heidegger

'Come, come, gentlemen !—come Madame Wycherly ' exclaimed the doctor, 'I really must protest against this riot '

They stood still, and shivered, for it seemed as if grey Time were calling them back from their sunny youth, far down into the chill and darksome vale of years They

looked at old Dr Heidegger, who sat in his carved arm-chair, holding the rose of half a century, which he had rescued from among the fragments of the shattered vase At the motion of his hand, the four rioters resumed their seats, the more readily, because their violent exertions had wearied them, youthful though they were

'My poor Sylvia's rose!' ejaculated Dr Heidegger, holding it in the light of the sunset clouds, 'it appears to be fading again'

And so it was Even while the party were looking at it, the flower continued to shrivel up, till it became as dry and fragile as when the doctor had first thrown it into the vase He shook off the few drops of moisture which clung to its petals

'I love it as well thus, as in its dewy freshness,' observed he, pressing the withered rose to his withered lips While he spoke, the butterfly fluttered down from the doctor's snowy head, and fell upon the floor

His guests shivered again A strange chillness, whether of the body or spirit they could not tell, was creeping gradually over them all They gazed at one another, and fancied that each fleeting moment snatched away a charm, and left a deepening furrow where none had been before Was it an illusion? Had the changes of a lifetime been crowded into so brief a space, and were they now four aged people, sitting with their old friend, Dr Heidegger?

'Are we grown old again, so soon?' cried they, dolefully

In truth, they had The Water of Youth possessed merely a virtue more transient than that of wine The delirium which it created had effervesced away Yes! they were old again With a shuddering impulse, that showed her a woman still, the widow clasped her skinny hands before her face, and wished that the coffin lid were over it, since it could be no longer beautiful

'Yes, friends, ye are old again,' said Dr Heidegger, 'and lo! the Water of Youth is all lavished on the ground Well—I bemoan it not, for if the fountain gushed at my doorstep, I would not stoop to bathe my

lips in it—no, though its delirium were for years instead of moments Such is the lesson ye have taught me!'

But the doctor's four friends had taught no such lesson to themselves They resolved forthwith to make a pilgrimage to Florida, and quaff at morning, noon, and night, from the fountain of Youth

HOWE'S MASQUERADE

[From *Twice-Told Tales* 1851]

ONE afternoon last summer, while walking along Washington Street, my eye was attracted by a signboard protruding over a narrow archway, nearly opposite the Old South Church The sign represented the front of a stately edifice, which was designated as the 'OLD PROVINCE HOUSE, kept by Thomas Waite' I was glad to be thus reminded of a purpose, long entertained, of visiting and rambling over the mansion of the old royal governors of Massachusetts, and entering the arched passage, which penetrated through the middle of a brick row of shops, a few steps transported me from the busy heart of modern Boston into a small and secluded courtyard One side of this space was occupied by the square front of the Province House, three stories high, and surmounted by a cupola, on the top of which a gilded Indian was discernible, with his bow bent and his arrow on the string, as if aiming at the weathercock on the spire of the Old South The figure has kept this attitude for seventy years or more, ever since good Deacon Drowne, a cunning carver of wood, first stationed him on his long sentinel's watch over the city

The Province House is constructed of brick, which seems recently to have been overlaid with a coat of light-coloured paint A flight of red freestone steps, fenced in by a balustrade of curiously wrought iron, ascends from the courtyard to the spacious porch, over which is a balcony, with an iron balustrade of similar pattern and workmanship to that beneath These letters and figures—16 P S 79—are wrought into the ironwork of the balcony, and probably express the date of the edifice

with the initials of its founder's name A wide door with double leaves admitted me into the hall or entry, on the right of which is the entrance to the bar-room

It was in this apartment, I presume, that the ancient governors held their levees, with vice-regal pomp, surrounded by the military men, the councillors, the judges, and other officers of the crown, while all the loyalty of the province thronged to do them honour But the room, in its present condition, cannot boast even of faded magnificence The panelled wainscot is covered with dingy paint, and acquires a duskier hue from the deep shadow into which the Province House is thrown by the brick block that shuts it in from Washington Street A ray of sunshine never visits this apartment any more than the glare of the festal torches, which have been extinguished from the era of the revolution The most venerable and ornamental object is a chimney-piece set round with Dutch tiles of blue-figured China, representing scenes from Scripture, and, for aught I know, the lady of Pownall or Bernard may have sat beside this fireplace, and told her children the story of each blue tile A bar in modern style, well replenished with decanters, bottles, cigar boxes, and network bags of lemons, and provided with a beer-pump and a soda fount, extends along one side of the room At my entrance, an elderly person was smacking his lips, with a zest which satisfied me that the cellars of the Province House still hold good liquor, though doubtless of other vintages than were quaffed by the old governors After sipping a glass of port sangaree, prepared by the skilful hands of Mr Thomas Waite, I besought that worthy successor and representative of so many historic personages to conduct me over their time-honoured mansion

He readily complied, but, to confess the truth, I was forced to draw strenuously upon my imagination, in order to find aught that was interesting in a house which, without its historic associations, would have seemed merely such a tavern as is usually favoured by the custom of decent city boarders and old-fashioned country gentlemen The chambers, which were pro-

bably spacious in former times, are now cut up by partitions, and subdivided into little nooks, each affording scanty room for the narrow bed, and chair, and dressing-table, of a single lodger The great staircase, however, may be termed, without much hyperbole, a feature of grandeur and magnificence It winds through the midst of the house by flights of broad steps, each flight terminating in a square landing-place, whence the ascent is continued towards the cupola A carved balustrade, freshly painted in the lower stories, but growing dingier as we ascend, borders the staircase with its quaintly twisted and intertwined pillars, from top to bottom Up these stairs the military boots, or perchance the gouty shoes, of many a governor have trodden, as the wearers mounted to the cupola, which afforded them so wide a view over their metropolis and the surrounding country The cupola is an octagon, with several windows, and a door opening upon the roof From this station, as I pleased myself with imagining, Gage may have beheld his disastrous victory on Bunker Hill (unless one of the tri-mountains intervened), and Howe have marked the approaches of Washington's besieging army, although the buildings, since erected in the vicinity, have shut out almost every object, save the steeple of the Old South, which seems almost within arm's length Descending from the cupola, I paused in the garret to observe the ponderous white-oak framework, so much more massive than the frames of modern houses, and thereby resembling an antique skeleton The brick walls, the materials of which were imported from Holland, and the timbers of the mansion, are still as sound as ever, but the floors and other interior parts being greatly decayed, it is contemplated to gut the whole, and build a new house within the ancient frame and brickwork Among other inconveniences of the present edifice, mine host mentioned that any jar or motion was apt to shake down the dust of ages out of the ceiling of one chamber upon the floor of that beneath it

We stepped forth from the great front window into the balcony, where, in old times, it was doubtless the custom

of the king's representative to show himself to a loyal populace, requiting their huzzas and tossed-up hats with stately bendings of his dignified person. In those days, the front of the Province House looked upon the street, and the whole site now occupied by the brick range of stores, as well as the present courtyard, was laid out in grass plats, overshadowed by trees and bordered by a wrought-iron fence. Now, the old aristocratic edifice hides its time-worn visage behind an upstart modern building, at one of the back windows I observed some pretty tailoresses, sewing, and chatting, and laughing, with now and then a careless glance towards the balcony. Descending thence, we again entered the bar-room, where the elderly gentleman above mentioned, the smack of whose lips had spoken so favourably for Mr Waite's good liquor, was still lounging in his chair. He seemed to be, if not a lodger, at least a familiar visitor of the house, who might be supposed to have his regular score at the bar, his summer seat at the open window, and his prescriptive corner at the winter's fireside. Being of a sociable aspect, I ventured to address him with a remark, calculated to draw forth his historical reminiscences, if any such were in his mind, and it gratified me to discover, that, between memory and tradition, the old gentleman was really possessed of some very pleasant gossip about the Province House. The portion of his talk which chiefly interested me was the outline of the following legend. He professed to have received it at one or two removes from an eye-witness, but this derivation, together with the lapse of time, must have afforded opportunities for many variations of the narrative, so that, despairing of literal and absolute truth, I have not scrupled to make such further changes as seemed conducive to the reader's profit and delight.

At one of the entertainments given at the Province House, during the latter part of the siege of Boston, there passed a scene which has never yet been satisfactorily explained. The officers of the British army,

and the loyal gentry of the province, most of whom were collected within the beleaguered town, had been invited to a masked ball, for it was the policy of Sir William Howe to hide the distress and danger of the period, and the desperate aspect of the siege, under an ostentation of festivity The spectacle of this evening, if the oldest members of the provincial court circle might be believed, was the most gay and gorgeous affair that had occurred in the annals of the government The brilliantly-lighted apartments were thronged with figures that seemed to have stepped from the dark canvas of historic portraits, or to have flitted forth from the magic pages of romance, or at least to have flown hither from one of the London theatres, without a change of garments Steeled knights of the Conquest, bearded statesmen of Queen Elizabeth, and high-ruffled ladies of her court, were mingled with characters of comedy, such as a parti-coloured Merry Andrew, jingling his cap and bells, a Falstaff, almost as provocative of laughter as his prototype, and a Don Quixote, with a bean pole for a lance, and a pot lid for a shield

But the broadest merriment was excited by a group of figures ridiculously dressed in old regimentals, which seemed to have been purchased at a military rag fair, or pilfered from some receptacle of the cast-off clothes of both the French and British armies Portions of their attire had probably been worn at the siege of Louisburg, and the coats of most recent cut might have been rent and tattered by sword, ball, or bayonet, as long ago as Wolfe's victory One of these worthies—a tall, lank figure, brandishing a rusty sword of immense longitude—purported to be no less a personage than General George Washington, and the other principal officers of the American army, such as Gates, Lee, Putnam, Schuyler, Ward, and Heath, were represented by similar scarecrows An interview in the mock heroic style, between the rebel warriors and the British commander-in-chief, was received with immense applause, which came loudest of all from the loyalists of the colony There was one of the guests, however, who stood apart, eyeing these

antics sternly and scornfully, at once with a frown and a bitter smile

It was an old man, formerly of high station and great repute in the province, and who had been a very famous soldier in his day Some surprise had been expressed, that a person of Colonel Joliffe's known Whig principles, though now too old to take an active part in the contest, should have remained in Boston during the siege, and especially that he should consent to show himself in the mansion of Sir William Howe But thither he had come, with a fair granddaughter under his arm, and there, amid all the mirth and buffoonery, stood this stern old figure, the best sustained character in the masquerade, because so well representing the antique spirit of his native land The other guests affirmed that Colonel Joliffe's black puritanical scowl threw a shadow round about him, although, in spite of his sombre influence, their gaiety continued to blaze higher, like—(an ominous comparison)—the flickering brilliancy of a lamp which has but a little while to burn Eleven strokes, full half an hour ago, had pealed from the clock of the Old South, when a rumour was circulated among the company that some new spectacle or pageant was about to be exhibited, which should put a fitting close to the splendid festivities of the night

'What new jest has your Excellency in hand?' asked the Rev Mather Byles, whose Presbyterian scruples had not kept him from the entertainment 'Trust me, sir, I have already laughed more than beseems my cloth, at your Homeric confabulation with yonder ragamuffin General of the rebels One other such fit of merriment, and I must throw off my clerical wig and band '

'Not so, good Doctor Byles,' answered Sir William Howe, 'if mirth were a crime, you had never gained your doctorate in divinity As to this new foolery, I know no more about it than yourself, perhaps not so much Honestly now, Doctor, have you not stirred up the sober brains of some of your countrymen to enact a scene in our masquerade?'

'Perhaps,' slyly remarked the granddaughter of

Colonel Joliffe, whose high spirit had been stung by many taunts against New England—'perhaps we are to have a mask of allegorical figures Victory, with trophies from Lexington and Bunker Hill—Plenty, with her overflowing horn, to typify the present abundance in this good town—and Glory, with a wreath for his Excellency's brow'

Sir William Howe smiled at words which he would have answered with one of his darkest frowns, had they been uttered by lips that wore a beard He was spared the necessity of a retort by a singular interruption A sound of music was heard without the house, as if proceeding from a full band of military instruments stationed in the street, playing not such a festal strain as was suited to the occasion, but a slow funeral march The drums appeared to be muffled, and the trumpets poured forth a wailing breath, which at once hushed the merriment of the auditors, filling all with wonder, and some with apprehension The idea occurred to many, that either the funeral procession of some great personage had halted in front of the Province House, or that a corpse, in a velvet-covered and gorgeously-decorated coffin, was about to be borne from the portal After listening a moment, Sir William Howe called, in a stern voice, to the leader of the musicians, who had hitherto enlivened the entertainment with gay and lightsome melodies The man was drum major to one of the British regiments

'Dighton,' demanded the general, 'what means this foolery? Bid your band silence that dead march—or, by my word, they shall have sufficient cause for their lugubrious strains! Silence it, sirrah!'

Please your honour,' answered the drum major, whose rubicund visage had lost all its colour, 'the fault is none of mine I and my band are all here together, and I question whether there be a man of us that could play that march without book I never heard it but once before, and that was at the funeral of his late Majesty, King George the Second'

'Well, well!' said Sir William Howe, recovering his

composure—'it is the prelude to some masquerading antic. Let it pass.'

A figure now presented itself, but among the many fantastic masks that were dispersed through the apartments, none could tell precisely from whence it came. It was a man in an old-fashioned dress of black serge, and having the aspect of a steward, or principal domestic in the household of a nobleman or great English landholder. This figure advanced to the outer door of the mansion, and throwing both its leaves wide open, withdrew a little to one side and looked back towards the grand staircase, as if expecting some person to descend. At the same time, the music in the street sounded a loud and doleful summons. The eyes of Sir William Howe and his guests being directed to the staircase, there appeared, on the uppermost landing-place that was discernible from the bottom, several personages descending towards the door. The foremost was a man of stern visage, wearing a steeple-crowned hat and a skullcap beneath it, a dark cloak, and huge wrinkled boots that came half-way up his legs. Under his arm was a rolled-up banner, which seemed to be the banner of England, but strangely rent and torn; he had a sword in his right hand, and grasped a Bible in his left. The next figure was of milder aspect, yet full of dignity, wearing a broad ruff, over which descended a beard, a gown of wrought velvet, and a doublet and hose of black satin. He carried a roll of manuscript in his hand. Close behind these two, came a young man of very striking countenance and demeanour, with deep thought and contemplation on his brow, and perhaps a flash of enthusiasm in his eye. His garb, like that of his predecessors, was of an antique fashion, and there was a stain of blood upon his ruff. In the same group with these, were three or four others, all men of dignity and evident command, and bearing themselves like personages who were accustomed to the gaze of the multitude. It was the idea of the beholders, that these figures went to join the mysterious funeral that had halted in front of the Province House; yet that supposition seemed to

and was heard to mutter an oath. He was followed by a noble-looking personage in a curled wig, such as are represented in the portraits of Queen Anne's time and earlier, and the breast of his coat was decorated with an embroidered star. While advancing to the door, he bowed to the right hand and to the left, in a very gracious and insinuating style, but as he crossed the threshold, unlike the early Puritan governors, he seemed to wring his hands with sorrow.

'Prithee, play the part of a chorus, good Doctor Byles,' said Sir William Howe. 'What worthies are these?'

'If it please your Excellency, they lived somewhat before my day,' answered the doctor, 'but doubtless our friend, the Colonel, has been hand and glove with them.'

'Their living faces I never looked upon,' said Colonel Joliffe, gravely, 'although I have spoken face to face with many rulers of this land, and shall greet yet another with an old man's blessing, ere I die. But we talk of these figures. I take the venerable patriarch to be Bradstreet, the last of the Puritans, who was governor at ninety or thereabouts. The next is Sir Edmund Andros, a tyrant, as any New England schoolboy will tell you, and therefore the people cast him down from his high seat into a dungeon. Then comes Sir William Phipps, shepherd, cooper, sea captain, and governor—may many of his countrymen rise as high, from as low an origin! Lastly, you saw the gracious Earl of Bellamont, who ruled us under King William.'

'But what is the meaning of it all?' asked Lord Percy.

'Now, were I a rebel,' said Miss Joliffe, half aloud, 'I might fancy that the ghosts of these ancient governors had been summoned to form the funeral procession of royal authority in New England.'

Several other figures were now seen at the turn of the staircase. The one in advance had a thoughtful, anxious, and somewhat crafty expression of face, and in spite of his loftiness of manner, which was evidently the result both of an ambitious spirit and of long continuance in high stations, he seemed not incapable of cringing to a greater than himself. A few steps behind came an officer

in a scarlet and embroidered uniform, cut in a fashion old enough to have been worn by the Duke of Marlborough His nose had a rubicund tinge, which, together with the twinkle of his eye, might have marked him as a lover of the wine cup and good fellowship, notwithstanding which tokens, he appeared ill at ease, and often glanced around him, as if apprehensive of some secret mischief Next came a portly gentleman, wearing a coat of shaggy cloth, lined with silken velvet, he had sense, shrewdness, and humour in his face, and a folio volume under his arm, but his aspect was that of a man vexed and tormented beyond all patience, and harassed almost to death He went hastily down, and was followed by a dignified person, dressed in a purple velvet suit, with very rich embroidery, his demeanour would have possessed much stateliness, only that a grievous fit of the gout compelled him to hobble from stair to stair, with contortions of face and body When Doctor Byles beheld this figure on the staircase, he shivered as with an ague, but continued to watch him steadfastly, until the gouty gentleman had reached the threshold, made a gesture of anguish and despair, and vanished into the outer gloom, whither the funeral music summoned him

'Governor Belcher!—my old patron!—in his very shape and dress!' gasped Doctor Byles 'This is an awful mockery!'

'A tedious foolery, rather,' said Sir William Howe, with an air of indifference 'But who were the three that preceded him?'

'Governor Dudley, a cunning politician—yet his craft once brought him to a prison,' replied Colonel Joliffe 'Governor Shute, formerly a colonel under Marlborough, and whom the people frightened out of the province, and learned Governor Burnet, whom the legislature tormented into a mortal fever'

'Methinks they were miserable men, these royal governors of Massachusetts,' observed Miss Joliffe 'Heavens, how dim the light grows!'

It was certainly a fact that the large lamp which illuminated the staircase now burned dim and duskily

so that several figures, which passed hastily down the stairs and went forth from the porch, appeared rather like shadows than persons of fleshly substance Sir William Howe and his guests stood at the doors of the contiguous apartments, watching the progress of this singular pageant, with various emotions of anger, contempt, or half-acknowledged fear, but still with an anxious curiosity The shapes, which now seemed hastening to join the mysterious procession, were recognized rather by striking peculiarities of dress, or broad characteristics of manner, than by any perceptible resemblance of features to their prototypes Their faces, indeed, were invariably kept in deep shadow But Dr Byles, and other gentlemen who had long been familiar with the successive rulers of the province, were heard to whisper the names of Shirley, of Pownal, of Sir Francis Bernard, and of the well-remembered Hutchinson, thereby confessing that the actors, whoever they might be, in this spectral march of governors, had succeeded in putting on some distant portraiture of the real personages As they vanished from the door, still did these shadows toss their arms into the gloom of night, with a dread expression of woe Following the mimic representative of Hutchinson, came a military figure, holding before his face the cocked hat which he had taken from his powdered head, but his epaulettes and other insignia of rank were those of a general officer, and something in his mien reminded the beholders of one who had recently been master of the Province House, and chief of all the land

'The shape of Gage, as true as in a looking-glass,' exclaimed Lord Percy, turning pale

'No, surely,' cried Miss Joliffe, laughing hysterically, 'it could not be Gage, or Sir William would have greeted his old comrade in arms! Perhaps he will not suffer the next to pass unchallenged '

'Of that be assured, young lady,' answered Sir William Howe, fixing his eyes, with a very marked expression, upon the immovable visage of her grandfather 'I have long enough delayed to pay the ceremonies of a host to

these departing guests The next that takes his leave shall receive due courtesy'

A wild and dreary burst of music came through the open door It seemed as if the procession, which had been gradually filling up its ranks, were now about to move, and that this loud peal of the wailing trumpets, and roll of the muffled drums, were a call to some loiterer to make haste Many eyes, by an irresistible impulse, were turned upon Sir William Howe, as if it were he whom the dreary music summoned to the funeral of departed power

'See!—here comes the last!' whispered Miss Joliffe, pointing her tremulous finger to the staircase

A figure had come into view as if descending the stairs, although so dusky was the region whence it emerged, some of the spectators fancied that they had seen this human shape suddenly moulding itself amid the gloom Downward the figure came, with a stately and martial tread, and reaching the lowest stair was observed to be a tall man, booted and wrapped in a military cloak, which was drawn up around the face so as to meet the flapped brim of a laced hat The features, therefore, were completely hidden But the British officers deemed that they had seen that military cloak before, and even recognized the frayed embroidery on the collar, as well as the gilded scabbard of a sword which protruded from the folds of the cloak, and glittered in a vivid gleam of light Apart from these trifling particulars, there were characteristics of gait and bearing, which impelled the wondering guests to glance from the shrouded figure to Sir William Howe, as if to satisfy themselves that their host had not suddenly vanished from the midst of them

With a dark flush of wrath upon his brow, they saw the General draw his sword and advance to meet the figure in the cloak before the latter had stepped one pace upon the floor

'Villain, unmuffle yourself!' cried he 'You pass no farther!'

The figure, without blenching a hair's breadth from

the sword which was pointed at his breast, made a solemn pause and lowered the cape of the cloak from about his face, yet not sufficiently for the spectators to catch a glimpse of it But Sir William Howe had evidently seen enough The sternness of his countenance gave place to a look of wild amazement, if not horror, while he recoiled several steps from the figure, and let fall his sword upon the floor The martial shape again drew the cloak about his features and passed on, but reaching the threshold, with his back towards the spectators, he was seen to stamp his foot and shake his clenched hands in the air It was afterwards affirmed that Sir William Howe had repeated that selfsame gesture of rage and sorrow, when, for the last time, and as the last royal governor, he passed through the portal of the Province House

'Hark!—the procession moves,' said Miss Joliffe

The music was dying away along the street, and its dismal strains were mingled with the knell of midnight from the steeple of the Old South, and with the roar of artillery, which announced that the beleaguering army of Washington had intrenched itself upon a nearer height than before As the deep boom of the cannon smote upon his ear, Colonel Joliffe raised himself to the full height of his aged form, and smiled sternly on the British General

'Would your Excellency inquire further into the mystery of the pageant?' said he

'Take care of your grey head!' cried Sir William Howe, fiercely, though with a quivering lip 'It has stood too long on a traitor's shoulders!'

'You must make haste to chop it off, then,' calmly replied the Colonel, 'for a few hours longer, and not all the power of Sir William Howe, nor of his master, shall cause one of these grey hairs to fall The empire of Britain, in this ancient province, is at its last gasp to-night,—almost while I speak it is a dead corpse,—and methinks the shadows of the old governors are fit mourners at its funeral!'

With these words Colonel Joliffe threw on his cloak,

and drawing his granddaughter's arm within his own, retired from the last festival that a British ruler ever held in the old province of Massachusetts Bay It was supposed that the Colonel and the young lady possessed some secret intelligence in regard to the mysterious pageant of that night However this might be, such knowledge has never become general The actors in the scene have vanished into deeper obscurity than even that wild Indian band who scattered the cargoes of the tea ships on the waves, and gained a place in history, yet left no names But superstition, among other legends of this mansion, repeats the wondrous tale, that on the anniversary night of Britain's discomfiture, the ghosts of the ancient governors of Massachusetts still glide through the portal of the Province House And, last of all, comes a figure shrouded in a military cloak, tossing his clenched hands into the air, and stamping his iron-shod boots upon the broad freestone steps, with a semblance of feverish despair, but without the sound of a foot-tramp

---

When the truth-telling accents of the elderly gentleman were hushed, I drew a long breath and looked round the room, striving, with the best energy of my imagination, to throw a tinge of romance and historic grandeur over the realities of the scene But my nostrils snuffed up a scent of cigar smoke, clouds of which the narrator had emitted by way of visible emblem, I suppose, of the nebulous obscurity of his tale Moreover, my gorgeous fantasies were wofully disturbed by the rattling of the spoon in a tumbler of whisky punch, which Mr Thomas Waite was mingling for a customer Nor did it add to the picturesque appearance of the panelled walls, that the slate of the Brookline stage was suspended against them, instead of the armorial escutcheon of some far-descended governor A stage driver sat at one of the windows, reading a penny paper of the day—the *Boston Times*—and presenting a figure which could nowise be brought into any picture of 'Times in Boston' seventy or

a hundred years ago On the window seat lay a bundle, neatly done up in brown paper, the direction of which I had the idle curiosity to read 'Miss Susan Huggins, at the Province House' A pretty chambermaid, no doubt In truth, it is desperately hard work, when we attempt to throw the spell of hoar antiquity over localities with which the living world, and the day that is passing over us, have aught to do Yet, as I glanced at the stately staircase, down which the procession of the old governors had descended, and as I emerged through the venerable portal, whence their figures had preceded me, it gladdened me to be conscious of a thrill of awe Then diving through the narrow archway, a few strides transported me into the densest throng of Washington Street

('Legends of the Province House', I)

BENJAMIN DISRAELI, EARL OF BEACONSFIELD

1804–1881

IXION IN HEAVEN

[1833]

Part I

I

The thunder groaned, the wind howled, the rain fell in hissing torrents, impenetrable darkness covered the earth

A blue and forky flash darted a momentary light over the landscape A Doric temple rose in the centre of a small and verdant plain, surrounded on all sides by green and hanging woods

'Jove is my only friend,' exclaimed a wanderer, as he muffled himself up in his mantle, 'and were it not for the porch of his temple, this night, methinks, would complete the work of my loving wife and my dutiful subjects'

The thunder died away, the wind sank into silence, the rain ceased, and the parting clouds exhibited the glittering crescent of the young moon A sonorous and majestic voice sounded from the skies —

'Who art thou that hast no other friend but Jove?'

'One whom all mankind unite in calling a wretch'

'Art thou a philosopher?'

'If philosophy be endurance But for the rest, I was sometime a king, and am now a scatterling'

'How do they call thee?'

'Ixion of Thessaly'

'Ixion of Thessaly! I thought he was a happy man I heard that he was just married'

'Father of Gods and men! for I deem thee such, Thessaly is not Olympus Conjugal felicity is only the portion of the Immortals!'

'Hem! What! was Dia jealous, which is common, or false, which is commoner, or both, which is commonest?'

'It may be neither We quarrelled about nothing Where there is little sympathy, or too much, the splitting of a straw is plot enough for a domestic tragedy I was careless, her friends stigmatized me as callous, she cold, her friends styled her magnanimous Public opinion was all on her side, merely because I did not choose that the world should interfere between me and my wife Dia took the world's advice upon every point, and the world decided that she always acted rightly However, life is life, either in a palace or a cave I am glad you ordered it to leave off thundering'

'A cool dog this —And Dia left thee?'

'No, I left her'

'What, craven!'

'Not exactly The truth is——'tis a long story I was over head and ears in debt'

'Ah! that accounts for everything Nothing is so harassing as a want of money! But what lucky fellows you Mortals are with your *post-obits*! We Immortals are deprived of this resource I was obliged to get up a rebellion against my father, because he kept me so short, and could not die'

'You could have married for money I did'

'I had no opportunity, there was so little female society in those days When I came out, there were no heiresses except the Parcae, confirmed old maids, and no very rich dowager, except my grandmother, old Terra'

'Just the thing, the older the better However, I married Dia, the daughter of Deioneus, with a prodigious portion, but after the ceremony, the old gentleman would not fulfil his part of the contract without my giving up my stud Can you conceive anything more unreasonable? I smothered my resentment at the time, for the truth is, my tradesmen all renewed my credit on the strength of the match, and so we went on very well for a year, but at last they began to smell a rat, and grew importunate I entreated Dia to interfere, but she was a

paragon of daughters, and always took the side of her father If she had only been dutiful to her husband, she would have been a perfect woman At last I invited Deioneus to the Larissa races, with the intention of conciliating him The unprincipled old man bought the horse that I had backed and by which I intended to have redeemed my fortunes, and withdrew it My book was ruined. I dissembled my rage I dug a pit in our garden, and filled it with burning coals As my father-in-law and myself were taking a stroll after dinner, the worthy Deioneus fell in, merely by accident Dia proclaimed me as the murderer of her father, and, as a satisfaction to her wounded feelings, earnestly requested her subjects to decapitate her husband She certainly was the best of daughters There was no withstanding public opinion, an infuriated rabble, and a magnanimous wife at the same time They surrounded my palace I cut my way through the greasy-capped multitude, sword in hand, and gained a neighbouring Court, where I solicited my brother princes to purify me from the supposed murder If I had only murdered a subject, they would have supported me against the people, but Deioneus being a crowned head, like themselves, they declared they would not countenance so immoral a being as his son-in-law And so, at length, after much wandering, and shunned by all my species, I am here, Jove, in much higher society than I ever expected to mingle'

'Well, thou art a frank dog, and in a sufficiently severe scrape The Gods must have pity on those for whom men have none It is evident that Earth is too hot for thee at present, so I think thou hadst better come and stay a few weeks with us in Heaven'

'Take my thanks for hecatombs, great Jove Thou art, indeed, a God!'

'I hardly know whether our life will suit you We dine at sunset, for Apollo is so much engaged that he cannot join us sooner, and no dinner goes off well without him In the morning you are your own master, and must find amusement where you can Diana will show you some tolerable sport Do you shoot?'

'No arrow surer Fear not for me, Aegiochus I am always at home But how am I to get to you?'

'I will send Mercury, he is the best travelling companion in the world What ho! my Eagle!'

The clouds joined, and darkness again fell over the earth

II

'So! tread softly Don't be nervous Are you sick?'

'A little nausea, 'tis nothing'

'The novelty of the motion The best thing is a beef steak We will stop at Taurus and take one'

'You have been a great traveller, Mercury?'

'I have seen the world'

'Ah! a wondrous spectacle I long to travel'

'The same thing over and over again Little novelty and much change I am wearied with exertion, and if I could get a pension would retire'

'And yet travel brings wisdom'

'It cures us of care Seeing much we feel little, and learn how very petty are all those great affairs which cost us such anxiety'

'I feel that already myself Floating in this blue ether, what the devil is my wife to me, and her dirty earth! My persecuting enemies seem so many pismires, and as for my debts, which have occasioned me so many brooding moments, honour and infamy, credit and beggary, seem to me alike ridiculous'

'Your mind is opening, Ixion You will soon be a man of the world To the left, and keep clear of that star'

'Who lives there?'

'The Fates know, not I Some low people who are trying to shine into notice 'Tis a parvenu planet, and only sprung into space within this century We don't visit them'

'Poor devils! I feel hungry'

'All right We shall get into Heaven by the first dinner bolt You cannot arrive at a strange house at a better moment We shall just have time to dress I

would not spoil my appetite by luncheon Jupiter keeps a capital cook '

'I have heard of Nectar and Ambrosia '

'Poh! nobody touches them They are regular old-fashioned celestial food, and merely put upon the side-table Nothing goes down in Heaven now but infernal cookery We took our *chef* from Proserpine '

'Were you ever in Hell?'

'Several times 'Tis the fashion now among the Olympians to pass the winter there '

'Is this the season in Heaven?'

'Yes, you are lucky Olympus is quite full '

'It was very kind of Jupiter to invite me '

'Aye! he has his good points And, no doubt, he has taken a liking to you, which is all very well But be upon your guard He has no heart, and is as capricious as he is tyrannical '

'Gods cannot be more unkind to me than men have been '

'All those who have suffered think they have seen the worst A great mistake However, you are now in the high road to preferment, so we will not be dull There are some good fellows enough amongst us You will like old Neptune '

'Is he there now?'

'Yes, he generally passes his summer with us There is little stirring in the ocean at that season '

'I am anxious to see Mars '

'Oh! a brute, more a bully than a hero Not at all in the best set These mustachioed gentry are by no means the rage at present in Olympus The women are all literary now, and Minerva has quite eclipsed Venus Apollo is our hero You must read his last work '

'I hate reading '

'So do I I have no time, and seldom do anything in that way but glance at a newspaper Study and action will not combine '

'I suppose I shall find the Goddesses very proud?'

'You will find them as you find women below, of different dispositions with the same object Venus is a

flirt, Minerva a prude, who fancies she has a correct taste and a strong mind, and Juno a politician As for the rest, faint heart never won fair lady, take a friendly hint, and don't be alarmed '

'I fear nothing My mind mounts with my fortunes We are above the clouds They form beneath us a vast and snowy region, dim and irregular, as I have some times seen them clustering upon the horizon's ridge at sunset, like a raging sea stilled by some sudden super natural frost and frozen into form! How bright the air above us, and how delicate its fragrant breath! I scarcely breathe, and yet my pulses beat like my first youth I hardly feel my being A splendour falls upon your presence You seem indeed a God! Am I so glorious? This, this is Heaven!'

III

The travellers landed on a vast flight of sparkling steps of lapis-lazuli Ascending, they entered beautiful gardens, winding walks that yielded to the feet, and accelerated your passage by their rebounding pressure, fragrant shrubs covered with dazzling flowers, the fleeting tints of which changed every moment, groups of tall trees, with strange birds of brilliant and variegated plumage, singing and reposing in their sheeny foliage, and fountains of perfumes

Before them rose an illimitable and golden palace, with high spreading domes of pearl, and long windows of crystal Around the huge portal of ruby was ranged a company of winged genii, who smiled on Mercury as he passed them with his charge

'The father of Gods and men is dressing,' said the son of Maia 'I shall attend his toilet and inform him of your arrival These are your rooms Dinner will be ready in half an hour I will call for you as I go down You can be formally presented in the evening At that time, inspired by liqueurs and his matchless band of wind instruments, you will agree with the world that Aegiochus is the most finished God in existence '

IV

'Now, Ixion, are you ready?'

'Even so What says Jove?'

'He smiled, but said nothing He was trying on a new robe By this time he is seated Hark! the thunder Come on!'

They entered a cupolaed hall Seats of ivory and gold were ranged round a circular table of cedar, inlaid with the campaigns against the Titans, in silver exquisitely worked, a nuptial present of Vulcan The service of gold plate threw all the ideas of the King of Thessaly as to royal magnificence into the darkest shade The enormous plateau represented the constellations Ixion viewed the father of Gods and men with great interest, who, however, did not notice him He acknowledged the majesty of that countenance whose nod shook Olympus Majestically robust and luxuriantly lusty, his tapering waist was evidently immortal, for it defied Time, and his splendid auburn curls, parted on his forehead with celestial precision, descended over cheeks glowing with the purple radiancy of perpetual manhood

The haughty Juno was seated on his left hand and Ceres on his right For the rest of the company there was Neptune, Latona, Minerva, and Apollo, and when Mercury and Ixion had taken their places, one seat was still vacant

'Where is Diana?' inquired Jupiter, with a frown

'My sister is hunting,' said Apollo

'She is always too late for dinner,' said Jupiter 'No habit is less Goddess-like'

'Godlike pursuits cannot be expected to induce Goddess-like manners,' said Juno, with a sneer

'I have no doubt Diana will be here directly,' said Latona, mildly

Jupiter seemed pacified, and at that instant the absent guest returned

'Good sport, Di?' inquired Neptune

'Very fair, uncle Mamma,' continued the sister of Apollo, addressing herself to Juno, whom she ever thus

styled when she wished to conciliate her, 'I have brought you a new peacock '

Juno was fond of pets, and was conciliated by the present

'Bacchus made a great noise about this wine, Mercury,' said Jupiter, 'but I think with little cause What think you?'

'It pleases me, but I am fatigued, and then all wine is agreeable '

'You have had a long journey,' replied the Thunderer 'Ixion, I am glad to see you in Heaven '

'Your Majesty arrived to-day?' inquired Minerva, to whom the King of Thessaly sat next

'Within this hour '

'You must leave off talking of Time now,' said Minerva, with a severe smile 'Pray is there anything new in Greece?'

'I have not been at all in society lately '

'No new edition of Homer? I admire him exceedingly '

'All about Greece interests me,' said Apollo, who, although handsome, was a somewhat melancholy lack-a-daisical looking personage, with his shirt collar thrown open, and his long curls very theatrically arranged 'All about Greece interests me I always consider Greece my peculiar property My best poems were written at Delphi I travelled in Greece when I was very young I envy mankind '

'Indeed!' said Ixion

'Yes they at least can look forward to a termination of the ennui of existence, but for us Celestials there is no prospect Say what they like, Immortality is a bore '

'You eat nothing, Apollo,' said Ceres

'Nor drink,' said Neptune

'To eat, to drink, what is it but to live, and what is life but death, if death be that which all men deem it, a thing insufferable, and to be shunned I refresh myself now only with soda-water and biscuits Ganymede, give me some '

Now, although the *cuisine* of Olympus was considered perfect, the forlorn poet had unfortunately fixed upon

the only two articles which were not comprised in its cellar or larder In Heaven there was neither soda-water nor biscuits A great confusion consequently ensued, but at length the bard, whose love of fame was only equalled by his horror of getting fat, consoled himself with a swan stuffed with truffles, and a bottle of strong Tenedos wine

'What do you think of Homer?' inquired Minerva of Apollo 'Is he not delightful?'

'If you think so'

'Nay, I am desirous of your opinion'

'Then you should not have given me yours, for your taste is too fine for me to dare to differ with it'

'I have suspected, for some time, that you are rather a heretic'

'Why, the truth is,' replied Apollo, playing with his rings, 'I do not think much of Homer Homer was not esteemed in his own age, and our contemporaries are generally our best judges The fact is, there are very few people who are qualified to decide upon matters of taste A certain set, for certain reasons, resolve to cry up a certain writer, and the great mass soon join in All is cant And the present admiration of Homer not less so They say I have borrowed a great deal from him The truth is, I never read Homer since I was a child, and I thought of him then what I think of him now, a writer of some wild irregular power, totally deficient in taste Depend upon it, our contemporaries are our best judges, and his contemporaries decided that Homer was nothing A great poet cannot be kept down Look at my case Marsyas said of my first volume that it was pretty good poetry for a God, and in answer I wrote a satire, and flayed Marsyas alive But what is poetry, and what is criticism, and what is life? Air And what is Air? Do you know? I don't All is mystery, and all is gloom, and ever and anon from out the clouds a star breaks forth, and glitters, and that star is Poetry'

'Splendid!' exclaimed Minerva

'I do not exactly understand you,' said Neptune

'Have you heard from Proserpine, lately?' inquired Jupiter of Ceres

'Yesterday,' said the domestic mother 'They talk of soon joining us But Pluto is at present so busy, owing to the amazing quantity of wars going on now, that I am almost afraid he will scarcely be able to accompany her'

Juno exchanged a telegraphic nod with Ceres The Goddesses rose, and retired

'Come, old boy,' said Jupiter to Ixion, instantly throwing off all his chivalric majesty, 'I drink your welcome in a magnum of Maraschino Damn your poetry, Apollo, and, Mercury, give us one of your good stories'

V

'Well! what do you think of him?' asked Juno

'He appears to have a very fine mind,' said Minerva

'Poh! he has very fine eyes,' said Juno

'He seems a very nice, quiet young gentleman,' said Ceres

'I have no doubt he is very amiable,' said Latona

'He must have felt very strange,' said Diana

VI

Hercules arrived with his bride Hebe, soon after the Graces dropped in, the most delightful personages in the world for a *soirée*, so useful and ready for anything Afterwards came a few of the Muses, Thalia, Melpomene, and Terpsichore, famous for a charade or a proverb Jupiter liked to be amused in the evening Bacchus also came, but finding that the Gods had not yet left their wine, retired to pay them a previous visit

VII

Ganymede announced coffee in the saloon of Juno Jupiter was in superb good humour He was amused by his mortal guest He had condescended to tell one of his best stories in his best style, about Leda, not too scandalous, but gay

'Those were bright days,' said Neptune

'We can remember,' said the Thunderer, with a

twinkling eye 'These youths have fallen upon duller times There are no fine women now Ixion, I drink to the health of your wife'

'With all my heart, and may we never be nearer than we are at present'

'Good! i'faith, Apollo, your arm Now for the ladies La, la, la, la! la, la, la, la!'

VIII

The Thunderer entered the saloon of Juno with that bow which no God could rival, all rose, and the King of Heaven seated himself between Ceres and Latona The melancholy Apollo stood apart, and was soon carried off by Minerva to an assembly at the house of Mnemosyne Mercury chatted with the Graces, and Bacchus with Diana The three Muses favoured the company with singing, and the Queen of Heaven approached Ixion

'Does your Majesty dance?' she haughtily inquired

'On earth, I have few accomplishments even there, and none in Heaven'

'You have led a strange life! I have heard of your adventures'

'A king who has lost his crown may generally gain at least experience'

'Your courage is firm'

'I have felt too much to care for much Yesterday I was a vagabond exposed to every pitiless storm, and now I am the guest of Jove While there is life there is hope, and he who laughs at Destiny will gain Fortune I would go through the past again to enjoy the present, and feel that, after all, I am my wife's debtor, since, through her conduct, I can gaze upon you'

'No great spectacle If that be all, I wish you better fortune'

'I desire no greater'

'You are moderate'

'I am perhaps more unreasonable than you imagine'

'Indeed!'

Their eyes met, the dark orbs of the Thessalian did

not quail before the flashing vision of the Goddess Juno grew pale Juno turned away

Part II

'Others say it was only a cloud'

I

Mercury and Ganymede were each lolling on an opposite couch in the antechamber of Olympus

'It is wonderful,' said the son of Maia, yawning

'It is incredible,' rejoined the cup-bearer of Jove, stretching his legs

'A miserable mortal!' exclaimed the God, elevating his eyebrows

'A vile Thessalian!' said the beautiful Phrygian, shrugging his shoulders

'Not three days back an outcast among his own wretched species!'

'And now commanding everybody in Heaven'

'He shall not command me, though,' said Mercury

'Will he not?' replied Ganymede 'Why, what do you think? only last night—hark! here he comes'

The companions jumped up from their couches, a light laugh was heard The cedar portal was flung open, and Ixion lounged in, habited in a loose morning robe, and kicking before him one of his slippers

'Ah!' exclaimed the King of Thessaly, 'the very fellows I wanted to see! Ganymede, bring me some nectar, and, Mercury, run and tell Jove that I shall not dine at home to-day'

The messenger and the page exchanged looks of indignant consternation

'Well! what are you waiting for?' continued Ixion looking round from the mirror in which he was arranging his locks The messenger and the page disappeared

'So! this is Heaven,' exclaimed the husband of Dia, flinging himself upon one of the couches, 'and a very pleasant place too These worthy Immortals required their minds to be opened, and I trust I have effectually

performed the necessary operation They wanted to keep me down with their dull old-fashioned celestial airs, but I fancy I have given them change for their talent To make your way in Heaven you must command These exclusives sink under the audacious invention of an aspiring mind Jove himself is really a fine old fellow, with some notions too I am a prime favourite, and no one is greater authority with Aegiochus on all subjects, from the character of the fair sex or the pedigree of a courser, down to the cut of a robe or the flavour of a dish Thanks, Ganymede,' continued the Thessalian, as he took the goblet from his returning attendant

'I drink to your *bonnes fortunes* Splendid! This nectar makes me feel quite immortal By the by, I hear sweet sounds Who is in the Hall of Music?'

'The Goddesses, royal sir, practise a new air of Euterpe, the words by Apollo 'Tis pretty, and will doubtless be very popular, for it is all about moonlight and the misery of existence'

'I warrant it'

'You have a taste for poetry yourself?' inquired Ganymede

'Not the least,' replied Ixion

'Apollo,' continued the heavenly page, 'is a great genius, though Marsyas said that he never would be a poet because he was a god, and had no heart But do you think, sir, that a poet does indeed need a heart?'

'I really cannot say I know my wife always said I had a bad heart and worse head, but what she meant, upon my honour I never could understand'

'Minerva will ask you to write in her album'

'Will she indeed! I am sorry to hear it, for I can scarcely scrawl my own signature I should think that Jove himself cared little for all this nonsense'

'Jove loves an epigram He does not esteem Apollo's works at all Jove is of the classical school, and admires satire, provided there be no allusions to gods and kings'

'Of course, I quite agree with him I remember we had a confounded poet at Larissa who proved my family lived before the deluge, and asked me for a

pension I refused him, and then he wrote an epigram asserting that I sprang from the veritable stones thrown by Deucalion and Pyrrha at the re-peopling of the earth, and retained all the properties of my ancestors'

'Ha, ha! Hark! there's a thunderbolt I must run to Jove'

'And I will look in on the musicians This way, I think?'

'Up the ruby staircase, turn to your right, down the amethyst gallery Farewell!'

'Good-bye, a lively lad that!'

II

The King of Thessaly entered the Hall of Music with its golden walls and crystal dome The Queen of Heaven was reclining in an easy-chair, cutting out peacocks in small sheets of note-paper Minerva was making a pencil observation on a manuscript copy of the song Apollo listened with deference to her laudatory criticisms Another divine dame, standing by the side of Euterpe, who was seated by the harp, looked up as Ixion entered The wild liquid glance of her soft but radiant countenance denoted the famed Goddess of Beauty

Juno just acknowledged the entrance of Ixion by a slight and very haughty inclination of the head, and then resumed her employment Minerva asked him his opinion of her amendment, of which he greatly approved Apollo greeted him with a melancholy smile, and congratulated him on being mortal Venus complimented him on his visit to Olympus, and expressed the pleasure that she experienced in making his acquaintance

'What do you think of Heaven?' inquired Venus, in a soft still voice, and with a smile like summer lightning

'I never found it so enchanting as at this moment,' replied Ixion

'A little dull? For myself, I pass my time chiefly at Cnidos you must come and visit me there 'Tis the most charming place in the world 'Tis said, you know, that our onions are like other people's roses We will take care of you, if your wife come'

'No fear of that She always remains at home and

piques herself on her domestic virtues, which means pickling, and quarrelling with her husband '

'Ah! I see you are a droll Very good indeed Well, for my part, I like a watering-place existence Cnidos, Paphos, Cythera—you will usually find me at one of these places I like the easy distraction of a career without any visible result At these fascinating spots your gloomy race, to whom, by the by, I am exceedingly partial, appear emancipated from the wearing fetters of their regular, dull, orderly, methodical, moral, political, toiling existence I pride myself upon being the Goddess of Watering-places You really must pay me a visit at Cnidos '

'Such an invitation requires no repetition And Cnidos is your favourite spot?'

'Why, it was so, but of late it has become so inundated with invalid Asiatics and valetudinarian Persians, that the simultaneous influx of the handsome heroes who swarm in from the islands to look after their daughters, scarcely compensates for the annoying presence of their yellow faces and shaking limbs No, I think, on the whole, Paphos is my favourite '

'I have heard of its magnificent luxury '

'Oh! 'tis lovely! Quite my idea of country life Not a single tree! When Cyprus is very hot, you run to Paphos for a sea-breeze, and are sure to meet every one whose presence is in the least desirable All the bores remain behind, as if by instinct '

'I remember when we married, we talked of passing the honeymoon at Cythera, but Dia would have her waiting-maid and a bandbox stuffed between us in the chariot, so I got sulky after the first stage, and returned by myself '

'You were quite right I hate bandboxes they are always in the way You would have liked Cythera if you had been in the least in love High rocks and green knolls, bowery woods, winding walks, and delicious sunsets I have not been there much of late,' continued the Goddess, looking somewhat sad and serious, 'since—but I will not talk sentiment to Ixion

'Do you think, then, I am insensible?'

'Yes'

'Perhaps you are right We mortals grow callous'

'So I have heard How very odd!' So saying, the Goddess glided away and saluted Mars, who at that moment entered the hall Ixion was presented to the military hero, who looked fierce and bowed stiffly The King of Thessaly turned upon his heel Minerva opened her album, and invited him to inscribe a stanza

'Goddess of Wisdom,' replied the King, 'unless you inspire me, the virgin page must remain pure as thyself I can scarcely sign a decree'

'Is it Ixion of Thessaly who says this?—one who has seen so much, and, if I am not mistaken, has felt and thought so much I can easily conceive why such a mind may desire to veil its movements from the common herd, but pray concede to Minerva the gratifying compliment of assuring her that she is the exception for whom this rule has been established'

'I seem to listen to the inspired music of an oracle Give me a pen'

'Here is one, plucked from a sacred owl'

'So! I write —There! Will it do?'

Minerva read the inscription —

I HAVE SEEN THE WORLD, AND MORE THAN THE WORLD I HAVE STUDIED THE HEART OF MAN, AND NOW I CONSORT WITH IMMORTALS THE FRUIT OF MY TREE OF KNOWLEDGE IS PLUCKED, AND IT IS THIS,

'Adventures are to the Adventurous'

Written in the Album of Minerva, by

Ixion in Heaven

''Tis brief,' said the Goddess, with a musing air, 'but full of meaning You have a daring soul and pregnant mind'

'I have dared much what I may produce we have yet to see'

'I must to Jove,' said Minerva, 'to council We shall meet again Farewell, Ixion'

'Farewell, Glaucopis'

The King of Thessaly stood away from the remaining guests, and leant with folded arms and pensive brow against a wreathed column Mars listened to Venus with an air of deep devotion Euterpe played an inspiring accompaniment to their conversation The Queen of Heaven seemed engrossed in the creation of her paper peacocks

Ixion advanced and seated himself on a couch near Juno His manner was divested of that reckless bearing and careless coolness by which it was in general distinguished He was, perhaps, even a little embarrassed His ready tongue deserted him At length he spoke

'Has your Majesty ever heard of the peacock of the Queen of Mesopotamia?'

'No,' replied Juno, with stately reserve, and then she added with an air of indifferent curiosity, 'Is it in any way remarkable?'

'Its breast is of silver, its wings of gold, its eyes of carbuncle, its claws of amethyst'

'And its tail?' eagerly inquired Juno

'That is a secret,' replied Ixion 'The tail is the most wonderful part of all'

'Oh! tell me, pray tell me!'

'I forget'

'No, no, no, it is impossible!' exclaimed the animated Juno 'Provoking mortal!' continued the Goddess 'Let me entreat you, tell me immediately'

'There is a reason which prevents me'

'What can it be? How very odd! What reason can it possibly be? Now tell me, as a particular, a personal favour, I request you tell me'

'What? The tail or the reason? The tail is wonderful, but the reason is much more so I can only tell one Now choose'

'What provoking things these human beings are! The tail is wonderful, but the reason is much more so Well then, the reason—no, the tail Stop, now, as a particular favour, pray tell me both What can the tail be made of, and what can the reason be? I am literally dying of curiosity'

'Your Majesty has cut out that peacock wrong,' coolly remarked Ixion 'It is more like one of Minerva's owls'

'Who cares about paper peacocks, when the Queen of Mesopotamia has got such a miracle!' exclaimed Juno, and she tore the labours of the morning to pieces, and threw away the fragments with vexation 'Now tell me instantly, if you have the slightest regard for me, tell me instantly What was the tail made of?'

'And you do not wish to hear the reason?'

'That afterwards Now! I am all ears' At this moment Ganymede entered, and whispered the Goddess, who rose in evident vexation, and retired to the presence of Jove

III

The King of Thessaly quitted the Hall of Music Moody, yet not uninfluenced by a degree of wild excitement, he wandered forth into the gardens of Olympus He came to a beautiful green retreat surrounded by enormous cedars, so vast that it seemed they must have been coeval with the creation, so fresh and brilliant, you would have deemed them wet with the dew of their first spring The turf, softer than down, and exhaling, as you pressed it, an exquisite perfume, invited him to recline himself upon this natural couch He threw himself upon the aromatic herbage, and leaning on his arm, fell into a deep reverie

Hours flew away, the sunshiny glades that opened in the distance had softened into shade

'Ixion, how do you do?' inquired a voice, wild, sweet, and thrilling as a bird The King of Thessaly started and looked up with the distracted air of a man roused from a dream, or from complacent meditation over some strange, sweet secret His cheek was flushed, his dark eyes flashed fire, his brow trembled, his dishevelled hair played in the fitful breeze The King of Thessaly looked up, and beheld a most beautiful youth

Apparently, he had attained about the age of puberty His stature, however, was rather tall for his age, but exquisitely moulded and proportioned. Very fair, his

somewhat round cheeks were tinted with a rich but delicate glow, like the rose of twilight, and lighted by dimples that twinkled like stars His large and deep-blue eyes sparkled with exultation, and an air of ill-suppressed mockery quivered round his pouting lips His light auburn hair, braided off his white forehead, clustered in massy curls on each side of his face, and fell in sunny torrents down his neck And from the back of the beautiful youth there fluttered forth two wings, the tremulous plumage of which seemed to have been bathed in a sunset so various, so radiant, and so novel were its shifting and wondrous tints, purple, and crimson, and gold, streaks of azure, dashes of orange and glossy black, now a single feather, whiter than light, and sparkling like the frost, stars of emerald and carbuncle, and then the prismatic blaze of an enormous brilliant! A quiver hung at the side of the beautiful youth, and he leant upon a bow

'Oh! god! for god thou must be!' at length exclaimed Ixion 'Do I behold the bright divinity of Love?'

'I am indeed Cupid,' replied the youth, 'and am curious to know what Ixion is thinking about'

'Thought is often bolder than speech'

'Oracular, though a mortal! You need not be afraid to trust me My aid I am sure you must need Who ever was found in a reverie on the green turf, under the shade of spreading trees, without requiring the assistance of Cupid? Come! be frank, who is the heroine? Some love-sick nymph deserted on the far earth, or worse, some treacherous mistress, whose frailty is more easily forgotten than her charms? 'Tis a miserable situation, no doubt It cannot be your wife?'

'Assuredly not,' replied Ixion, with great energy

'Another man's?'

'No'

'What! an obdurate maiden?'

Ixion shook his head

'It must be a widow, then,' continued Cupid 'Who ever heard before of such a piece of work about a widow!'

'Have pity upon me, dread Cupid!' exclaimed the King of Thessaly, rising suddenly from the ground, and

falling on his knee before the God 'Thou art the universal friend of man, and all nations alike throw their incense on thy altars Thy divine discrimination has not deceived thee I *am* in love, desperately, madly, fatally enamoured The object of my passion is neither my own wife nor another man's In spite of all they have said and sworn, I am a moral member of society She is neither a maid nor a widow She is——'

'What? what?' exclaimed the impatient deity

'A Goddess!' replied the King

'Wheugh!' whistled Cupid 'What! has my mischievous mother been indulging you with an innocent flirtation?'

'Yes, but it produced no effect upon me'

'You have a stout heart, then Perhaps you have been reading poetry with Minerva, and are caught in one of her Platonic man-traps'

'She set one, but I broke away'

'You have a stout leg, then But where are you, where are you? Is it Hebe? It can hardly be Diana, she is so very cold Is it a Muse, or is it one of the Graces?'

Ixion again shook his head

'Come, my dear fellow,' said Cupid, quite in a confidential tone, 'you have told enough to make further reserve mere affectation Ease your heart at once, and if I can assist you, depend upon my exertions'

'Beneficent God!' exclaimed Ixion, 'if I ever return to Larissa, the brightest temple in Greece shall hail thee for its inspiring deity I address thee with all the confiding frankness of a devoted votary Know, then, the heroine of my reverie was no less a personage than the Queen of Heaven herself!'

'Juno! by all that is sacred!' shouted Cupid

'I am here,' responded a voice of majestic melody The stately form of the Queen of Heaven advanced from a neighbouring bower Ixion stood with his eyes fixed upon the ground, with a throbbing heart and burning cheeks Juno stood motionless, pale, and astounded The God of Love burst into excessive laughter

'A pretty pair,' he exclaimed, fluttering between both,

and laughing in their faces 'Truly a pretty pair Well! I see I am in your way Good-bye!' And so saying, the God pulled a couple of arrows from his quiver, and with the rapidity of lightning shot one in the respective breasts of the Queen of Heaven and the King of Thessaly

IV

The amethystine twilight of Olympus died away The stars blazed with tints of every hue Ixion and Juno returned to the palace She leant upon his arm, her eyes were fixed upon the ground, they were in sight of the gorgeous pile, and yet she had not spoken Ixion, too, was silent, and gazed with abstraction upon the glowing sky

Suddenly, when within a hundred yards of the portal, Juno stopped, and looking up into the face of Ixion with an irresistible smile, she said, 'I am sure you cannot now refuse to tell me what the Queen of Mesopotamia's peacock's tail was made of?'

'It is impossible now,' said Ixion 'Know, then, beautiful Goddess, that the tail of the Queen of Mesopotamia's peacock was made of some plumage she had stolen from the wings of Cupid'

'And what was the reason that prevented you from telling me before?'

'Because, beautiful Juno, I am the most discreet of men, and respect the secret of a lady, however trifling'

'I am glad to hear that,' replied Juno, and they re-entered the palace

V

Mercury met Juno and Ixion in the gallery leading to the grand banqueting hall

'I was looking for you,' said the God, shaking his head 'Jove is in a sublime rage Dinner has been ready this hour'

The King of Thessaly and the Queen of Heaven exchanged a glance and entered the saloon Jove looked up with a brow of thunder, but did not condescend to send forth a single flash of anger Jove looked up and

Jove looked down All Olympus trembled as the father of Gods and men resumed his soup The rest of the guests seemed nervous and reserved, except Cupid, who said immediately to Juno, 'Your Majesty has been detained?'

'I fell asleep in a bower reading Apollo's last poem,' replied Juno 'I am lucky, however, in finding a companion in my negligence Ixion, where have you been?'

'Take a glass of nectar, Juno,' said Cupid, with eyes twinkling with mischief, 'and perhaps Ixion will join us'

This was the most solemn banquet ever celebrated in Olympus Every one seemed out of humour or out of spirits Jupiter spoke only in monosyllables of suppressed rage, that sounded like distant thunder

Apollo whispered to Minerva Mercury never opened his lips, but occasionally exchanged significant glances with Ganymede Mars compensated, by his attentions to Venus, for his want of conversation Cupid employed himself in asking disagreeable questions At length the Goddesses retired Mercury exerted himself to amuse Jove, but the Thunderer scarcely deigned to smile at his best stories Mars picked his teeth, Apollo played with his rings, Ixion was buried in a profound reverie

VI

It was a great relief to all when Ganymede summoned them to the presence of their late companions

'I have written a comment upon your inscription,' said Minerva to Ixion, 'and am anxious for your opinion of it'

'I am a wretched critic,' said the King, breaking away from her Juno smiled upon him in the distance

'Ixion,' said Venus, as he passed by, 'come and talk to me'

The bold Thessalian blushed, he stammered out an unmeaning excuse, he quitted the astonished but good-natured Goddess, and seated himself by Juno, and as he seated himself his moody brow seemed suddenly illumined with brilliant light

'Is it so?' said Venus

'Hem!' said Minerva

'Ha, ha!' said Cupid

Jupiter played piquette with Mercury

'Everything goes wrong to-day,' said the King of Heaven, 'cards wretched, and kept waiting for dinner, and by——a mortal!'

'Your Majesty must not be surprised,' said the good-natured Mercury, with whom Ixion was no favourite 'Your Majesty must not be very much surprised at the conduct of this creature Considering what he is, and where he is, I am only astonished that his head is not more turned than it appears to be A man, a thing made of mud, and in Heaven! Only think, sire! Is it not enough to inflame the brain of any child of clay? To be sure, keeping your Majesty from dinner is little short of celestial high treason I hardly expected that, indeed To order me about, to treat Ganymede as his own lackey, and, in short, to command the whole household, all this might be expected from such a person in such a situation, but I confess I did think he had some little respect left for your Majesty'

'And he does order you about, eh?' inquired Jove 'I have the spades'

'Oh! 'tis quite ludicrous,' responded the son of Maia 'Your Majesty would not expect from me the offices that this absurd upstart daily requires'

'Eternal destiny! is't possible? That is my trick And Ganymede, too?'

'Oh! quite shocking, I assure you, sire,' said the beautiful cupbearer, leaning over the chair of Jove with all the easy insolence of a privileged favourite 'Really, sire, if Ixion is to go on in the way he does, either he or I must quit'

'Is it possible?' exclaimed Jupiter 'But I can believe anything of a man who keeps me waiting for dinner Two and three make five'

'It is Juno that encourages him so,' said Ganymede

'Does she encourage him?' inquired Jove

'Everybody notices it,' protested Ganymede

'It is indeed a little noticed,' observed Mercury

'What business has such a fellow to speak to Juno?' exclaimed Jove. 'A mere mortal, a mere miserable mortal!

You have the point How I have been deceived in this fellow! Who ever could have supposed that, after all my generosity to him, he would ever have kept me waiting for dinner?'

'He was walking with Juno,' said Ganymede 'It was all a sham about their having met by accident Cupid saw them'

'Ha!' said Jupiter, turning pale, 'you don't say so! Repiqued, as I am a God That is mine Where is the Queen?'

'Talking to Ixion, sire,' said Mercury 'Oh, I beg your pardon, sire, I did not know you meant the queen of diamonds'

'Never mind I am repiqued, and I have been kept waiting for dinner Accursed be this day! Is Ixion really talking to Juno? We will not endure this'

VII

'Where is Juno?' demanded Jupiter

'I am sure I cannot say,' said Venus, with a smile

'I am sure I do not know,' said Minerva, with a sneer

'Where is Ixion?' said Cupid, laughing outright

'Mercury, Ganymede, find the Queen of Heaven instantly,' thundered the father of Gods and men

The celestial messenger and the heavenly page flew away out of different doors There was a terrible, an immortal silence Sublime rage lowered on the brow of Jove like a storm upon the mountain-top Minerva seated herself at the card-table and played at Patience Venus and Cupid tittered in the background Shortly returned the envoys, Mercury looking very solemn, Ganymede very malignant

'Well?' inquired Jove, and all Olympus trembled at the monosyllable

Mercury shook his head

'Her Majesty has been walking on the terrace with the King of Thessaly,' replied Ganymede

'Where is she now, sir?' demanded Jupiter

Mercury shrugged his shoulders

'Her Majesty is resting herself in the pavilion of Cupid, with the King of Thessaly,' replied Ganymede

'Confusion!' exclaimed the father of Gods and men, and he rose and seized a candle from the table, scattering the cards in all directions Every one present, Minerva, and Venus, and Mars, and Apollo, and Mercury, and Ganymede, and the Muses, and the Graces, and all the winged Genii—each seized a candle, rifling the chandeliers, each followed Jove

'This way,' said Mercury

'This way,' said Ganymede

'This way, this way!' echoed the celestial crowd

'Mischief!' cried Cupid, 'I must save my victims'

They were all upon the terrace The father of Gods and men, though both in a passion and a hurry, moved with dignity It was, as customary in Heaven, a clear and starry night, but this eve Diana was indisposed, or otherwise engaged, and there was no moonlight They were in sight of the pavilion

'What are you?' inquired Cupid of one of the Genii, who accidentally extinguished his candle

'I am a Cloud,' answered the winged Genius

'A Cloud! Just the thing Now do me a shrewd turn, and Cupid is ever your debtor Fly, fly, pretty Cloud, and encompass yon pavilion with your form Away! ask no questions, swift as my word'

'I declare there is a fog,' said Venus

'An evening mist in Heaven!' said Minerva

'Where is Nox?' said Jove 'Everything goes wrong Who ever heard of a mist in Heaven?'

'My candle is out,' said Apollo

'And mine, too,' said Mars

'And mine,—and mine,—and mine,' said Mercury, and Ganymede, and the Muses, and the Graces

'All the candles are out!' said Cupid, 'a regular fog I cannot even see the pavilion it must be hereabouts, though,' said the God to himself 'So, so, I should be at home in my own pavilion, and am tolerably accustomed to stealing about in the dark There is a step, and here, surely here is the lock The door opens, but the Cloud

enters before me Juno, Juno,' whispered the God of Love, 'we are all here Be contented to escape, like many other innocent dames, with your reputation only under a cloud it will soon disperse, and lo! the heaven is clearing'

'It must have been the heat of our flambeaux,' said Venus, 'for see, the mist is vanished, here is the pavilion'

Ganymede ran forward, and dashed open the door Ixion was alone

'Seize him!' said Jove

'Juno is not here,' said Mercury, with an air of blended congratulation and disappointment

'Never mind,' said Jove, 'seize him! He kept me waiting for dinner'

'Is this your hospitality, Aegiochus?' exclaimed Ixion, in a tone of bullying innocence 'I shall defend myself'

'Seize him, seize him!' exclaimed Jupiter 'What! do you all falter? Are you afraid of a mortal?'

'And a Thessalian?' added Ganymede

No one advanced

'Send for Hercules,' said Jove

'I will fetch him in an instant,' said Ganymede

'I protest,' said the King of Thessaly, 'against this violation of the most sacred rights'

'The marriage tie?' said Mercury

'The dinner-hour?' said Jove

'It is no use talking sentiment to Ixion,' said Venus, 'all mortals are callous'

'Adventures are to the adventurous,' said Minerva

'Here is Hercules! here is Hercules!'

'Seize him!' said Jove, 'seize that man'

In vain the mortal struggled with the irresistible demigod

'Shall I fetch your thunderbolt, Jove?' inquired Ganymede

'Anything short of eternal punishment is unworthy of a God,' answered Jupiter, with great dignity 'Apollo, bring me a wheel of your chariot'

'What shall I do to-morrow morning?' inquired the God of Light

'Order an eclipse,' replied Jove 'Bind the insolent

wretch to the wheel, hurl him to Hades, its motion shall be perpetual'

'What am I to bind him with?' inquired Hercules

'The girdle of Venus,' replied the Thunderer

'What is all this?' inquired Juno, advancing, pale and agitated

'Come along, you shall see,' answered Jupiter 'Follow me, follow me'

They all followed the leader,—all the Gods, all the Genii, in the midst, the brawny husband of Hebe bearing Ixion aloft, bound to the fatal wheel They reached the terrace, they descended the sparkling steps of lapis-lazuli Hercules held his burthen on high, ready, at a nod, to plunge the hapless but presumptuous mortal through space into Hades The heavenly group surrounded him, and peeped over the starry abyss It was a fine moral, and demonstrated the usual infelicity that attends unequal connexions

'Celestial despot!' said Ixion

In a moment all sounds were hushed, as they listened to the last words of the unrivalled victim Juno, in despair, leant upon the respective arms of Venus and Minerva

'Celestial despot!' said Ixion, 'I defy the immortal ingenuity of thy cruelty My memory must be as eternal as thy torture that will support me'

EDGAR ALLAN POE

1809–1849

THE FALL OF THE HOUSE OF USHER

[From *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* 1839]

Son cœur est un luth suspendu,
Sitot qu'on le touche il resonne

DE BÉRANGER

DURING the whole of a dull, dark, and soundless day in the autumn of the year, when the clouds hung oppressively low in the heavens, I had been passing alone, on horseback, through a singularly dreary tract of country, and at length found myself, as the shades of evening drew on, within view of the melancholy House of Usher I know not how it was—but, with the first glimpse of the building, a sense of insufferable gloom pervaded my spirit I say insufferable, for the feeling was unrelieved by any of that half-pleasurable, because poetic, sentiment, with which the mind usually receives even the sternest natural images of the desolate or terrible I looked upon the scene before me—upon the mere house, and the simple landscape features of the domain—upon the bleak walls—upon the vacant eye-like windows—upon a few rank sedges—and upon a few white trunks of decayed trees—with an utter depression of soul which I can compare to no earthly sensation more properly than to the after-dream of the reveller upon opium—the bitter lapse into every-day life—the hideous dropping off of the veil There was an iciness, a sinking, a sickening of the heart—an unredeemed dreariness of thought which no goading of the imagination could torture into aught of the sublime What was it—I paused to think—what was it that so unnerved me in the contemplation of the House of Usher? It was a mystery all insoluble, nor could I grapple with the shadowy fancies that crowded upon me as I pondered I was forced to fall back upon the unsatisfactory conclusion, that while, beyond doubt, there *are* combinations

of very simple natural objects which have the power of thus affecting us, still the analysis of this power lies among considerations beyond our depth It was possible, I reflected, that a mere different arrangement of the particulars of the scene, of the details of the picture, would be sufficient to modify, or perhaps to annihilate its capacity for sorrowful impression, and, acting upon this idea, I reined my horse to the precipitous brink of a black and lurid tarn that lay in unruffled lustre by the dwelling, and gazed down—but with a shudder even more thrilling than before—upon the remodelled and inverted images of the grey sedge, and the ghastly tree-stems, and the vacant and eye-like windows

Nevertheless, in this mansion of gloom I now proposed to myself a sojourn of some weeks Its proprietor, Roderick Usher, had been one of my boon companions in boyhood, but many years had elapsed since our last meeting A letter, however, had lately reached me in a distant part of the country—a letter from him—which, in its wildly importunate nature, had admitted of no other than the personal reply The MS gave evidence of nervous agitation The writer spoke of acute bodily illness—of a mental disorder which oppressed him—and of an earnest desire to see me, as his best, and indeed his only personal friend, with a view to attempting, by the cheerfulness of my society, some alleviation of his malady It was the manner in which all this, and much more, was said—it was the apparent *heart* that went with his request—which allowed me no room for hesitation, and I accordingly obeyed forthwith what I still considered a very singular summons

Although, as boys, we had been even intimate associates, yet I really knew little of my friend His reserve had always been excessive and habitual I was aware, however, that his very ancient family had been noted, time out of mind, for a peculiar sensibility of temperament, displaying itself, through long ages, in many works of exalted art, and manifested, of late, in repeated deeds of munificent yet unobtrusive charity, as well as in a passionate devotion to the intricacies, perhaps even more

than to the orthodox and easily recognizable beauties, of musical science I had learned, too, the very remarkable fact, that the stem of the Usher race, all time-honoured as it was, had put forth, at no period, any enduring branch, in other words, that the entire family lay in the direct line of descent, and had always, with very trifling and very temporary variation, so lain It was this deficiency, I considered, while running over in thought the perfect keeping of the character of the premises with the accredited character of the people, and while speculating upon the possible influence which the one, in the long lapse of centuries, might have exercised upon the other—it was this deficiency, perhaps, of collateral issue, and the consequent undeviating transmission, from sire to son, of the patrimony with the name, which had, at length, so identified the two as to merge the original title of the estate in the quaint and equivocal appellation of the 'House of Usher'—an appellation which seemed to include, in the minds of the peasantry who used it, both the family and the family mansion

I have said that the sole effect of my somewhat childish experiment—that of looking down within the tarn—had been to deepen the first singular impression There can be no doubt that the consciousness of the rapid increase of my superstition—for why should I not so term it?—served mainly to accelerate the increase itself Such, I have long known, is the paradoxical law of all sentiments having terror as a basis And it might have been for this reason only, that, when I again uplifted my eyes to the house itself, from its image in the pool, there grew in my mind a strange fancy—a fancy so ridiculous, indeed, that I but mention it to show the vivid force of the sensations which oppressed me I had so worked upon my imagination as really to believe that about the whole mansion and domain there hung an atmosphere peculiar to themselves and their immediate vicinity—an atmosphere which had no affinity with the air of heaven, but which had reeked up from the decayed trees, and the grey wall, and the silent tarn—a pestilent and mystic vapour, dull, sluggish, faintly discernible, and leaden-hued

and passed on The valet now threw open a door and ushered me into the presence of his master

The room in which I found myself was very large and lofty The windows were long, narrow, and pointed, and at so vast a distance from the black oaken floor as to be altogether inaccessible from within Feeble gleams of encrimsoned light made their way through the trellised panes, and served to render sufficiently distinct the more prominent objects around, the eye, however, struggled in vain to reach the remoter angles of the chamber, or the recesses of the vaulted and fretted ceiling Dark draperies hung upon the walls The general furniture was profuse, comfortless, antique, and tattered Many books and musical instruments lay scattered about, but failed to give any vitality to the scene I felt that I breathed an atmosphere of sorrow An air of stern, deep, and irredeemable gloom hung over and pervaded all

Upon my entrance, Usher arose from a sofa on which he had been lying at full length, and greeted me with a vivacious warmth which had much in it, I at first thought, of an overdone cordiality—of the constrained effort of the *ennuyé* man of the world A glance, however, at his countenance, convinced me of his perfect sincerity We sat down, and for some moments, while he spoke not, I gazed upon him with a feeling half of pity, half of awe Surely, man had never before so terribly altered, in so brief a period, as had Roderick Usher! It was with difficulty that I could bring myself to admit the identity of the wan being before me with the companion of my early boyhood Yet the character of his face had been at all times remarkable A cadaverousness of complexion, an eye large, liquid, and luminous beyond comparison, lips somewhat thin and very pallid, but of a surpassingly beautiful curve, a nose of a delicate Hebrew model, but with a breadth of nostril unusual in similar formations, a finely moulded chin, speaking, in its want of prominence, of a want of moral energy, hair of a more than weblike softness and tenuity, these features, with an inordinate expansion above the regions of the temple, made up altogether a countenance not easily to be forgotten And

now in the mere exaggeration of the prevailing character of these features, and of the expression they were wont to convey, lay so much of change that I doubted to whom I spoke The now ghastly pallor of the skin, and the now miraculous lustre of the eye, above all things startled and even awed me The silken hair, too, had been suffered to grow all unheeded, and as, in its wild gossamer texture, it floated rather than fell about the face, I could not, even with effort, connect its Arabesque expression with any idea of simple humanity

In the manner of my friend I was at once struck with an incoherence—an inconsistency, and I soon found this to arise from a series of feeble and futile struggles to overcome an habitual trepidancy—an excessive nervous agitation For something of this nature I had indeed been prepared, no less by his letter, than by reminiscences of certain boyish traits, and by conclusions deduced from his peculiar physical conformation and temperament His action was alternately vivacious and sullen His voice varied rapidly from a tremulous indecision (when the animal spirits seemed utterly in abeyance) to that species of energetic concision—that abrupt, weighty, unhurried, and hollow-sounding enunciation—that leaden, self-balanced, and perfectly modulated guttural utterance, which may be observed in the lost drunkard, or the irreclaimable eater of opium, during the periods of his most intense excitement

It was thus that he spoke of the object of my visit, of his earnest desire to see me, and of the solace he expected me to afford him He entered, at some length, into what he conceived to be the nature of his malady It was, he said, a constitutional and a family evil, and one for which he despaired to find a remedy—a mere nervous affection, he immediately added, which would undoubtedly soon pass off It displayed itself in a host of unnatural sensations Some of these, as he detailed them, interested and bewildered me, although, perhaps, the terms, and the general manner of the narration had their weight He suffered much from a morbid acuteness of the senses, the most insipid food was alone endurable, he could wear

only garments of certain texture, the odours of all flowers were oppressive, his eyes were tortured by even a faint light, and there were but peculiar sounds, and these from stringed instruments, which did not inspire him with horror

To an anomalous species of terror I found him a bounden slave 'I shall perish,' said he, 'I *must* perish in this deplorable folly Thus, thus, and not otherwise, shall I be lost I dread the events of the future, not in themselves, but in their results I shudder at the thought of any, even the most trivial, incident, which may operate upon this intolerable agitation of soul I have, indeed, no abhorrence of danger, except in its absolute effect—in terror In this unnerved—in this pitiable condition—I feel that the period will sooner or later arrive when I must abandon life and reason together, in some struggle with the grim phantasm, FEAR '

I learned, moreover, at intervals, and through broken and equivocal hints, another singular feature of his mental condition He was enchained by certain superstitious impressions in regard to the dwelling which he tenanted, and whence, for many years, he had never ventured forth —in regard to an influence whose supposititious force was conveyed in terms too shadowy here to be restated—an influence which some peculiarities in the mere form and substance of his family mansion, had, by dint of long sufferance, he said, obtained over his spirit—an effect which the *physique* of the grey walls and turrets, and of the dim tarn into which they all looked down, had at length brought about upon the *morale* of his existence

He admitted, however, although with hesitation, that much of the peculiar gloom which thus afflicted him could be traced to a more natural and far more palpable origin —to the severe and long-continued illness—indeed to the evidently approaching dissolution—of a tenderly beloved sister—his sole companion for long years—his last and only relative on earth 'Her decease,' he said, with a bitterness which I can never forget, 'would leave him (him the hopeless and the frail) the last of the ancient race of the Ushers ' While he spoke, the Lady Madeline

(for so was she called) passed slowly through a remote portion of the apartment, and, without having noticed my presence, disappeared I regarded her with an utter astonishment not unmingled with dread—and yet I found it impossible to account for such feelings A sensation of stupor oppressed me, as my eyes followed her retreating steps When a door at length closed upon her, my glance sought instinctively and eagerly the countenance of the brother—but he had buried his face in his hands, and I could only perceive that a far more than ordinary wanness had overspread the emaciated fingers through which trickled many passionate tears

The disease of the Lady Madeline had long baffled the skill of her physicians A settled apathy, a gradual wasting away of the person, and frequent although transient affections of a partially cataleptical character, were the unusual diagnosis Hitherto she had steadily borne up against the pressure of her malady, and had not betaken herself finally to bed, but, on the closing in of the evening of my arrival at the house, she succumbed (as her brother told me at night with inexpressible agitation) to the prostrating power of the destroyer, and I learned that the glimpse I had obtained of her person would thus probably be the last I should obtain—that the lady, at least while living, would be seen by me no more

For several days ensuing, her name was unmentioned by either Usher or myself, and during this period I was busied in earnest endeavours to alleviate the melancholy of my friend We painted and read together, or I listened, as if in a dream, to the wild improvisations of his speaking guitar And thus, as a closer and still closer intimacy admitted me more unreservedly into the recesses of his spirit, the more bitterly did I perceive the futility of all attempt at cheering a mind from which darkness, as if an inherent positive quality, poured forth upon all objects of the moral and physical universe, in one unceasing radiation of gloom

I shall ever bear about me a memory of the many solemn hours I thus spent alone with the master of the House of Usher Yet I should fail in any attempt to

convey an idea of the exact character of the studies, or of the occupations, in which he involved me, or led me the way An excited and highly distempered ideality threw a sulphureous lustre over all His long improvised dirges will ring for ever in my ears Among other things, I hold painfully in mind a certain singular perversion and amplification of the wild air of the last waltz of Von Weber From the paintings over which his elaborate fancy brooded, and which grew, touch by touch, into vaguenesses at which I shuddered the more thrillingly, because I shuddered knowing not why—from these paintings (vivid as their images now are before me) I would in vain endeavour to educe more than a small portion which should lie within the compass of merely written words By the utter simplicity, by the nakedness of his designs, he arrested and overawed attention If ever mortal painted an idea, that mortal was Roderick Usher For me at least—in the circumstances then surrounding me—there arose out of the pure abstractions which the hypochondriac contrived to throw upon his canvas, an intensity of intolerable awe, no shadow of which felt I ever yet in the contemplation of the certainly glowing yet too concrete reveries of Fuseli

One of the phantasmagoric conceptions of my friend, partaking not so rigidly of the spirit of abstraction, mav be shadowed forth, although feebly, in words A small picture presented the interior of an immensely long and rectangular vault or tunnel, with low walls, smooth, white, and without interruption or device Certain accessory points of the design served well to convey the idea that this excavation lay at an exceeding depth below the surface of the earth No outlet was observed in any portion of its vast extent, and no torch, or other artificial source of light, was discernible, yet a flood of intense rays rolled throughout, and bathed the whole in a ghastly and inappropriate splendour

I have just spoken of that morbid condition of the auditory nerve which rendered all music intolerable to the sufferer, with the exception of certain effects of stringed instruments It was, perhaps, the narrow limits to which

he thus confined himself upon the guitar, which gave birth, in great measure, to the fantastic character of his performances But the fervid facility of his impromptus could not be so accounted for They must have been, and were, in the notes, as well as in the words, of his wild fantasias (for he not unfrequently accompanied himself with rhymed verbal improvisations), the result of that intense mental collectedness and concentration to which I have previously alluded as observable only in particular moments of the highest artificial excitement The words of one of these rhapsodies I have easily remembered I was, perhaps, the more forcibly impressed with it, as he gave it, because, in the under or mystic current of its meaning, I fancied that I perceived, and for the first time, a full consciousness on the part of Usher, of the tottering of his lofty reason upon her throne The verses, which were entitled 'The Haunted Palace', ran very nearly, if not accurately, thus

I

In the greenest of our valleys,
  By good angels tenanted,
Once a fair and stately palace—
  Radiant palace—reared its head
In the monarch Thought's dominion—
  It stood there!
Never seraph spread a pinion
  Over fabric half so fair

II

Banners yellow, glorious, golden,
  On its roof did float and flow
(This—all this—was in the olden
  Time long ago),
And every gentle air that dallied,
  In that sweet day,
Along the ramparts plumed and pallid,
  A winged odour went away

III

Wanderers in that happy valley
  Through two luminous windows saw
Spirits moving musically
  To a lute's well-tuned law,

Round about a throne, where sitting
(Porphyrogene!)
In state his glory well befitting,
The ruler of the realm was seen

IV

And all with pearl and ruby glowing
Was the fair palace door,
Through which came flowing, flowing, flowing,
And sparkling evermore,
A troop of Echoes, whose sweet duty
Was but to sing,
In voices of surpassing beauty,
The wit and wisdom of their king

V

But evil things, in robes of sorrow,
Assailed the monarch's high estate
(Ah, let us mourn, for never morrow
Shall dawn upon him, desolate!),
And, round about his home, the glory
That blushed and bloomed
Is but a dim-remembered story
Of the old time entombed

VI

And travellers now within that valley,
Through the red-litten windows, see
Vast forms that move fantastically
To a discordant melody,
While, like a rapid ghastly river,
Through the pale door,
A hideous throng rush out for ever,
And laugh—but smile no more

I well remember that suggestions arising from this ballad led us into a train of thought wherein there became manifest an opinion of Usher's, which I mention not so much on account of its novelty (for other men have thought thus), as on account of the pertinacity with which he maintained it This opinion, in its general form, was that of the sentience of all vegetable things But, in his disordered fancy, the idea had assumed a more daring

character, and trespassed, under certain conditions, upon the kingdom of inorganization. I lack words to express the full extent, or the earnest *abandon* of his persuasion. The belief, however, was connected (as I have previously hinted) with the grey stones of the home of his forefathers. The conditions of the sentience had been here, he imagined, fulfilled in the method of collocation of these stones—in the order of their arrangement, as well as in that of the many fungi which overspread them, and of the decayed trees which stood around—above all, in the long undisturbed endurance of this arrangement, and in its reduplication in the still waters of the tarn. Its evidence—the evidence of the sentience—was to be seen, he said (and I here started as he spoke), in the gradual yet certain condensation of an atmosphere of their own about the waters and the walls. The result was discoverable, he added, in that silent, yet importunate and terrible influence which for centuries had moulded the destinies of his family, and which made *him* what I now saw him—what he was. Such opinions need no comment, and I will make none.

Our books—the books which, for years, had formed no small portion of the mental existence of the invalid—were, as might be supposed, in strict keeping with this character of phantasm. We pored together over such works as the *Ververt et Chartreuse* of Gresset, the *Belphegor* of Machiavelli, the *Heaven and Hell* of Swedenborg, the *Subterranean Voyage of Nicholas Klimn*, by Holberg, the *Chiromancy* of Robert Flud, of Jean D'Indagine, and of De la Chambre, the *Journey into the Blue Distance* of Tieck, and the *City of the Sun* of Campanella. One favourite volume was a small octavo edition of the *Directorium Inquisitorium*, by the Dominican Eymeric de Gironne, and there were passages in Pomponius Mela, about the old African Satyrs and Aegipans, over which Usher would sit dreaming for hours. His chief delight, however, was found in the perusal of an exceedingly rare and curious book in quarto Gothic—the manual of a forgotten church—the *Vigiliae Mortuorum secundum Chorum Ecclesiae Maguntinae*.

I could not help thinking of the wild ritual of this work,

and of its probable influence upon the hypochondriac, when, one evening, having informed me abruptly that the Lady Madeline was no more, he stated his intention of preserving her corpse for a fortnight (previously to its final interment), in one of the numerous vaults within the main walls of the building The worldly reason, however, assigned for this singular proceeding, was one which I did not feel at liberty to dispute The brother had been led to his resolution (so he told me) by consideration of the unusual character of the malady of the deceased, of certain obtrusive and eager inquiries on the part of her medical men, and of the remote and exposed situation of the burial-ground of the family I will not deny that when I called to mind the sinister countenance of the person whom I met upon the staircase, on the day of my arrival at the house, I had no desire to oppose what I regarded as at best but a harmless, and by no means an unnatural, precaution

At the request of Usher, I personally aided him in the arrangements for the temporary entombment The body having been encoffined, we two alone bore it to its rest The vault in which we placed it (and which had been so long unopened that our torches, half smothered in its oppressive atmosphere, gave us little opportunity for investigation) was small, damp, and entirely without means of admission for light, lying, at great depth, immediately beneath that portion of the building in which was my own sleeping apartment It had been used, apparently, in remote feudal times, for the worst purposes of a donjon-keep, and, in later days, as a place of deposit for powder, or some other highly combustible substance, as a portion of its floor, and the whole interior of a long archway through which we reached it, were carefully sheathed with copper The door, of massive iron, had been, also, similarly protected Its immense weight caused an unusually sharp grating sound, as it moved upon its hinges

Having deposited our mournful burden upon tressels within this region of horror, we partially turned aside the yet unscrewed lid of the coffin, and looked upon the face of the tenant A striking similitude between the brother

and sister now first arrested my attention, and Usher, divining, perhaps, my thoughts, murmured out some few words from which I learned that the deceased and himself had been twins, and that sympathies of a scarcely intelligible nature had always existed between them. Our glances, however, rested not long upon the dead—for we could not regard her unawed. The disease which had thus entombed the lady in the maturity of youth, had left, as usual in all maladies of a strictly cataleptical character, the mockery of a faint blush upon the bosom and the face, and that suspiciously lingering smile upon the lip which is so terrible in death. We replaced and screwed down the lid, and, having secured the door of iron, made our way, with toil, into the scarcely less gloomy apartments of the upper portion of the house.

And now, some days of bitter grief having elapsed, an observable change came over the features of the mental disorder of my friend. His ordinary manner had vanished. His ordinary occupations were neglected or forgotten. He roamed from chamber to chamber with hurried, unequal, and objectless step. The pallor of his countenance had assumed, if possible, a more ghastly hue—but the luminousness of his eye had utterly gone out. The once occasional huskiness of his tone was heard no more, and a tremulous quaver, as if of extreme terror, habitually characterized his utterance. There were times, indeed, when I thought his unceasingly agitated mind was labouring with some oppressive secret, to divulge which he struggled for the necessary courage. At times, again, I was obliged to resolve all into the mere inexplicable vagaries of madness, for I beheld him gazing upon vacancy for long hours, in an attitude of the profoundest attention, as if listening to some imaginary sound. It was no wonder that his condition terrified—that it infected me. I felt creeping upon me, by slow yet certain degrees, the wild influences of his own fantastic yet impressive superstitions.

It was, especially, upon retiring to bed late in the night of the seventh or eighth day after the placing of the Lady Madeline within the donjon, that I experienced the full power of such feelings. Sleep came not near my couch—

while the hours waned and waned away. I struggled to reason off the nervousness which had dominion over me. I endeavoured to believe that much, if not all of what I felt, was due to the bewildering influence of the gloomy furniture of the room—of the dark and tattered draperies, which, tortured into motion by the breath of a rising tempest, swayed fitfully to and fro upon the walls, and rustled uneasily about the decorations of the bed. But my efforts were fruitless. An irrepressible tremor gradually pervaded my frame, and at length, there sat upon my very heart an incubus of utterly causeless alarm. Shaking this off with a gasp and a struggle, I uplifted myself upon the pillows, and peering earnestly within the intense darkness of the chamber, hearkened—I know not why, except that an instinctive spirit prompted me—to certain low and indefinite sounds which came, through the pauses of the storm, at long intervals, I knew not whence. Overpowered by an intense sentiment of horror, unaccountable yet unendurable, I threw on my clothes with haste (for I felt that I should sleep no more during the night), and endeavoured to arouse myself from the pitiable condition into which I had fallen, by pacing rapidly to and fro through the apartment.

I had taken but few turns in this manner, when a light step on an adjoining staircase arrested my attention. I presently recognized it as that of Usher. In an instant afterward he rapped, with a gentle touch, at my door, and entered, bearing a lamp. His countenance was, as usual, cadaverously wan—but, moreover, there was a species of mad hilarity in his eyes—an evidently restrained hysteria in his whole demeanour. His air appalled me—but anything was preferable to the solitude which I had so long endured, and I even welcomed his presence as a relief.

'And you have not seen it?' he said abruptly, after having stared about him for some moments in silence—'you have not then seen it?—but, stay! you shall.' Thus speaking, and having carefully shaded his lamp, he hurried to one of the casements, and threw it freely open to the storm.

The impetuous fury of the entering gust nearly lifted us from our feet. It was, indeed, a tempestuous yet sternly beautiful night, and one wildly singular in its terror and its beauty. A whirlwind had apparently collected its force in our vicinity, for there were frequent and violent alterations in the direction of the wind; and the exceeding density of the clouds (which hung so low as to press upon the turrets of the house) did not prevent our perceiving the life-like velocity with which they flew careering from all points against each other, without passing away into the distance. I say that even their exceeding density did not prevent our perceiving this—yet we had no glimpse of the moon or stars—nor was there any flashing forth of the lightning. But the under surfaces of the huge masses of agitated vapour, as well as all terrestrial objects immediately around us, were glowing in the unnatural light of a faintly luminous and distinctly visible gaseous exhalation which hung about and enshrouded the mansion.

'You must not—you shall not behold this!' said I, shudderingly, to Usher, as I led him, with a gentle violence, from the window to a seat. 'These appearances, which bewilder you, are merely electrical phenomena not uncommon—or it may be that they have their ghastly origin in the rank miasma of the tarn. Let us close this casement—the air is chilling and dangerous to your frame. Here is one of your favourite romances. I will read, and you shall listen—and so we will pass away this terrible night together.'

The antique volume which I had taken up was the *Mad Trist* of Sir Launcelot Canning; but I had called it a favourite of Usher's more in sad jest than in earnest; for, in truth, there is little in its uncouth and unimaginative prolixity which could have had interest for the lofty and spiritual ideality of my friend. It was, however, the only book immediately at hand; and I indulged a vague hope that the excitement which now agitated the hypochondriac, might find relief (for the history of mental disorder is full of similar anomalies) even in the extremeness of the folly which I should read. Could I have judged, indeed, by the wild overstrained air of vivacity with

which he hearkened, or apparently hearkened, to the words of the tale, I might well have congratulated myself upon the success of my design

I had arrived at that well-known portion of the story where Ethelred, the hero of the Trist, having sought in vain for peaceable admission into the dwelling of the hermit, proceeds to make good an entrance by force Here, it will be remembered, the words of the narrative run thus

'And Ethelred, who was by nature of a doughty heart, and who was now mighty withal, on account of the powerfulness of the wine which he had drunken, waited no longer to hold parley with the hermit, who, in sooth, was of an obstinate and maliceful turn, but, feeling the rain upon his shoulders, and fearing the rising of the tempest, uplifted his mace outright, and, with blows, made quickly room in the plankings of the door for his gauntleted hand, and now pulling therewith sturdily, he so cracked, and ripped, and tore all asunder, that the noise of the dry and hollow-sounding wood alarumed and reverberated throughout the forest'

At the termination of this sentence I started, and for a moment paused, for it appeared to me (although I at once concluded that my excited fancy had deceived me) —it appeared to me that, from some very remote portion of the mansion, there came, indistinctly, to my ears, what might have been, in its exact similarity of character, the echo (but a stifled and dull one certainly) of the very cracking and ripping sound which Sir Launcelot had so particularly described It was, beyond doubt, the coincidence alone which had arrested my attention, for, amid the rattling of the sashes of the casements, and the ordinary commingled noises of the still increasing storm, the sound, in itself, had nothing, surely, which should have interested or disturbed me I continued the story

'But the good champion Ethelred, now entering within the door, was sore enraged and amazed to perceive no signal of the maliceful hermit, but, in the stead thereof, a dragon of a scaly and prodigious demeanour, and of a fiery tongue, which sate in guard before a palace of gold,

with a floor of silver, and upon the wall there hung a shield of shining brass with this legend enwritten

> Who entereth herein, a conqueror hath bin,
> Who slayeth the dragon, the shield he shall win

And Ethelred uplifted his mace, and struck upon the head of the dragon, which fell before him, and gave up his pesty breath, with a shriek so horrid and harsh, and withal so piercing, that Ethelred had fain to close his ears with his hands against the dreadful noise of it, the like whereof was never before heard '

Here again I paused abruptly, and now with a feeling of wild amazement—for there could be no doubt whatever that, in this instance, I did actually hear (although from what direction it proceeded I found it impossible to say) a low and apparently distant, but harsh, protracted, and most unusual screaming or grating sound—the exact counterpart of what my fancy had already conjured up for the dragon's unnatural shriek as described by the romancer

Oppressed as I certainly was, upon the occurrence of this second and most extraordinary coincidence, by a thousand conflicting sensations, in which wonder and extreme terror were predominant, I still retained sufficient presence of mind to avoid exciting, by any observation, the sensitive nervousness of my companion. I was by no means certain that he had noticed the sound in question, although, assuredly, a strange alteration had, during the last few minutes, taken place in his demeanour From a position fronting my own, he had gradually brought round his chair, so as to sit with his face to the door of the chamber, and thus I could but partially perceive his features, although I saw that his lips trembled as if he were murmuring inaudibly His head had dropped upon his breast—yet I knew that he was not asleep, from the wide and rigid opening of the eye as I caught a glance of it in profile The motion of his body, too, was at variance with this idea—for he rocked from side to side with a gentle yet constant and uniform sway Having rapidly taken notice of all this, I resumed the narrative of Sir Launcelot, which thus proceeded

'And now, the champion, having escaped from the terrible fury of the dragon, bethinking himself of the brazen shield, and of the breaking up of the enchantment which was upon it, removed the carcass from out of the way before him, and approached valorously over the silver pavement of the castle to where the shield was upon the wall, which in sooth tarried not for his full coming, but fell down at his feet upon the silver floor, with a mighty great and terrible ringing sound.'

No sooner had these syllables passed my lips, than—as if a shield of brass had indeed, at the moment, fallen heavily upon a floor of silver—I became aware of a distinct, hollow, metallic, and clangorous, yet apparently muffled reverberation. Completely unnerved, I leaped to my feet, but the measured rocking movement of Usher was undisturbed. I rushed to the chair in which he sat. His eyes were bent fixedly before him, and throughout his whole countenance there reigned a stony rigidity. But, as I placed my hand upon his shoulder, there came a strong shudder over his whole person; a sickly smile quivered about his lips, and I saw that he spoke in a low, hurried, and gibbering murmur, as if unconscious of my presence. Bending closely over him, I at length drank in the hideous import of his words.

'Not hear it?—yes, I hear it, and *have* heard it. Long—long—long—many minutes, many hours, many days, have I heard it—yet I dared not—oh, pity me, miserable wretch that I am!—I dared not—I *dared* not speak! *We have put her living in the tomb!* Said I not that my senses were acute? I *now* tell you that I heard her first feeble movements in the hollow coffin. I heard them—many, many days ago—yet I dared not—*I dared not speak!* And now—to-night—Ethelred—ha! ha!—the breaking of the hermit's door, and the death-cry of the dragon, and the clangour of the shield!—say, rather, the rending of her coffin, and the grating of the iron hinges of her prison, and her struggles within the coppered archway of the vault! Oh, whither shall I fly? Will she not be here anon? Is she not hurrying to upbraid me for my haste? Have I not heard her footstep on the stair? Do I not distin-

guish that heavy and horrible beating of her heart? Madman!'—here he sprang furiously to his feet, and shrieked out his syllables, as if in the effort he were giving up his soul—'*Madman! I tell you that she now stands without the door!*'

As if in the superhuman energy of his utterance there had been found the potency of a spell—the huge antique panels to which the speaker pointed threw slowly back, upon the instant, their ponderous and ebony jaws. It was the work of the rushing gust—but then without those doors there *did* stand the lofty and enshrouded figure of the Lady Madeline of Usher. There was blood upon her white robes, and the evidence of some bitter struggle upon every portion of her emaciated frame. For a moment she remained trembling and reeling to and fro upon the threshold—then, with a low moaning cry, fell heavily inward upon the person of her brother, and in her violent and now final death-agonies, bore him to the floor a corpse, and a victim to the terrors he had anticipated.

From that chamber, and from that mansion, I fled aghast. The storm was still abroad in all its wrath as I found myself crossing the old causeway. Suddenly there shot along the path a wild light, and I turned to see whence a gleam so unusual could have issued; for the vast house and its shadows were alone behind me. The radiance was that of the full, setting, and blood-red moon, which now shone vividly through that once barely-discernible fissure, of which I have before spoken as extending from the roof of the building, in a zigzag direction, to the base. While I gazed, this fissure rapidly widened—there came a fierce breath of the whirlwind—the entire orb of the satellite burst at once upon my sight—my brain reeled as I saw the mighty walls rushing asunder—there was a long tumultuous shouting sound like a voice of a thousand waters—and the deep and dank tarn at my feet closed sullenly and silently over the fragments of the 'House of Usher'.

THE PIT AND THE PENDULUM

[From *The Gift* 1842]

Impia tortorum longas hic turba furores,
  Sanguinis innocui non satiata, aluit
Sospite nunc patria, fracto nunc funeris antro,
  Mors ubi dira fuit vita salusque patent

[*Quatrain composed for the gates of a market to be erected upon the site of the Jacobin Club House at Paris*]

I was sick—sick unto death with that long agony, and when they at length unbound me, and I was permitted to sit, I felt that my senses were leaving me The sentence—the dread sentence of death—was the last of distinct accentuation which reached my ears After that, the sound of the inquisitorial voices seemed merged in one dreamy indeterminate hum It conveyed to my soul the idea of *revolution*—perhaps from its association in fancy with the burr of a mill-wheel This only for a brief period, for presently I heard no more Yet, for a while, I saw, but with how terrible an exaggeration! I saw the lips of the black-robed judges They appeared to me white—whiter than the sheet upon which I trace these words—and thin even to grotesqueness, thin with the intensity of their expression of firmness—of immovable resolution—of stern contempt of human torture I saw that the decrees of what to me was Fate, were still issuing from those lips I saw them writhe with a deadly locution I saw them fashion the syllables of my name, and I shuddered because no sound succeeded I saw, too, for a few moments of delirious horror, the soft and nearly imperceptible waving of the sable draperies which enwrapped the walls of the apartment And then my vision fell upon the seven tall candles upon the table At first they wore the aspect of charity, and seemed white slender angels who would save me, but then, all at once, there came a most deadly nausea over my spirit, and I felt every fibre in my frame thrill as if I had touched the wire of a galvanic battery, while the angel forms became

meaningless spectres, with heads of flame, and I saw that from them there would be no help And then there stole into my fancy, like a rich musical note, the thought of what sweet rest there must be in the grave The thought came gently and stealthily, and it seemed long before it attained full appreciation, but just as my spirit came at length properly to feel and entertain it, the figures of the judges vanished, as if magically, from before me, the tall candles sank into nothingness, their flames went out utterly, the blackness of darkness supervened, all sensations appeared swallowed up in a mad rushing descent as of the soul into Hades Then silence, and stillness, and night were the universe

I had swooned, but still will not say that all of consciousness was lost What of it there remained I will not attempt to define, or even to describe, yet all was not lost In the deepest slumber—no! In delirium—no! In a swoon—no! In death—no! even in the grave all *is not* lost Else there is no immortality for man Arousing from the most profound of slumbers, we break the gossamer web of *some* dream Yet in a second afterward (so frail may that web have been) we remember not that we have dreamed In the return to life from the swoon there are two stages first, that of the sense of mental or spiritual, secondly, that of the sense of physical, existence It seems probable that if, upon reaching the second stage, we could recall the impressions of the first, we should find these impressions eloquent in memories of the gulf beyond And that gulf is—what? How at least shall we distinguish its shadows from those of the tomb? But if the impressions of what I have termed the first stage are not, at will, recalled, yet, after long interval, do they not come unbidden, while we marvel whence they come? He who has never swooned, is not he who finds strange palaces and wildly familiar faces in coals that glow, is not he who beholds floating in mid-air the sad visions that the many may not view, is not he who ponders over the perfume of some novel flower—is not he whose brain grows bewildered with the meaning of some musical cadence which has never before arrested his attention

Amid frequent and thoughtful endeavours to remember, amid earnest struggles to regather some token of the state of seeming nothingness into which my soul had lapsed, there have been moments when I have dreamed of success, there have been brief, very brief periods when I have conjured up remembrances which the lucid reason of a later epoch assures me could have had reference only to that condition of seeming unconsciousness. These shadows of memory tell, indistinctly, of tall figures that lifted and bore me in silence down—down—still down—till a hideous dizziness oppressed me at the mere idea of the interminableness of the descent. They tell also of a vague horror at my heart, on account of that heart's unnatural stillness. Then comes a sense of sudden motionlessness throughout all things, as if those who bore me (a ghastly train!) had outrun, in their descent, the limits of the limitless, and paused from the wearisomeness of their toil. After this I call to mind flatness and dampness, and then all is *madness*—the madness of a memory which busies itself among forbidden things.

Very suddenly there came back to my soul motion and sound—the tumultuous motion of the heart, and, in my ears, the sound of its beating. Then a pause, in which all is blank. Then again sound, and motion, and touch—a tingling sensation pervading my frame. Then the mere consciousness of existence, without thought—a condition which lasted long. Then, very suddenly, *thought*, and shuddering terror, and earnest endeavour to comprehend my true state. Then a strong desire to lapse into insensibility. Then a rushing revival of soul and a successful effort to move. And now a full memory of the trial, of the judges, of the sable draperies, of the sentence, of the sickness, of the swoon. Then entire forgetfulness of all that followed, of all that a later day and much earnestness of endeavour have enabled me vaguely to recall.

So far, I had not opened my eyes. I felt that I lay upon my back, unbound. I reached out my hand, and it fell heavily upon something damp and hard. There I suffered it to remain for many minutes, while I strove

to imagine where and *what* I could be I longed, yet dared not to employ my vision I dreaded the first glance at objects around me It was not that I feared to look upon things horrible, but that I grew aghast lest there should be *nothing* to see At length, with a wild desperation at heart, I quickly unclosed my eyes My worst thoughts, then, were confirmed The blackness of eternal night encompassed me I struggled for breath The intensity of the darkness seemed to oppress and stifle me The atmosphere was intolerably close I still lay quietly, and made effort to exercise my reason I brought to mind the inquisitorial proceedings, and attempted from that point to deduce my real condition The sentence had passed, and it appeared to me that a very long interval of time had since elapsed Yet not for a moment did I suppose myself actually dead Such a supposition, notwithstanding what we read in fiction, is altogether inconsistent with real existence—but where and in what state was I? The condemned to death, I knew, perished usually at the *autos-da-fé*, and one of these had been held on the very night of the day of my trial Had I been remanded to my dungeon, to await the next sacrifice, which would not take place for many months? This I at once saw could not be Victims had been in immediate demand Moreover, my dungeon, as well as all the condemned cells at Toledo, had stone floors, and light was not altogether excluded

A fearful idea now suddenly drove the blood in torrents upon my heart, and for a brief period I once more relapsed into insensibility Upon recovering, I at once started to my feet, trembling convulsively in every fibre I thrust my arms wildly above and around me in all directions I felt nothing, yet dreaded to move a step, lest I should be impeded by the walls of a *tomb* Perspiration burst from every pore, and stood in cold big beads upon my forehead The agony of suspense grew at length intolerable, and I cautiously moved forward, with my arms extended, and my eyes straining from their sockets, in the hope of catching some faint ray of light I proceeded for many paces, but still all was blackness and

vacancy I breathed more freely It seemed evident that mine was not, at least, the most hideous of fates

And now, as I still continued to step cautiously onward, there came thronging upon my recollection a thousand vague rumours of the horrors of Toledo Of the dungeons there had been strange things narrated—fables I had always deemed them—but yet strange, and too ghastly to repeat, save in a whisper Was I left to perish of starvation in this subterranean world of darkness, or what fate, perhaps even more fearful, awaited me? That the result would be death, and a death of more than customary bitterness, I knew too well the character of my judges to doubt The mode and the hour were all that occupied or distracted me

My outstretched hands at length encountered some solid obstruction It was a wall, seemingly of stone masonry—very smooth, slimy, and cold I followed it up, stepping with all the careful distrust with which certain antique narratives had inspired me This process, however, afforded me no means of ascertaining the dimensions of my dungeon, as I might make its circuit, and return to the point whence I set out, without being aware of the fact, so perfectly uniform seemed the wall I therefore sought the knife which had been in my pocket, when led into the inquisitorial chamber, but it was gone, my clothes had been exchanged for a wrapper of coarse serge I had thought of forcing the blade in some minute crevice of the masonry, so as to identify my point of departure The difficulty, nevertheless, was but trivial, although, in the disorder of my fancy, it seemed at first insuperable I tore a part of the hem from the robe and placed the fragment at full length, and at right angles to the wall In groping my way around the prison, I could not fail to encounter this rag upon completing the circuit So, at least, I thought, but I had not counted upon the extent of the dungeon, or upon my own weakness The ground was moist and slippery I staggered onward for some time, when I stumbled and fell My excessive fatigue induced me to remain prostrate, and sleep soon overtook me as I lay

Upon awaking, and stretching forth an arm, I found beside me a loaf and a pitcher with water I was too much exhausted to reflect upon this circumstance, but ate and drank with avidity Shortly afterward I resumed my tour around the prison, and, with much toil, came at last upon the fragment of the serge Up to the period when I fell, I had counted fifty-two paces, and, upon resuming my walk, I had counted forty-eight more—when I arrived at the rag There were in all, then, a hundred paces, and, admitting two paces to the yard, I presumed the dungeon to be fifty yards in circuit I had met, however, with many angles in the wall, and thus I could form no guess at the shape of the vault, for vault I could not help supposing it to be

I had little object—certainly no hope—in these researches, but a vague curiosity prompted me to continue them Quitting the wall, I resolved to cross the area of the enclosure At first, I proceeded with extreme caution, for the floor, although seemingly of solid material, was treacherous with slime At length, however, I took courage, and did not hesitate to step firmly—endeavouring to cross in as direct a line as possible I had advanced some ten or twelve paces in this manner, when the remnant of the torn hem of my robe became entangled between my legs I stepped on it, and fell violently on my face

In the confusion attending my fall, I did not immediately apprehend a somewhat startling circumstance, which yet, in a few seconds afterward, and while I still lay prostrate, arrested my attention It was this my chin rested upon the floor of the prison, but my lips, and the upper portion of my head, although seemingly at a less elevation than the chin, touched nothing At the same time, my forehead seemed bathed in a clammy vapour, and the peculiar smell of decayed fungus arose to my nostrils I put forward my arm, and shuddered to find that I had fallen at the very brink of a circular pit, whose extent, of course, I had no means of ascertaining at the moment Groping about the masonry just below the margin, I succeeded in dislodging a small fragment, and let it fall into the abyss For many

seconds I hearkened to its reverberations as it dashed against the sides of the chasm in its descent At length, there was a sullen plunge into water, succeeded by loud echoes At the same moment, there came a sound resembling the quick opening, and as rapid closing of a door overhead, while a faint gleam of light flashed suddenly through the gloom, and as suddenly faded away

I saw clearly the doom which had been prepared for me, and congratulated myself upon the timely accident by which I had escaped Another step before my fall, and the world had seen me no more And the death just avoided was of that very character which I had regarded as fabulous and frivolous in the tales respecting the Inquisition To the victims of its tyranny, there was the choice of death with its direst physical agonies, or death with its most hideous moral horrors I had been reserved for the latter By long suffering my nerves had been unstrung, until I trembled at the sound of my own voice, and had become in every respect a fitting subject for the species of torture which awaited me

Shaking in every limb, I groped my way back to the wall—resolving there to perish rather than risk the terrors of the wells, of which my imagination now pictured many in various positions about the dungeon In other conditions of mind, I might have had courage to end my misery at once, by a plunge into one of these abysses, but now I was the veriest of cowards Neither could I forget what I had read of these pits—that the *sudden* extinction of life formed no part of their most horrible plan

Agitation of spirit kept me awake for many long hours, but at length I again slumbered Upon arousing, I found by my side, as before, a loaf and a pitcher of water A burning thirst consumed me, and I emptied the vessel at a draught It must have been drugged—for scarcely had I drunk, before I became irresistibly drowsy A deep sleep fell upon me—a sleep like that of death How long it lasted, of course, I know not, but when, once again, I unclosed my eyes, the objects around me were

visible By a wild, sulphurous lustre, the origin of which I could not at first determine, I was enabled to see the extent and aspect of the prison

In its size I had been greatly mistaken The whole circuit of its walls did not exceed twenty-five yards For some minutes this fact occasioned me a world of vain trouble, vain indeed—for what could be of less importance, under the terrible circumstances which environed me, than the mere dimensions of my dungeon? But my soul took a wild interest in trifles, and I busied myself in endeavours to account for the error I had committed in my measurement The truth at length flashed upon me In my first attempt at exploration I had counted fifty-two paces, up to the period when I fell, I must then have been within a pace or two of the fragment of serge, in fact, I had nearly performed the circuit of the vault I then slept—and, upon awaking, I must have returned upon my steps—thus supposing the circuit nearly double what it actually was My confusion of mind prevented me from observing that I began my tour with the wall to the left, and ended it with the wall to the right

I had been deceived, too, in respect to the shape of the enclosure In feeling my way, I had found many angles, and thus deduced an idea of great irregularity, so potent is the effect of total darkness upon one arousing from lethargy or sleep! The angles were simply those of a few slight depressions, or niches, at odd intervals The general shape of the prison was square What I had taken for masonry seemed now to be iron, or some other metal, in huge plates, whose sutures or joints occasioned the depression The entire surface of this metallic enclosure was rudely daubed in all the hideous and repulsive devices to which the charnel superstition of the monks has given rise The figures of fiends in aspects of menace, with skeleton forms, and other more really fearful images, overspread and disfigured the walls I observed that the outlines of these monstrosities were sufficiently distinct, but that the colours seemed faded and blurred, as if from the effects of a damp

atmosphere I now noticed the floor, too, which was of stone In the centre yawned the circular pit from whose jaws I had escaped, but it was the only one in the dungeon

All this I saw indistinctly and by much effort—for my personal condition had been greatly changed during slumber I now lay upon my back, and at full length, on a species of low framework of wood To this I was securely bound by a long strap resembling a surcingle It passed in many convolutions about my limbs and body, leaving at liberty only my head and my left arm to such extent, that I could, by dint of much exertion, supply myself with food from an earthen dish which lay by my side on the floor I saw, to my horror, that the pitcher had been removed I say, to my horror—for I was consumed with intolerable thirst This thirst it appeared to be the design of my persecutors to stimulate—for the food in the dish was meat pungently seasoned

Looking upward, I surveyed the ceiling of my prison It was some thirty or forty feet overhead, and constructed much as the side walls In one of its panels a very singular figure riveted my whole attention It was the painted figure of Time as he is commonly represented, save that, in lieu of a scythe, he held what, at a casual glance, I supposed to be the pictured image of a huge pendulum, such as we see on antique clocks There was something, however, in the appearance of this machine which caused me to regard it more attentively While I gazed directly upward at it (for its position was immediately over my own), I fancied that I saw it in motion In an instant afterward the fancy was confirmed Its sweep was brief, and, of course, slow I watched it for some minutes, somewhat in fear, but more in wonder Wearied at length with observing its dull movement, I turned my eyes upon the other objects in the cell

A slight noise attracted my notice, and looking to the floor, I saw several enormous rats traversing it They had issued from the well, which lay just within view to

my right Even then, while I gazed, they came up in troops, hurriedly, with ravenous eyes, allured by the scent of the meat From this it required much effort and attention to scare them away

It might have been half an hour, perhaps even an hour (for I could take but imperfect note of time) before I again cast my eyes upward What I then saw, confounded and amazed me The sweep of the pendulum had increased in extent by nearly a yard As a natural consequence, its velocity was also much greater But what mainly disturbed me, was the idea that it had perceptibly *descended* I now observed—with what horror it is needless to say—that its nether extremity was formed of a crescent of glittering steel, about a foot in length from horn to horn, the horns upward, and the under edge evidently as keen as that of a razor Like a razor also, it seemed massy and heavy, tapering from the edge into a solid and broad structure above It was appended to a weighty rod of brass, and the whole *hissed* as it swung through the air

I could no longer doubt the doom prepared for me by monkish ingenuity in torture My cognizance of the pit had become known to the inquisitorial agents—*the pit*, whose horrors had been destined for so bold a recusant as myself—*the pit*, typical of hell, and regarded by rumour as the Ultima Thule of all their punishments The plunge into this pit I had avoided by the merest of accidents, and I knew that surprise, or entrapment into torment, formed an important portion of all the grotesquerie of these dungeon deaths Having failed to fall, it was no part of the demon plan to hurl me into the abyss, and thus (there being no alternative) a different and a milder destruction awaited me Milder! I half smiled in my agony as I thought of such application of such a term

What boots it to tell of the long, long hours of horror more than mortal, during which I counted the rushing oscillations of the steel! Inch by inch—line by line—with a descent only appreciable at intervals that seemed ages—down and still down it came! Days passed—it

might have been that many days passed—ere it swept so closely over me as to fan me with its acrid breath The odour of the sharp steel forced itself into my nostrils I prayed—I wearied heaven with my prayer for its more speedy descent I grew frantically mad, and struggled to force myself upward against the sweep of the fearful scimitar And then I fell suddenly calm, and lay smiling at the glittering death, as a child at some rare bauble

There was another interval of utter insensibility, it was brief, for, upon again lapsing into life, there had been no perceptible descent in the pendulum But it might have been long—for I knew there were demons who took note of my swoon, and who could have arrested the vibration at pleasure Upon my recovery, too, I felt very—oh, inexpressibly—sick and weak, as if through long inanition Even amid the agonies of that period the human nature craved food With painful effort I outstretched my left arm as far as my bonds permitted, and took possession of the small remnant which had been spared me by the rats As I put a portion of it within my lips, there rushed to my mind a half-formed thought of joy—of hope Yet what business had *I* with hope? It was, as I say, a half-formed thought—man has many such, which are never completed I felt that it was of joy—of hope, but I felt also that it had perished in its formation In vain I struggled to perfect—to regain it Long suffering had nearly annihilated all my ordinary powers of mind I was an imbecile—an idiot

The vibration of the pendulum was at right angles to my length I saw that the crescent was designed to cross the region of the heart It would fray the serge of my robe—it would return and repeat its operations—again—and again Notwithstanding its terrifically wide sweep (some thirty feet or more), and the hissing vigour of its descent, sufficient to sunder these very walls of iron, still the fraying of my robe would be all that, for several minutes, it would accomplish And at this thought I paused I dared not go farther than this reflection I dwelt upon it with a pertinacity of attention—as if, in so dwelling, I could arrest *here* the descent of the steel I

forced myself to ponder upon the sound of the crescent as it should pass across the garment—upon the peculiar thrilling sensation which the friction of cloth produces on the nerves I pondered upon all this frivolity until my teeth were on edge

Down—steadily down it crept I took a frenzied pleasure in contrasting its downward with its lateral velocity To the right—to the left—far and wide—with the shriek of a damned spirit! to my heart, with the stealthy pace of the tiger! I alternately laughed and howled, as the one or the other idea grew predominant

Down—certainly, relentlessly down! It vibrated within three inches of my bosom! I struggled violently—furiously—to free my left arm This was free only from the elbow to the hand I could reach the latter, from the platter beside me, to my mouth, with great effort, but no farther Could I have broken the fastenings above the elbow, I would have seized and attempted to arrest the pendulum I might as well have attempted to arrest an avalanche!

Down—still unceasingly—still inevitably down! I gasped and struggled at each vibration I shrunk convulsively at its every sweep My eyes followed its outward or upward whirls with the eagerness of the most unmeaning despair, they closed themselves spasmodically at the descent, although death would have been a relief, oh, how unspeakable! Still I quivered in every nerve to think how slight a sinking of the machinery would precipitate that keen, glistening axe upon my bosom It was *hope* that prompted the nerve to quiver—the frame to shrink It was *hope*—the hope that triumphs on the rack—that whispers to the death-condemned even in the dungeons of the Inquisition

I saw that some ten or twelve vibrations would bring the steel in actual contact with my robe—and with this observation there suddenly came over my spirit all the keen, collected calmness of despair For the first time during many hours—or perhaps days—I *thought* It now occurred to me, that the bandage, or surcingle, which enveloped me, was *unique* I was tied by no separate cord

The first stroke of the razor-like crescent athwart any portion of the band, would so detach it that it might be unwound from my person by means of my left hand But how fearful, in that case, the proximity of the steel! The result of the slightest struggle, how deadly! Was it likely, moreover, that the minions of the torturer had not foreseen and provided for this possibility? Was it probable that the bandage crossed my bosom in the track of the pendulum? Dreading to find my faint, and, as it seemed, my last hope frustrated, I so far elevated my head as to obtain a distinct view of my breast The surcingle enveloped my limbs and body close in all directions—*save in the path of the destroying crescent*

Scarcely had I dropped my head back into its original position, when there flashed upon my mind what I cannot better describe than as the unformed half of that idea of deliverance to which I have previously alluded, and of which a moiety only floated indeterminately through my brain when I raised food to my burning lips The whole thought was now present—feeble, scarcely sane, scarcely definite—but still entire I proceeded at once, with the nervous energy of despair, to attempt its execution

For many hours the immediate vicinity of the low framework upon which I lay had been literally swarming with rats They were wild, bold, ravenous—their red eyes glaring upon me as if they waited but for motionlessness on my part to make me their prey 'To what food,' I thought, 'have they been accustomed in the well?'

They had devoured, in spite of all my efforts to prevent them, all but a small remnant of the contents of the dish I had fallen into an habitual see-saw, or wave of the hand, about the platter, and at length the unconscious uniformity of the movement deprived it of effect In their voracity, the vermin frequently fastened their sharp fangs in my fingers With the particles of the oily and spicy viand which now remained, I thoroughly rubbed the bandage wherever I could reach it, then, raising my hand from the floor, I lay breathlessly still

At first, the ravenous animals were startled and terrified at the change—at the cessation of movement They

shrank alarmedly back, many sought the well But this was only for a moment I had not counted in vain upon their voracity Observing that I remained without motion, one or two of the boldest leaped upon the frame-work, and smelt at the surcingle This seemed the signal for a general rush Forth from the well they hurried in fresh troops They clung to the wood—they overran it, and leaped in hundreds upon my person The measured movement of the pendulum disturbed them not at all Avoiding its strokes, they busied themselves with the anointed bandage They pressed—they swarmed upon me in ever accumulating heaps They writhed upon my throat, their cold lips sought my own, I was half stifled by their thronging pressure, disgust, for which the world has no name, swelled my bosom, and chilled, with a heavy clamminess, my heart Yet one minute, and I felt that the struggle would be over Plainly I perceived the loosening of the bandage I knew that in more than one place it must be already severed With a more than human resolution I lay *still*

Nor had I erred in my calculations—nor had I endured in vain I at length felt that I was *free* The surcingle hung in ribands from my body But the stroke of the pendulum already pressed upon my bosom It had divided the serge of the robe It had cut through the linen beneath Twice again it swung, and a sharp sense of pain shot through every nerve But the moment of escape had arrived At a wave of my hand my deliverers hurried tumultuously away With a steady movement—cautious, sidelong, shrinking, and slow—I slid from the embrace of the bandage and beyond the reach of the scimitar For the moment, at least, *I was free*

Free!—and in the grasp of the Inquisition! I had scarcely stepped from my wooden bed of horror upon the stone floor of the prison, when the motion of the hellish machine ceased, and I beheld it drawn up, by some invisible force, through the ceiling This was a lesson which I took desperately to heart My every motion was undoubtedly watched Free!—I had but escaped death in one form of agony, to be delivered unto

worse than death in some other. With that thought I rolled my eyes nervously around on the barriers of iron that hemmed me in. Something unusual—some change which, at first, I could not appreciate distinctly—it was obvious, had taken place in the apartment. For many minutes of a dreamy and trembling abstraction, I busied myself in vain, unconnected conjecture. During this period, I became aware, for the first time, of the origin of the sulphurous light which illumined the cell. It proceeded from a fissure, about half an inch in width, extending entirely around the prison at the base of the walls, which thus appeared, and were, completely separated from the floor. I endeavoured, but of course in vain, to look through the aperture.

As I arose from the attempt, the mystery of the alteration in the chamber broke at once upon my understanding. I have observed that, although the outlines of the figures upon the walls were sufficiently distinct, yet the colours seemed blurred and indefinite. These colours had now assumed, and were momentarily assuming, a startling and most intense brilliancy, that gave to the spectral and fiendish portraitures an aspect that might have thrilled even firmer nerves than my own. Demon eyes, of a wild and ghastly vivacity, glared upon me in a thousand directions, where none had been visible before, and gleamed with the lurid lustre of a fire that I could not force my imagination to regard as unreal.

Unreal! Even while I breathed there came to my nostrils the breath of the vapour of heated iron! A suffocating odour pervaded the prison! A deeper glow settled each moment in the eyes that glared at my agonies! A richer tint of crimson diffused itself over the pictured horrors of blood. I panted! I gasped for breath! There could be no doubt of the design of my tormentors—oh! most unrelenting! oh, most demoniac of men! I shrank from the glowing metal to the centre of the cell. Amid the thought of the fiery destruction that impended, the idea of the coolness of the well came over my soul like balm. I rushed to its deadly brink. I threw my straining vision below. The glare from the enkindled

roof illumined its inmost recesses. Yet, for a wild moment, did my spirit refuse to comprehend the meaning of what I saw. At length it forced—it wrestled its way into my soul—it burned itself in upon my shuddering reason. Oh! for a voice to speak!—oh! horror!—oh! any horror but this! With a shriek, I rushed from the margin, and buried my face in my hands—weeping bitterly.

The heat rapidly increased, and once again I looked up, shuddering as with a fit of the ague. There had been a second change in the cell—and now the change was obviously in the *form*. As before, it was in vain that I at first endeavoured to appreciate or understand what was taking place. But not long was I left in doubt. The inquisitorial vengeance had been hurried by my twofold escape, and there was to be no more dallying with the King of Terrors. The room had been square. I saw that two of its iron angles were now acute—two, consequently, obtuse. The fearful difference quickly increased with a low rumbling or moaning sound. In an instant the apartment had shifted its form into that of a lozenge. But the alteration stopped not here—I neither hoped nor desired it to stop. I could have clasped the red walls to my bosom as a garment of eternal peace. 'Death,' I said, 'any death but that of the pit!' Fool! might I not have known that *into the pit* it was the object of the burning iron to urge me? Could I resist its glow? or if even that, could I withstand its pressure? And now, flatter and flatter grew the lozenge, with a rapidity that left me no time for contemplation. Its centre, and of course, its greatest width, came just over the yawning gulf. I shrank back—but the closing walls pressed me resistlessly onward. At length for my seared and writhing body there was no longer an inch of foothold on the firm floor of the prison. I struggled no more, but the agony of my soul found vent in one loud, long, and final scream of despair. I felt that I tottered upon the brink—I averted my eyes—

There was a discordant hum of human voices! There was a loud blast as of many trumpets! There was a harsh grating as of a thousand thunders! The fiery walls rushed back! An outstretched arm caught my own as I fell,

fainting, into the abyss It was that of General Lasalle The French army had entered Toledo The Inquisition was in the hands of its enemies

ELEONORA

[From *The Gift* 1842]

Sub conservatione formae specificae salva anima
RAYMOND LULLY

I AM come of a race noted for vigour of fancy and ardour of passion Men have called me mad, but the question is not yet settled whether madness is or is not the loftiest intelligence—whether much that is glorious—whether all that is profound—does not spring from disease of thought—from moods of mind exalted at the expense of the general intellect They who dream by day are cognizant of many things which escape those who dream only by night In their grey visions they obtain glimpses of eternity, and thrill, in waking, to find that they have been upon the verge of the great secret In snatches, they learn something of the wisdom which is of good, and more of the mere knowledge which is of evil They penetrate, however rudderless or compassless, into the vast ocean of the 'light ineffable', and again, like the adventures of the Nubian geographer, '*aggressi sunt mare tenebrarum, quid in eo esset exploraturi*'

We will say, then, that I am mad I grant, at least, that there are two distinct conditions of my mental existence—the condition of a lucid reason, not to be disputed, and belonging to the memory of events forming the first epoch of my life—and a condition of shadow and doubt, appertaining to the present, and to the recollection of what constitutes the second great era of my being Therefore, what I shall tell of the earlier period, believe, and to what I may relate of the later time, give only such credit as may seem due, or doubt it altogether, or, if doubt it ye cannot, then play unto its riddle the Oedipus

She whom I loved in youth, and of whom I now pen calmly and distinctly these remembrances, was the sole

daughter of the only sister of my mother long departed Eleonora was the name of my cousin We had always dwelled together, beneath a tropical sun, in the Valley of the Many-Coloured Grass No unguided footstep ever came upon that vale, for it lay far away up among a range of giant hills that hung beetling around about it, shutting out the sunlight from its sweetest recesses No path was trodden in its vicinity, and, to reach our happy home, there was need of putting back, with force, the foliage of many thousands of forest trees, and of crushing to death the glories of many millions of fragrant flowers Thus it was that we lived all alone, knowing nothing of the world without the valley—I, and my cousin, and her mother

From the dim regions beyond the mountains at the upper end of our encircled domain there crept out a narrow and deep river, brighter than all, save the eyes of Eleonora, and, winding stealthily about in mazy courses, it passed away, at length, through a shadowy gorge, among hills still dimmer than those whence it had issued We called it the 'River of Silence', for there seemed to be a hushing influence in its flow No murmur arose from its bed, and so gently it wandered along, that the pearly pebbles upon which we loved to gaze, far down within its bosom, stirred not at all, but lay in a motionless content, each in its own old station, shining on gloriously for ever

The margin of the river, and of the many dazzling rivulets that glided through devious ways into its channel, as well as the spaces that extended from the margins away down into the depths of the streams until they reached the bed of pebbles at the bottom—these spots, not less than the whole surface of the valley, from the river to the mountains that girdled it in, were carpeted all by a soft green grass, thick, short, perfectly even, and vanilla-perfumed, but so besprinkled throughout with the yellow buttercup, the white daisy, the purple violet, and the ruby-red asphodel, that its exceeding beauty spoke to our hearts in loud tones, of the love and of the glory of God

And, here and there, in groves about this grass, like

wildernesses of dreams, sprang up fantastic trees, whose tall slender stems stood not upright, but slanted gracefully towards the light that peered at noonday into the centre of the valley Their bark was speckled with the vivid alternate splendour of ebony and silver, and was smoother than all save the cheeks of Eleonora, so that, but for the brilliant green of the huge leaves that spread from their summits in long, tremulous lines, dallying with the Zephyrs, one might have fancied them giant serpents of Syria doing homage to their Sovereign the Sun

Hand in hand about this valley, for fifteen years, roamed I with Eleonora before Love entered within our hearts It was one evening at the close of the third lustrum of her life, and of the fourth of my own, that we sat, locked in each other's embrace, beneath the serpent-like trees, and looked down within the waters of the River of Silence at our images therein We spoke no words during the rest of that sweet day, and our words even upon the morrow were tremulous and few We had drawn the god Eros from that wave, and now we felt that he had enkindled within us the fiery souls of our forefathers The passions which had for centuries distinguished our race, came thronging with the fancies for which they had been equally noted and together breathed a delirious bliss over the Valley of the Many-Coloured Grass A change fell upon all things Strange, brilliant flowers, star-shaped, burst out upon the trees where no flowers had been known before The tints of the green carpet deepened, and when, one by one, the white daisies shrank away, there sprang up in place of them, ten by ten of the ruby-red asphodel And life arose in our paths, for the tall flamingo, hitherto unseen, with all gay glowing birds, flaunted his scarlet plumage before us The golden and silver fish haunted the river, out of the bosom of which issued, little by little, a murmur that swelled, at length, into a lulling melody more divine than that of the harp of Aeolus—sweeter than all save the voice of Eleonora And now, too, a voluminous cloud, which we had long watched in the regions of Hesper, floated out thence,

all gorgeous in crimson and gold, and settling in peace above us, sank, day by day, lower and lower, until its edges rested upon the tops of the mountains, turning all their dimness into magnificence, and shutting us up, as if for ever, within a magic prison-house of grandeur and of glory

The loveliness of Eleonora was that of the Seraphim, but she was a maiden artless and innocent as the brief life she had led among the flowers No guile disguised the fervour of love which animated her heart, and she examined with me its inmost recesses as we walked together in the Valley of the Many-Coloured Grass, and discoursed of the mighty changes which had lately taken place therein

At length, having spoken one day, in tears, of the last sad change which must befall Humanity, she thenceforward dwelt only upon this one sorrowful theme, interweaving it into all our converse, as, in the songs of the bard of Schiraz, the same images are found occurring, again and again, in every impressive variation of phrase

She had seen that the finger of Death was upon her bosom—that, like the ephemeron, she had been made perfect in loveliness only to die, but the terrors of the grave to her lay solely in a consideration which she revealed to me, one evening at twilight, by the banks of the River of Silence She grieved to think that, having entombed her in the Valley of the Many-Coloured Grass, I would quit for ever its happy recesses, transferring the love which now was so passionately her own to some maiden of the outer and everyday world And, then and there, I threw myself hurriedly at the feet of Eleonora, and offered up a vow, to herself and to Heaven, that I would never bind myself in marriage to any daughter of Earth—that I would in no manner prove recreant to her dear memory, or to the memory of the devout affection with which she had blessed me And I called the Mighty Ruler of the Universe to witness the pious solemnity of my vow And the curse which I invoked of *Him* and of her, a saint in Helusion, should I prove traitorous to that promise, involved a penalty the exceeding great horror

of which will not permit me to make record of it here. And the bright eyes of Eleonora grew brighter at my words, and she sighed as if a deadly burthen had been taken from her breast, and she trembled and very bitterly wept, but she made acceptance of the vow (for what was she but a child?), and it made easy to her the bed of her death. And she said to me, not many days afterwards, tranquilly dying, that, because of what I had done for the comfort of her spirit, she would watch over me in that spirit when departed, and, if so it were permitted her, return to me visibly in the watches of the night, but, if this thing were, indeed, beyond the power of the souls in Paradise, that she would, at least, give me frequent indications of her presence, sighing upon me in the evening winds, or filling the air which I breathed with perfume from the censers of the angels. And, with these words upon her lips, she yielded up her innocent life, putting an end to the first epoch of my own.

Thus far I have faithfully said. But as I pass the barrier in Time's path, formed by the death of my beloved, and proceed with the second era of my existence, I feel that a shadow gathers over my brain, and I mistrust the perfect sanity of the record. But let me on.—Years dragged themselves along heavily, and still I dwelled within the Valley of the Many-Coloured Grass, but a second change had come upon all things. The star-shaped flowers shrank into the stems of the trees, and appeared no more. The tints of the green carpet faded, and, one by one, the ruby-red asphodels withered away, and there sprang up, in place of them ten by ten, dark, eye-like violets, that writhed uneasily and were ever encumbered with dew. And Life departed from our paths, for the tall flamingo flaunted no longer his scarlet plumage before us, but flew sadly from the vale into the hills, with all the gay glowing birds that had arrived in his company. And the golden and silver fish swam down through the gorge at the lower end of our domain and bedecked the sweet river never again. And the lulling melody that had been softer than the wind-harp of Aeolus, and more divine than all save the voice of

of love What, indeed, was my passion for the young girl of the valley in comparison with the fervour, and the delirium, and the spirit-lifting ecstasy of adoration with which I poured out my whole soul in tears at the feet of the ethereal Ermengarde? Oh, bright was the seraph Ermengarde! and in that knowledge I had room for none other Oh, divine was the angel Ermengarde! and as I looked down into the depths of her memorial eyes, I thought only of them—and *of her*

I wedded,—nor dreaded the curse I had invoked, and its bitterness was not visited upon me And once—but once again in the silence of the night—there came through my lattice the soft sighs which had forsaken me, and they modelled themselves into a familiar and sweet voice, saying

'Sleep in peace! for the Spirit of Love reigneth and ruleth, and, in taking to thy passionate heart her who is Ermengarde, thou art absolved, for reasons which shall be made known to thee in Heaven, of thy vows unto Eleonora'

ELIZABETH CLEGHORN GASKELL

1810–1865

THE SQUIRE'S STORY

[From *The Grey Woman, and other Tales* 1865]

IN the year 1769 the little town of Barford was thrown into a state of great excitement by the intelligence that a gentleman (and 'quite the gentleman', said the landlord of the George Inn) had been looking at Mr Clavering's old house This house was neither in the town nor in the country It stood on the outskirts of Barford, on the roadside leading to Derby The last occupant had been a Mr Clavering—a Northumberland gentleman of good family—who had come to live in Barford while he was but a younger son, but when some elder branches of the family died, he had returned to take possession of the family estate The house of which I speak was called the White House, from its being covered with a greyish kind of stucco It had a good garden to the back, and Mr Clavering had built capital stables, with what were then considered the latest improvements The point of good stabling was expected to let the house, as it was in a hunting county, otherwise it had few recommendations There were many bedrooms, some entered through others, even to the number of five, leading one beyond the other, several sitting-rooms of the small and poky kind, wainscoted round with wood, and then painted a heavy slate colour, one good dining-room, and a drawing-room over it, both looking into the garden, with pleasant bow-windows

Such was the accommodation offered by the White House It did not seem to be very tempting to strangers, though the good people of Barford rather piqued themselves on it, as the largest house in the town, and as a house in which 'townspeople' and 'county people' had often met at Mr Clavering's friendly dinners To

appreciate this circumstance of pleasant recollection, you should have lived some years in a little country town, surrounded by gentlemen's seats You would then understand how a bow or a courtesy from a member of a county family elevates the individuals who receive it almost as much, in their own eyes, as the pair of blue garters fringed with silver did Mr Bickerstaff's ward They trip lightly on air for a whole day afterwards Now Mr Clavering was gone, where could town and county mingle?

I mention these things that you may have an idea of the desirability of the letting of the White House in the Barfordites' imagination, and to make the mixture thick and slab, you must add for yourselves the bustle, the mystery, and the importance which every little event either causes or assumes in a small town, and then, perhaps, it will be no wonder to you that twenty ragged little urchins accompanied the 'gentleman' aforesaid to the door of the White House, and that, although he was above an hour inspecting it, under the auspices of Mr Jones, the agent's clerk, thirty more had joined themselves on to the wondering crowd before his exit, and awaited such crumbs of intelligence as they could gather before they were threatened or whipped out of hearing distance Presently, out came the 'gentleman' and the lawyer's clerk The latter was speaking as he followed the former over the threshold The gentleman was tall, well dressed, handsome, but there was a sinister cold look in his quick-glancing, light blue eye, which a keen observer might not have liked There were no keen observers among the boys, and ill-conditioned gaping girls But they stood too near, inconveniently close, and the gentleman, lifting up his right hand, in which he carried a short riding-whip, dealt one or two sharp blows to the nearest, with a look of savage enjoyment on his face as they moved away whimpering and crying An instant after, his expression of countenance had changed

'Here!' said he, drawing out a handful of money, partly silver, partly copper, and throwing it into the midst of them 'Scramble for it! fight it out, my lads!

come this afternoon, at three, to the George, and I'll throw you out some more' So the boys hurraed for him as he walked off with the agent's clerk He chuckled to himself, as over a pleasant thought 'I'll have some fun with those lads,' he said, 'I'll teach 'em to come prowling and prying about me I'll tell you what I'll do I'll make the money so hot in the fire-shovel that it shall burn their fingers You come and see the faces and the howling I shall be very glad if you will dine with me at two, and by that time I may have made up my mind respecting the house'

Mr Jones, the agent's clerk, agreed to come to the George at two, but, somehow, he had a distaste for his entertainer Mr Jones would not like to have said, even to himself, that a man with a purse full of money, who kept many horses, and spoke familiarly of noblemen—above all, who thought of taking the White House—could be anything but a gentleman, but still the uneasy wonder as to who this Mr Robinson Higgins could be, filled the clerk's mind long after Mr Higgins, Mr Higgins's servants, and Mr Higgins's stud had taken possession of the White House

The White House was re-stuccoed (this time of a pale yellow colour), and put into thorough repair by the accommodating and delighted landlord, while his tenant seemed inclined to spend any amount of money on internal decorations, which were showy and effective in their character, enough to make the White House a nine days' wonder to the good people of Barford The slate-coloured paints became pink, and were picked out with gold, the old-fashioned banisters were replaced by newly gilt ones, but, above all, the stables were a sight to be seen Since the days of the Roman Emperor never was there such provision made for the care, the comfort, and the health of horses But every one said it was no wonder, when they were led through Barford, covered up to their eyes, but curving their arched and delicate necks, and prancing with short high steps, in repressed eagerness Only one groom came with them, yet they required the care of three men Mr Higgins, however, preferred engaging

two lads out of Barford, and Barford highly approved of his preference. Not only was it kind and thoughtful to give employment to the lounging lads themselves, but they were receiving such a training in Mr Higgins's stables as might fit them for Doncaster or Newmarket. The district of Derbyshire in which Barford was situated, was too close to Leicestershire not to support a hunt and a pack of hounds. The master of the hounds was a certain Sir Harry Manley, who was *aut* a huntsman *aut nullus*. He measured a man by the 'length of his fork', not by the expression of his countenance, or the shape of his head. But as Sir Harry was wont to observe, there was such a thing as too long a fork, so his approbation was withheld until he had seen a man on horseback, and if his seat there was square and easy, his hand light, and his courage good, Sir Harry hailed him as a brother.

Mr Higgins attended the first meet of the season, not as a subscriber but as an amateur. The Barford huntsmen piqued themselves on their bold riding, and their knowledge of the country came by nature, yet this new strange man, whom nobody knew, was in at the death, sitting on his horse, both well breathed and calm, without a hair turned on the sleek skin of the latter, supremely addressing the old huntsman as he hacked off the tail of the fox, and he, the old man, who was testy even under Sir Harry's slightest rebuke, and flew out on any other member of the hunt that dared to utter a word against his sixty years' experience as stable-boy, groom, poacher, and what not—he, old Isaac Wormeley, was meekly listening to the wisdom of this stranger, only now and then giving one of his quick, up-turning, cunning glances, not unlike the sharp o'er-canny looks of the poor deceased Reynard, round whom the hounds were howling, unadmonished by the short whip, which was now tucked into Wormeley's well-worn pocket. When Sir Harry rode into the copse—full of dead brushwood and wet tangled grass—and was followed by the members of the hunt, as one by one they cantered past, Mr Higgins took off his cap and bowed—half deferentially, half insolently—with a lurking smile in the corner of his eye at the dis-

comfited looks of one or two of the laggards 'A famous run, sir,' said Sir Harry 'The first time you have hunted in our country, but I hope we shall see you often '

'I hope to become a member of the hunt, sir,' said Mr Higgins

'Most happy—proud, I am sure, to receive so daring a rider among us You took the Cropper-gate, I fancy, while some of our friends here'—scowling at one or two cowards by way of finishing his speech 'Allow me to introduce myself—master of the hounds ' He fumbled in his waistcoat pocket for the card on which his name was formally inscribed 'Some of our friends here are kind enough to come home with me to dinner, might I ask for the honour?'

'My name is Higgins,' replied the stranger, bowing low 'I am only lately come to occupy the White House at Barford, and I have not as yet presented my letters of introduction '

'Hang it!' replied Sir Harry, 'a man with a seat like yours, and that good brush in your hand, might ride up to any door in the county (I'm a Leicestershire man!), and be a welcome guest Mr Higgins, I shall be proud to become better acquainted with you over my dinner table '

Mr Higgins knew pretty well how to improve the acquaintance thus begun He could sing a good song, tell a good story, and was well up in practical jokes, with plenty of that keen worldly sense, which seems like an instinct in some men, and which in this case taught him on whom he might play off such jokes, with impunity from their resentment, and with a security of applause from the more boisterous, vehement, or prosperous At the end of twelve months Mr Robinson Higgins was, out-and-out, the most popular member of the Barford hunt, had beaten all the others by a couple of lengths as his first patron, Sir Harry, observed one evening, when they were just leaving the dinner-table of an old hunting squire in the neighbourhood

'Because, you know,' said Squire Hearn, holding Sir Harry by the button—'I mean, you see, this young

spark is looking sweet upon Catherine, and she's a good girl, and will have ten thousand pounds down, the day she's married, by her mother's will, and—excuse me, Sir Harry—but I should not like my girl to throw herself away'

Though Sir Harry had a long ride before him, and but the early and short light of a new moon to take it in, his kind heart was so much touched by Squire Hearn's trembling, tearful anxiety, that he stopped and turned back into the dining-room to say, with more asseverations than I care to give

'My good Squire, I may say, I know that man pretty well by this time, and a better fellow never existed If I had twenty daughters he should have the pick of them'

Squire Hearn never thought of asking the grounds for his old friend's opinion of Mr Higgins, it had been given with too much earnestness for any doubts to cross the old man's mind as to the possibility of its not being well founded Mr Hearn was not a doubter, or a thinker, or suspicious by nature, it was simply his love for Catherine, his only daughter, that prompted his anxiety in this case, and, after what Sir Harry had said, the old man could totter with an easy mind, though not with very steady legs, into the drawing-room, where his bonny, blushing daughter Catherine and Mr Higgins stood close together on the hearth-rug—he whispering, she listening with downcast eyes She looked so happy, so like her dead mother had looked when the Squire was a young man, that all his thought was how to please her most His son and heir was about to be married, and bring his wife to live with the Squire, Barford and the White House were not distant an hour's ride, and, even as these thoughts passed through his mind, he asked Mr Higgins, if he could stay all night—the young moon was already set—the roads would be dark—and Catherine looked up with a pretty anxiety, which, however, had not much doubt in it, for the answer

With every encouragement of this kind from the old Squire, it took everybody rather by surprise when, one morning, it was discovered that Miss Catherine Hearn

was missing, and when, according to the usual fashion in such cases, a note was found, saying that she had eloped with 'the man of her heart', and gone to Gretna Green, no one could imagine why she could not quietly have stopped at home and been married in the parish church She had always been a romantic, sentimental girl, very pretty and very affectionate, and very much spoiled, and very much wanting in common sense Her indulgent father was deeply hurt at this want of confidence in his never-varying affection, but when his son came, hot with indignation from the Baronet's (his future father-in-law's house, where every form of law and of ceremony was to accompany his own impending marriage), Squire Hearn pleaded the cause of the young couple with imploring cogency, and protested that it was a piece of spirit in his daughter, which he admired and was proud of However, it ended with Mr Nathaniel Hearn's declaring that he and his wife would have nothing to do with his sister and her husband 'Wait till you've seen him, Nat!' said the old Squire, trembling with his distressful anticipations of family discord 'He's an excuse for any girl Only ask Sir Harry's opinion of him' 'Confound Sir Harry! So that a man sits his horse well, Sir Harry cares nothing about anything else Who is this man—this fellow? Where does he come from? What are his means? Who are his family?'

'He comes from the south—Surrey or Somersetshire, I forget which, and he pays his way well and liberally There's not a tradesman in Barford but says he cares no more for money than for water, he spends like a prince, Nat I don't know who his family are, but he seals with a coat of arms, which may tell you if you want to know—and he goes regularly to collect his rents from his estates in the south Oh, Nat! if you would but be friendly, I should be as well pleased with Kitty's marriage as any father in the county'

Mr Nathaniel Hearn gloomed, and muttered an oath or two to himself The poor old father was reaping the consequences of his weak indulgence to his two children Mr and Mrs Nathaniel Hearn kept apart from Catherine

and her husband, and Squire Hearn durst never ask them to Levison Hall, though it was his own house Indeed, he stole away as if he were a culprit whenever he went to visit the White House, and if he passed a night there, he was fain to equivocate when he returned home the next day, an equivocation which was well interpreted by the surly, proud Nathaniel But the younger Mr and Mrs Hearn were the only people who did not visit at the White House Mr and Mrs Higgins were decidedly more popular than their brother and sister-in-law She made a very pretty, sweet-tempered hostess, and her education had not been such as to make her intolerant of any want of refinement in the associates who gathered round her husband She had gentle smiles for towns people as well as county people, and unconsciously played an admirable second in her husband's project of making himself universally popular

But there is some one to make ill-natured remarks, and draw ill-natured conclusions from very simple premises, in every place, and in Barford this bird of ill-omen was a Miss Pratt She did not hunt—so Mr Higgins's admirable riding did not call out her admiration She did not drink—so the well-selected wines, so lavishly dispensed among his guests, could never mollify Miss Pratt She could not bear comic songs, or buffo stories—so, in that way, her approbation was impregnable And these three secrets of popularity constituted Mr Higgins's great charm Miss Pratt sat and watched Her face looked immovably grave at the end of any of Mr Higgins's best stories, but there was a keen, needle-like glance of her unwinking little eyes, which Mr Higgins felt rather than saw, and which made him shiver, even on a hot day, when it fell upon him Miss Pratt was a dissenter, and, to propitiate this female Mordecai, Mr Higgins asked the dissenting minister whose services she attended, to dinner, kept himself and his company in good order, gave a handsome donation to the poor of the chapel All in vain —Miss Pratt stirred not a muscle more of her face towards graciousness, and Mr Higgins was conscious that, in spite of all his open efforts to captivate Mr Davis

there was a secret influence on the other side, throwing in doubts and suspicions, and evil interpretations of all he said or did Miss Pratt, the little, plain old maid, living on eighty pounds a year, was the thorn in the popular Mr Higgins's side, although she had never spoken one uncivil word to him, indeed, on the contrary, had treated him with a stiff and elaborate civility

The thorn—the grief to Mrs Higgins was this They had no children! Oh! how she would stand and envy the careless, busy motion of half a dozen children, and then, when observed, move on with a deep, deep sigh of yearning regret But it was as well

It was noticed that Mr Higgins was remarkably careful of his health He ate, drank, took exercise rested, by some secret rules of his own, occasionally bursting into an excess, it is true, but only on rare occasions—such as when he returned from visiting his estates in the south, and collecting his rents That unusual exertion and fatigue—for there were no stage-coaches within forty miles of Barford, and he, like most country gentlemen of that day, would have preferred riding if there had been—seemed to require some strange excess to compensate for it, and rumours went through the town that he shut himself up, and drank enormously for some days after his return But no one was admitted to these orgies

One day—they remembered it well afterwards—the hounds met not far from the town, and the fox was found in a part of the wild heath, which was beginning to be enclosed by a few of the more wealthy townspeople, who were desirous of building themselves houses rather more in the country than those they had hitherto lived in Among these, the principal was a Mr Dudgeon, the attorney of Barford, and the agent for all the county families about The firm of Dudgeon had managed the leases, the marriage-settlements, and the wills, of the neighbourhood for generations Mr Dudgeon's father had the responsibility of collecting the landowners' rents just as the present Mr Dudgeon had at the time of which I speak and as his son and his son's son have done since Their business was an hereditary estate to them, and

with something of the old feudal feeling was mixed a kind of proud humility at their position towards the squires whose family secrets they had mastered, and the mysteries of whose fortunes and estates were better known to the Messrs Dudgeon than to themselves

Mr John Dudgeon had built himself a house on Wildbury Heath, a mere cottage as he called it but though only two stories high, it spread out far and wide, and workpeople from Derby had been sent for on purpose to make the inside as complete as possible The gardens too were exquisite in arrangement, if not very extensive, and not a flower was grown in them but of the rarest species It must have been somewhat of a mortification to the owner of this dainty place when, on the day of which I speak, the fox, after a long race, during which he had described a circle of many miles, took refuge in the garden, but Mr Dudgeon put a good face on the matter when a gentleman hunter, with the careless insolence of the squires of those days and that place, rode across the velvet lawn, and tapping at the window of the dining-room with his whip-handle, asked permission—no! that is not it—rather, informed Mr Dudgeon of their intention—to enter his garden in a body, and have the fox unearthed Mr Dudgeon compelled himself to smile assent, with the grace of a masculine Griselda, and then he hastily gave orders to have all that the house afforded of provision set out for luncheon, guessing rightly enough that a six hours' run would give even homely fare an acceptable welcome He bore without wincing the entrance of the dirty boots into his exquisitely clean rooms, he only felt grateful for the care with which Mr Higgins strode about, laboriously and noiselessly moving on the tip of his toes, as he reconnoitred the rooms with a curious eye

'I'm going to build a house myself, Dudgeon, and, upon my word, I don't think I could take a better model than yours '

'Oh! my poor cottage would be too small to afford any hints for such a house as you would wish to build, Mr Higgins,' replied Mr Dudgeon, gently rubbing his hands nevertheless at the compliment

'Not at all! not at all! Let me see You have dining-room, drawing-room,'—he hesitated, and Mr Dudgeon filled up the blank as he expected

'Four sitting-rooms and the bedrooms But allow me to show you over the house I confess I took some pains in arranging it, and, though far smaller than what you would require, it may, nevertheless, afford you some hints'

So they left the eating gentlemen with their mouths and their plates quite full, and the scent of the fox overpowering that of the hasty rashers of ham, and they carefully inspected all the ground-floor rooms Then Mr Dudgeon said

'If you are not tired, Mr Higgins—it is rather my hobby, so you must pull me up if you are—we will go upstairs, and I will show you my sanctum'

Mr Dudgeon's sanctum was the centre room, over the porch, which formed a balcony, and which was carefully filled with choice flowers in pots Inside, there were all kinds of elegant contrivances for hiding the real strength of all the boxes and chests required by the particular nature of Mr Dudgeon's business for although his office was in Barford, he kept (as he informed Mr Higgins) what was the most valuable here, as being safer than an office which was locked up and left every night But as Mr Higgins reminded him with a sly poke in the side, when next they met, his own house was not over-secure A fortnight after the gentlemen of the Barford hunt lunched there, Mr Dudgeon's strong-box,—in his sanctum upstairs, with the mysterious spring-bolt to the window invented by himself, and the secret of which was only known to the inventor and a few of his most intimate friends, to whom he had proudly shown it,—this strong-box, containing the collected Christmas rents of half a dozen landlords (there was then no bank nearer than Derby), was rifled, and the secretly rich Mr Dudgeon had to stop his agent in his purchases of paintings by Flemish artists, because the money was required to make good the missing rents

The Dogberries and Verges of those days were quite

incapable of obtaining any clue to the robber or robbers, and though one or two vagrants were taken up and brought before Mr Dunover and Mr Higgins, the magistrates who usually attended in the court-room at Barford, there was no evidence brought against them, and after a couple of nights' durance in the lock-ups they were set at liberty But it became a standing joke with Mr Higgins to ask Mr Dudgeon, from time to time, whether he could recommend him a place of safety for his valuables, or, if he had made any more inventions lately for securing houses from robbers

About two years after this time—about seven years after Mr Higgins had been married—one Tuesday evening, Mr Davis was sitting reading the news in the coffee-room of the George Inn He belonged to a club of gentlemen who met there occasionally to play at whist, to read what few newspapers and magazines were published in those days, to chat about the market at Derby, and prices all over the country This Tuesday night it was a black frost, and few people were in the room Mr Davis was anxious to finish an article in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, indeed, he was making extracts from it, intending to answer it, and yet unable with his small income to purchase a copy So he stayed late, it was past nine, and at ten o'clock the room was closed But while he wrote, Mr Higgins came in He was pale and haggard with cold Mr Davis, who had had for some time sole possession of the fire, moved politely on one side, and handed to the new-comer the sole London newspaper which the room afforded Mr Higgins accepted it, and made some remark on the intense coldness of the weather, but Mr Davis was too full of his article, and intended reply, to fall into conversation readily Mr Higgins hitched his chair nearer to the fire, and put his feet on the fender, giving an audible shudder He put the newspaper on one end of the table near him, and sat gazing into the red embers of the fire, crouching down over them as if his very marrow were chilled At length he said

'There is no account of the murder at Bath in that

paper?' Mr Davis, who had finished taking his notes, and was preparing to go, stopped short, and asked

'Has there been a murder at Bath? No! I have not seen anything of it—who was murdered?'

'Oh! it was a shocking, terrible murder!' said Mr Higgins, not raising his look from the fire, but gazing on with his eyes dilated till the whites were seen all round them 'A terrible, terrible murder! I wonder what will become of the murderer? I can fancy the red glowing centre of that fire—look and see how infinitely distant it seems, and how the distance magnifies it into something awful and unquenchable'

'My dear sir, you are feverish, how you shake and shiver!' said Mr Davis, thinking privately that his companion had symptoms of fever, and that he was wandering in his mind

'Oh, no!' said Mr Higgins 'I am not feverish It is the night which is so cold' And for a time he talked with Mr Davis about the article in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, for he was rather a reader himself, and could take more interest in Mr Davis's pursuits than most of the people at Barford At length it drew near to ten, and Mr Davis rose up to go home to his lodgings

'No, Davis, don't go I want you here We will have a bottle of port together, and that will put Saunders into good humour I want to tell you about this murder,' he continued, dropping his voice, and speaking hoarse and low 'She was an old woman, and he killed her, sitting reading her Bible by her own fireside!' He looked at Mr Davis with a strange searching gaze, as if trying to find some sympathy in the horror which the idea presented to him

'Who do you mean, my dear sir? What is this murder you are so full of? No one has been murdered here'

'No, you fool! I tell you it was in Bath!' said Mr Higgins, with sudden passion, and then calming himself to most velvet-smoothness of manner, he laid his hand on Mr Davis's knee, there, as they sat by the fire, and gently detaining him, began the narration of the crime he was so full of, but his voice and manner were

constrained to a stony quietude he never looked in Mr Davis's face, once or twice, as Mr Davis remembered afterwards, his grip tightened like a compressing vice

'She lived in a small house in a quiet old-fashioned street, she and her maid People said she was a good old woman, but for all that, she hoarded and hoarded, and never gave to the poor Mr Davis, it is wicked not to give to the poor—wicked—wicked, is it not? I always give to the poor, for once I read in the Bible that "Charity covereth a multitude of sins" The wicked old woman never gave, but hoarded her money, and saved, and saved Some one heard of it, I say she threw a temptation in his way, and God will punish her for it And this man—or it might be a woman, who knows?—and this person—heard also that she went to church in the mornings, and her maid in the afternoons, and so—while the maid was at church, and the street and the house quite still, and the darkness of a winter afternoon coming on—she was nodding over the Bible—and that, mark you! is a sin, and one that God will avenge sooner or later, and a step came in the dusk up the stair, and that person I told you of stood in the room At first he—no! At first, it is supposed—for, you understand, all this is mere guess-work—it is supposed that he asked her civilly enough to give him her money, or to tell him where it was, but the old miser defied him, and would not ask for mercy and give up her keys, even when he threatened her, but looked him in the face as if he had been a baby—Oh, God! Mr Davis, I once dreamt when I was a little innocent boy that I should commit a crime like this, and I wakened up crying, and my mother comforted me—that is the reason I tremble so now—that and the cold, for it is very very cold!'

'But did he murder the old lady?' asked Mr Davis 'I beg your pardon, sir, but I am interested by your story'

'Yes! he cut her throat, and there she lies yet in her quiet little parlour, with her face upturned and all ghastly white, in the middle of a pool of blood Mr Davis, this wine is no better than water, I must have some brandy!'

Mr Davis was horror-struck by the story, which seemed to have fascinated him as much as it had done his companion

'Have they got any clue to the murderer?' said he Mr Higgins drank down half a tumbler of raw brandy before he answered

'No! no clue whatever They will never be able to discover him, and I should not wonder, Mr Davis—I should not wonder if he repented after all, and did bitter penance for his crime, and if so—will there be mercy for him at the last day?'

'God knows!' said Mr Davis, with solemnity 'It is an awful story,' continued he, rousing himself, 'I hardly like to leave this warm light room and go out into the darkness after hearing it But it must be done,' buttoning on his greatcoat—'I can only say I hope and trust they will find out the murderer and hang him —If you'll take my advice, Mr Higgins, you'll have your bed warmed, and drink a treacle-posset just the last thing, and, if you'll allow me, I'll send you my answer to Philologus before it goes up to old Urban'

The next morning, Mr Davis went to call on Miss Pratt, who was not very well, and, by way of being agreeable and entertaining, he related to her all he had heard the night before about the murder at Bath, and really he made a very pretty connected story out of it, and interested Miss Pratt very much in the fate of the old lady—partly because of a similarity in their situations, for she also privately hoarded money, and had but one servant, and stopped at home alone on Sunday afternoons to allow her servant to go to church

'And when did all this happen?' she asked

'I don't know if Mr Higgins named the day, and yet I think it must have been on this very last Sunday'

'And to-day is Wednesday Ill news travels fast'

'Yes, Mr Higgins thought it might have been in the London newspaper

'That it could never be Where did Mr Higgins learn all about it?'

'I don't know, I did not ask I think he only came

home yesterday he had been south to collect his rents, somebody said'

Miss Pratt grunted She used to vent her dislike and suspicions of Mr Higgins in a grunt whenever his name was mentioned

'Well, I shan't see you for some days Godfrey Merton has asked me to go and stay with him and his sister, and I think it will do me good Besides,' added she, 'these winter evenings—and these murderers at large in the country—I don't quite like living with only Peggy to call to in case of need'

Miss Pratt went to stay with her cousin, Mr Merton He was an active magistrate, and enjoyed his reputation as such One day he came in, having just received his letters

'Bad account of the morals of your little town here Jessy!' said he, touching one of his letters 'You've either a murderer among you, or some friend of a murderer Here's a poor old lady at Bath had her throat cut last Sunday week, and I've a letter from the Home Office, asking to lend them "my very efficient aid", as they are pleased to call it, towards finding out the culprit It seems he must have been thirsty, and of a comfortable jolly turn, for before going to his horrid work he tapped a barrel of ginger wine the old lady had set by to work, and he wrapped the spigot round with a piece of a letter taken out of his pocket, as may be supposed, and this piece of a letter was found afterwards, there are only these letters on the outside, "*ns, Esq , -arford, -egworth,*" which some one has ingeniously made out to mean Barford, near Kegworth On the other side there is some allusion to a race-horse, I conjecture, though the name is singular enough "Church-and-King-and-down-with-the-Rump"'

Miss Pratt caught at this name immediately, it had hurt her feelings as a dissenter only a few months ago, and she remembered it well

'Mr Nat Hearn has—or had (as I am speaking in the witness-box, as it were, I must take care of my tenses), a horse with that ridiculous name'

'Mr Nat Hearn,' repeated Mr Merton, making a note

of the intelligence, then he recurred to his letter from the Home Office again

'There is also a piece of a small key, broken in the futile attempt to open a desk—well, well Nothing more of consequence The letter is what we must rely upon'

'Mr Davis said that Mr Higgins told him—' Miss Pratt began

'Higgins!' exclaimed Mr Merton, '*ns* Is it Higgins, the blustering fellow that ran away with Nat Hearn's sister?'

'Yes!' said Miss Pratt 'But though he has never been a favourite of mine—'

'*ns*,' repeated Mr Merton 'It is too horrible to think of, a member of the hunt—kind old Squire Hearn's son-in-law! Who else have you in Barford with names that end in *ns*?'

There's Jackson, and Higginson, and Blenkinsop, and Davis, and Jones Cousin! One thing strikes me—how did Mr Higgins know all about it to tell Mr Davis on Tuesday what had happened on Sunday afternoon?'

There is no need to add much more Those curious in lives of the highwayman may find the name of Higgins as conspicuous among those annals as that of Claude Duval Kate Hearn's husband collected his rents on the highway, like many another 'gentleman' of the day, but, having been unlucky in one or two of his adventures, and hearing exaggerated accounts of the hoarded wealth of the old lady at Bath, he was led on from robbery to murder, and was hung for his crime at Derby, in 1775

He had not been an unkind husband, and his poor wife took lodgings in Derby to be near him in his last moments—his awful last moments Her old father went with her everywhere but into her husband's cell, and wrung her heart by constantly accusing himself of having promoted her marriage with a man of whom he knew so little He abdicated his squireship in favour of his son Nathaniel Nat was prosperous, and the helpless silly father could be of no use to him, but to his widowed daughter the foolish fond old man was all in all, her knight, her protector, her companion—her most faithful

loving companion. Only he ever declined assuming the office of her counsellor—shaking his head sadly, and saying—

'Ah! Kate, Kate! if I had had more wisdom to have advised thee better, thou need'st not have been an exile here in Brussels, shrinking from the sight of every English person as if they knew thy story.'

I saw the White House not a month ago; it was to let, perhaps for the twentieth time since Mr. Higgins occupied it; but still the tradition goes in Barford that once upon a time a highwayman lived there, and amassed untold treasures, and that the ill-gotten wealth yet remains walled up in some unknown concealed chamber; but in what part of the house no one knows.

Will any of you become tenants, and try to find out this mysterious closet? I can furnish the exact address to any applicant who wishes for it.

DR JOHN BROWN

1810–1882

RAB AND HIS FRIENDS

[From *Horae Subsecivae*, Second Series 1859]

FOUR-AND-THIRTY years ago, Bob Ainslie and I were coming up Infirmary Street from the High School, our heads together, and our arms intertwisted, as only lovers and boys know how, or why

When we got to the top of the street, and turned north, we espied a crowd at the Tron Church 'A dog-fight!' shouted Bob, and was off, and so was I, both of us all but praying that it might not be over before we got up! And is not this boy-nature? and human nature too? and don't we all wish a house on fire not to be out before we see it? Dogs like fighting, old Isaac says they 'delight' in it, and for the best of all reasons, and boys are not cruel because they like to see the fight They see three of the great cardinal virtues of dog or man—courage, endurance, and skill—in intense action This is very different from a love of making dogs fight, and enjoying, and aggravating, and making gain by their pluck A boy—be he ever so fond himself of fighting, if he be a good boy, hates and despises all this, but he would have run off with Bob and me fast enough it is a natural and a not wicked interest that all boys and men have in witnessing intense energy in action

Does any curious and finely-ignorant woman wish to know how Bob's eye at a glance announced a dog-fight to his brain? He did not, he could not, see the dogs fighting, it was a flash of an inference, a rapid induction The crowd round a couple of dogs fighting is a crowd masculine mainly, with an occasional active, compassionate woman, fluttering wildly round the outside, and using her tongue and her hands freely upon the men, as

so many 'brutes', it is a crowd annular, compact, and mobile, a crowd centripetal, having its eyes and its heads all bent downwards and inwards, to one common focus

Well, Bob and I are up, and find it is not over a small thoroughbred, white bull-terrier, is busy throttling a large shepherd's dog, unaccustomed to war, but not to be trifled with They are hard at it, the scientific little fellow doing his work in great style, his pastoral enemy fighting wildly, but with the sharpest of teeth and a great courage Science and breeding, however, soon had their own the Game Chicken, as the premature Bob called him, working his way up, took his final grip of poor Yarrow's throat,—and he lay gasping and done for His master, a brown, handsome, big young shepherd from Tweedsmuir, would have liked to have knocked down any man, would 'drink up Esil, or eat a crocodile,' for that part, if he had a chance it was no use kicking the little dog, that would only make him hold the closer Many were the means shouted out in mouthfuls, of the best possible ways of ending it 'Water!' but there was none near, and many cried for it who might have got it from the well at Blackfriars Wynd 'Bite the tail!' and a large, vague, benevolent, middle-aged man, more desirous than wise, with some struggle got the bushy end of *Yarrow's* tail into his ample mouth, and bit it with all his might This was more than enough for the much-enduring, much-perspiring shepherd, who, with a gleam of joy over his broad visage, delivered a terrific facer upon our large, vague, benevolent, middle-aged friend, —who went down like a shot

Still the Chicken holds, death not far off 'Snuff! a pinch of snuff!' observed a calm, highly-dressed young buck, with an eye-glass in his eye 'Snuff, indeed!' growled the angry crowd, affronted and glaring 'Snuff! a pinch of snuff!' again observes the buck, but with more urgency, whereupon were produced several open boxes, and from a mull which may have been at Culloden, he took a pinch, knelt down, and presented it to the nose of the Chicken The laws of physiology and of snuff

take their course, the Chicken sneezes, and Yarrow is free!

The young pastoral giant stalks off with Yarrow in his arms,—comforting him

But the Bull Terrier's blood is up, and his soul unsatisfied, he grips the first dog he meets, and discovering she is not a dog, in Homeric phrase, he makes a brief sort of *amende*, and is off The boys, with Bob and me at their head, are after him down Niddry Street he goes, bent on mischief, up the Cowgate like an arrow—Bob and I, and our small men, panting behind

There, under the single arch of the South Bridge, is a huge mastiff, sauntering down the middle of the causeway, as if with his hands in his pockets he is old, grey, brindled, as big as a little Highland bull, and has the Shakespearian dewlaps shaking as he goes

The Chicken makes straight at him, and fastens on his throat To our astonishment, the great creature does nothing but stand still, hold himself up, and roar—yes, roar, a long, serious, remonstrative roar How is this? Bob and I are up to them *He is muzzled!* The bailies had proclaimed a general muzzling, and his master, studying strength and economy mainly, had encompassed his huge jaws in a home-made apparatus, constructed out of the leather of some ancient *breechin* His mouth was open as far as it could, his lips curled up in rage—a sort of terrible grin, his teeth gleaming, ready, from out the darkness, the strap across his mouth tense as a bowstring, his whole frame stiff with indignation and surprise, his roar asking us all round, 'Did you ever see the like of this?' He looked a statue of anger and astonishment, done in Aberdeen granite

We soon had a crowd the Chicken held on A knife!' cried Bob, and a cobbler gave him his knife you know the kind of knife, worn away obliquely to a point, and always keen I put its edge to the tense leather, it ran before it, and then!—one sudden jerk of that enormous head, a sort of dirty mist about his mouth, no noise,—and the bright and fierce little fellow is dropped, limp, and dead A solemn pause this was more than any of

us had bargained for I turned the little fellow over, and saw he was quite dead the mastiff had taken him by the small of the back like a rat, and broken it

He looked down at his victim appeased, ashamed, and amazed, snuffed him all over, stared at him, and taking a sudden thought, turned round and trotted off Bob took the dead dog up, and said, 'John, we'll bury him after tea ' 'Yes,' said I, and was off after the mastiff He made up the Cowgate at a rapid swing, he had forgotten some engagement He turned up the Candlemaker Row, and stopped at the Harrow Inn

There was a carrier's cart ready to start, and a keen, thin, impatient, black-a-vised little man, his hand at his grey horse's head, looking about angrily for something 'Rab, ye thief!' said he, aiming a kick at my great friend, who drew cringing up, and avoiding the heavy shoe with more agility than dignity, and watching his master's eye, slunk dismayed under the cart,—his ears down, and as much as he had of tail down too

What a man this must be—thought I—to whom my tremendous hero turns tail! The carrier saw the muzzle hanging, cut and useless, from his neck, and I eagerly told him the story, which Bob and I always thought, and still think, Homer, or King David, or Sir Walter, alone were worthy to rehearse The severe little man was mitigated, and condescended to say, 'Rab, ma man, puir Rabbie'—whereupon the stump of a tail rose up, the ears were cocked, the eyes filled, and were comforted, the two friends were reconciled 'Hupp!' and a stroke of the whip were given to Jess, and off went the three

Bob and I buried the Game Chicken that night (we had not much of a tea) in the back-green of his house, in Melville Street, No 17, with considerable gravity and silence, and being at the time in the Iliad, and, like all boys, Trojans, we called him Hector of course

Six years have passed,—a long time for a boy and a dog Bob Ainslie is off to the wars, I am a medical student, and clerk at Minto House Hospital

Rab I saw almost every week, on the Wednesday, and we had much pleasant intimacy. I found the way to his heart by frequent scratching of his huge head, and an occasional bone. When I did not notice him he would plant himself straight before me, and stand wagging that bud of a tail, and looking up, with his head a little to the one side. His master I occasionally saw; he used to call me 'Maister John', but was laconic as any Spartan.

One fine October afternoon, I was leaving the hospital, when I saw the large gate open, and in walked Rab, with that great and easy saunter of his. He looked as if taking general possession of the place; like the Duke of Wellington entering a subdued city, satiated with victory and peace. After him came Jess, now white from age, with her cart; and in it a woman carefully wrapped up—the carrier leading the horse anxiously, and looking back. When he saw me, James (for his name was James Noble) made a curt and grotesque 'boo', and said, 'Maister John, this is the mistress; she's got a trouble in her breest—some kind o' an income we're thinkin'.'

By this time I saw the woman's face; she was sitting on a sack filled with straw, with her husband's plaid round her, and his big-coat, with its large white metal buttons, over her feet.

I never saw a more unforgettable face—pale, serious, *lonely*[1], delicate, sweet, without being at all what we call fine. She looked sixty, and had on a mutch, white as snow, with its black ribbon; her silvery, smooth hair setting off her dark-grey eyes—eyes such as one sees only twice or thrice in a lifetime, full of suffering, full also of the overcoming of it: her eyebrows black and delicate[2], and her mouth firm, patient, and contented, which few mouths ever are.

[1] It is not easy giving this look by one word; it was expressive of her being so much of her life alone.

[2] Black brows, they say,
Become some women best, so that there be not
Too much hair there, *but in a semicircle,*
Or a half moon made with a pen.

A Winter's Tale

As I have said, I never saw a more beautiful countenance, or one more subdued to settled quiet. 'Ailie,' said James, 'this is Maister John, the young doctor, Rab's freend, ye ken. We often speak aboot you, doctor.' She smiled, and made a movement, but said nothing, and prepared to come down, putting her plaid aside and rising. Had Solomon, in all his glory, been handing down the Queen of Sheba at his palace gate, he could not have done it more daintily, more tenderly, more like a gentleman, than did James the Howgate carrier, when he lifted down Ailie his wife. The contrast of his small, swarthy, weather-beaten, keen, worldly face to hers—pale, subdued, and beautiful—was something wonderful. Rab looked on, concerned and puzzled, but ready for anything that might turn up,—were it to strangle the nurse, the porter, or even me. Ailie and he seemed great friends.

'As I was sayin', she's got a kind o' trouble in her breest, doctor, wull ye tak' a look at it?' We walked into the consulting room, all four, Rab grim and comic, willing to be happy and confidential if cause could be shown, willing also to be the reverse, on the same terms. Ailie sat down, undid her open gown and her lawn handkerchief round her neck, and, without a word, showed me her right breast. I looked at and examined it carefully—she and James watching me, and Rab eyeing all three. What could I say? there it was, that had once been so soft, so shapely, so white, so gracious and bountiful, so 'full of all blessed conditions,'—hard as a stone, a centre of horrid pain, making that pale face, with its grey, lucid, reasonable eyes, and its sweet resolved mouth, express the full measure of suffering overcome. Why was that gentle, modest, sweet woman, clean and lovable, condemned by God to bear such a burden?

I got her away to bed. 'May Rab and me bide?' said James. '*You* may, and Rab, if he will behave himself.' 'I'se warrant he's do that, doctor', and in slunk the faithful beast. I wish you could have seen him. There are no such dogs now. He belonged to a lost tribe. As I have said, he was brindled, and grey like Rubislaw

granite, his hair short, hard, and close, like a lion's, his body thick-set, like a little bull—a sort of compressed Hercules of a dog He must have been ninety pounds' weight, at the least, he had a large blunt head, his muzzle black as night, his mouth blacker than any night, a tooth or two—being all he had—gleaming out of his jaws of darkness His head was scarred with the records of old wounds, a sort of series of fields of battle all over it, one eye out one ear cropped as close as was Archbishop Leighton's father's, the remaining eye had the power of two, and above it, and in constant communication with it, was a tattered rag of an ear, which was for ever unfurling itself, like an old flag and then that bud of a tail, about one inch long, if it could in any sense be said to be long, being as broad as long—the mobility, the instantaneousness of that bud were very funny and surprising, and its expressive twinklings and winkings, the intercommunications between the eye, the ear, and it, were of the oddest and swiftest

Rab had the dignity and simplicity of great size, and having fought his way all along the road to absolute supremacy, he was as mighty in his own line as Julius Caesar or the Duke of Wellington, and had the gravity[1] of all great fighters

You must have often observed the likeness of certain men to certain animals, and of certain dogs to men Now, I never look at Rab without thinking of the great Baptist preacher, Andrew Fuller[2] The same large,

[1] A Highland game-keeper, when asked why a certain terrier, of singular pluck, was so much more solemn than the other dogs, said, 'Oh, Sir, life 's full o' sariousness to him—he just never can get eneuch o' fechtin '

[2] Fuller was, in early life, when a farmer lad at Soham, famous as a boxer, not quarrelsome, but not without 'the stern delight' a man of strength and courage feels in their exercise Dr Charles Stewart of Dunearn, whose rare gifts and graces as a physician, a divine, a scholar, and a gentleman, live only in the memory of those few who knew and survive him, liked to tell how Mr Fuller used to say, that when he was in the pulpit, and saw a *buirdly* man come along the passage, he would instinctively draw himself up, measure his imaginary

heavy, menacing, combative, sombre, honest countenance, the same deep inevitable eye the same look, as of thunder asleep, but ready,—neither a dog nor a man to be trifled with

Next day, my master, the surgeon, examined Ailie There was no doubt it must kill her, and soon It could be removed—it might never return—it would give her speedy relief—she should have it done She curtsied, looked at James, and said, 'When?' 'To-morrow,' said the kind surgeon—a man of few words She and James and Rab and I retired I noticed that he and she spoke little, but seemed to anticipate everything in each other The following day, at noon, the students came in, hurrying up the great stair At the first landing-place, on a small well-known black board, was a bit of paper fastened by wafers, and many remains of old wafers beside it On the paper were the words,—'An operation to-day —J B *Clerk*'

Up ran the youths, eager to secure good places in they crowded, full of interest and talk 'What's the case?' 'Which side is it?'

Don't think them heartless, they are neither better nor worse than you or I they get over their professional horrors, and into their proper work, and in them pity, as an *emotion*, ending in itself or at best in tears and a long-drawn breath, lessens,—while pity, as a *motive*, is quickened, and gains power and purpose It is well for poor human nature that it is so

The operating theatre is crowded, much talk and fun, and all the cordiality and stir of youth The surgeon with his staff of assistants is there In comes Ailie, one look at her quiets and abates the eager students That beautiful old woman is too much for them, they sit down, and are dumb, and gaze at her These rough boys feel the power of her presence She walks in quickly, but without haste, dressed in her mutch, her neckerchief, her

antagonist, and forecast how he would deal with him, his hands meanwhile condensing into fists, and tending to 'square' He must have been a hard hitter if he boxed as he preached—what 'The Fancy' would call 'an ugly customer'

white dimity short-gown, her black bombazeen petticoat, showing her white worsted stockings and her carpet-shoes Behind her was James with Rab James sat down in the distance, and took that huge and noble head between his knees Rab looked perplexed and dangerous, for ever cocking his ear and dropping it as fast

Ailie stepped up on a seat, and laid herself on the table, as her friend the surgeon told her, arranged herself, gave a rapid look at James, shut her eyes, rested herself on me, and took my hand The operation was at once begun, it was necessarily slow, and chloroform—one of God's best gifts to his suffering children—was then unknown The surgeon did his work The pale face showed its pain, but was still and silent Rab's soul was working within him, he saw that something strange was going on,—blood flowing from his mistress, and she suffering, his ragged ear was up, and importunate, he growled and gave now and then a sharp impatient yelp, he would have liked to have done something to that man But James had him firm, and gave him a *glower* from time to time, and an intimation of a possible kick,—all the better for James, it kept his eye and his mind off Ailie

It is over she is dressed, steps gently and decently down from the table, looks for James, then, turning to the surgeon and the students, she curtsies,—and in a low, clear voice, begs their pardon if she has behaved ill The students—all of us—wept like children, the surgeon happed her up carefully,—and, resting on James and me, Ailie went to her room, Rab following We put her to bed James took off his heavy shoes, crammed with tackets, heel-capt and toe-capt, and put them carefully under the table, saying, 'Maister John, I'm for nane o' yer strynge nurse bodies for Ailie I'll be her nurse, and I'll gang aboot on my stockin' soles as canny as pussy' And so he did, and handy and clever, and swift and tender as any woman, was that horny-handed, snell, peremptory little man Everything she got he gave her he seldom slept, and often I saw his small shrewd eyes out of the darkness, fixed on her As before, they spoke little

Rab behaved well, never moving, showing us how meek and gentle he could be, and occasionally, in his sleep, letting us know that he was demolishing some adversary He took a walk with me every day, generally to the Candlemaker Row, but he was sombre and mild, declined doing battle, though some fit cases offered, and indeed submitted to sundry indignities, and was always very ready to turn, and came faster back, and trotted up the stair with much lightness, and went straight to that door

Jess, the mare, had been sent, with her weather-worn cart, to Howgate, and had doubtless her own dim and placid meditations and confusions, on the absence of her master and Rab, and her unnatural freedom from the road and her cart

For some days Ailie did well The wound healed 'by the first intention', for as James said, 'Oor Ailie's skin's ower clean to beil' The students came in quiet and anxious, and surrounded her bed She said she liked to see their young, honest faces The surgeon dressed her, and spoke to her in his own short kind way, pitying her through his eyes, Rab and James outside the circle,—Rab being now reconciled, and even cordial, and having made up his mind that as yet nobody required worrying, but, as you may suppose, *semper paratus*

So far well but, four days after the operation, my patient had a sudden and long shivering, a 'groosin'', as she called it I saw her soon after, her eyes were too bright, her cheek coloured, she was restless, and ashamed of being so, the balance was lost, mischief had begun On looking at the wound, a blush of red told the secret, her pulse was rapid, her breathing anxious and quick, she wasn't herself, as she said, and was vexed at her restlessness We tried what we could James did everything, was everywhere, never in the way, never out of it, Rab subsided under the table into a dark place, and was motionless, all but his eye, which followed every one Ailie got worse, began to wander in her mind, gently, was more demonstrative in her ways to James, rapid in her questions, and sharp at times He was vexed, and

said, 'She was never that way afore, no, never' For a time she knew her head was wrong, and was always asking our pardon—the dear gentle old woman then delirium set in strong, without pause Her brain gave way, and then came that terrible spectacle,

> The intellectual power, through words and things,
> Went sounding on its dim and perilous way,

she sang bits of old songs and Psalms, stopping suddenly, mingling the Psalms of David, and the diviner words of his Son and Lord, with homely odds and ends and scraps of ballads

Nothing more touching, or in a sense more strangely beautiful, did I ever witness Her tremulous, rapid, affectionate, eager, Scotch voice,—the swift, aimless, bewildered mind, the baffled utterance, the bright and perilous eye, some wild words, some household cares, something for James, the names of the dead, Rab called rapidly and in a 'fremyt' voice, and he starting up, surprised, and slinking off as if he were to blame somehow, or had been dreaming he heard Many eager questions and beseechings which James and I could make nothing of, and on which she seemed to set her all, and then sink back ununderstood It was very sad, but better than many things that are not called sad James hovered about, put out and miserable, but active and exact as ever, read to her, when there was a lull, short bits from the Psalms, prose and metre, chanting the latter in his own rude and serious way, showing great knowledge of the fit words, bearing up like a man, and doating over her as his 'ain Ailie' 'Ailie, ma woman!' 'Ma ain bonnie wee dawtie!'

The end was drawing on the golden bowl was breaking, the silver cord was fast being loosed—that *animula, blandula, vagula, hospes, comesque*, was about to flee The body and the soul—companions for sixty years—were being sundered, and taking leave She was walking, alone, through the valley of that shadow, into which one day we must all enter,—and yet she was not alone, for we know whose rod and staff were comforting her

One night she had fallen quiet, and, as we hoped, asleep, her eyes were shut We put down the gas, and sat watching her Suddenly she sat up in bed, and taking a bedgown which was lying on it rolled up, she held it eagerly to her breast,—to the right side We could see her eyes bright with a surprising tenderness and joy, bending over this bundle of clothes She held it as a woman holds her sucking child, opening out her night gown impatiently, and holding it close, and brooding over it, and murmuring foolish little words, as over one whom his mother comforteth, and who sucks and is satisfied It was pitiful and strange to see her wasted dying look, keen and yet vague—her immense love

'Preserve me!' groaned James, giving way And then she rocked back and forward, as if to make it sleep, hushing it, and wasting on it her infinite fondness 'Wae's me, doctor, I declare she's thinkin' it's that bairn' 'What bairn?' 'The only bairn we ever had, our wee Mysie, and she's in the Kingdom forty years and mair' It was plainly true the pain in the breast, telling its urgent story to a bewildered, ruined brain, was misread and mistaken, it suggested to her the uneasiness of a breast full of milk, and then the child, and so again once more they were together, and she had her ain wee Mysie in her bosom

This was the close She sank rapidly the delirium left her, but, as she whispered, she was 'clean silly', it was the lightening before the final darkness After having for some time lain still—her eyes shut, she said, 'James!' He came close to her, and lifting up her calm, clear, beautiful eyes, she gave him a long look, turned to me kindly but shortly, looked for Rab but could not see him, then turned to her husband again, as if she would never leave off looking, shut her eyes, and composed herself She lay for some time breathing quick, and passed away so gently, that when we thought she was gone, James, in his old-fashioned way, held the mirror to her face After a long pause, one small spot of dimness was breathed out, it vanished away, and never returned, leaving the blank clear darkness without a stain 'What

is our life? it is even a vapour, which appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away'

Rab all this time had been full awake and motionless he came forward beside us Ailie's hand, which James had held, was hanging down, it was soaked with his tears, Rab licked it all over carefully, looked at her, and returned to his place under the table

James and I sat, I don't know how long, but for some time,—saying nothing, he started up abruptly, and with some noise went to the table, and putting his right fore and middle fingers each into a shoe, pulled them out, and put them on, breaking one of the leather latchets, and muttering in anger, 'I never did the like o' that afore!'

I believe he never did, nor after either 'Rab!' he said roughly, and pointing with his thumb to the bottom of the bed Rab leapt up, and settled himself, his head and eye to the dead face 'Maister John, ye'll wait for me,' said the carrier, and disappeared in the darkness, thundering down stairs in his heavy shoes I ran to a front window there he was, already round the house, and out at the gate, fleeing like a shadow

I was afraid about him, and yet not afraid, so I sat down beside Rab, and being wearied, fell asleep I awoke from a sudden noise outside It was November, and there had been a heavy fall of snow Rab was *in statu quo*, he heard the noise too, and plainly knew it, but never moved I looked out, and there, at the gate, in the dim morning—for the sun was not up, was Jess and the cart,—a cloud of steam rising from the old mare I did not see James, he was already at the door, and came up the stairs, and met me It was less than three hours since he left, and he must have posted out—who knows how?—to Howgate, full nine miles off, yoked Jess, and driven her astonished into town He had an armful of blankets, and was streaming with perspiration He nodded to me, spread out on the floor two pairs of clean old blankets having at their corners, 'A G, 1794', in large letters in red worsted These were the initials of Alison Graeme, and James may have looked in at her from without—himself unseen but not unthought of—

when he was 'wat, wat, and weary', and after having walked many a mile over the hills, may have seen her sitting, while a' the lave were sleepin' ', and by the fire light working her name on the blankets, for her ain James's bed

He motioned Rab down, and taking his wife in his arms, laid her in the blankets, and happed her carefully and firmly up, leaving the face uncovered, and then lifting her, he nodded again sharply to me, and with a resolved but utterly miserable face, strode along the passage, and downstairs, followed by Rab I followed with a light, but he didn't need it I went out, holding stupidly the candle in my hand in the calm frosty air, we were soon at the gate I could have helped him, but I saw he was not to be meddled with, and he was strong, and did not need it He laid her down as tenderly, as safely, as he had lifted her out ten days before—as tenderly as when he had her first in his arms when she was only 'A G ',—sorted her, leaving that beautiful sealed face open to the heavens, and then, taking Jess by the head, he moved away He did not notice me, neither did Rab, who presided behind the cart

I stood till they passed through the long shadow of the College, and turned up Nicolson Street I heard the solitary cart sound through the streets, and die away and come again, and I returned, thinking of that company going up Libberton Brae, then along Roslin Muir, the morning light touching the Pentlands, and making them like on-looking ghosts, then down the hill through Auchindinny woods, past 'haunted Woodhouselee', and as daybreak came sweeping up the bleak Lammermuirs, and fell on his own door, the company would stop, and James would take the key, and lift Ailie up again, laying her on her own bed, and, having put Jess up, would return with Rab and shut the door

James buried his wife, with his neighbours mourning, Rab inspecting the solemnity from a distance It was snow, and that black ragged hole would look strange in the midst of the swelling spotless cushion of white James looked after everything, then rather suddenly fell ill, and

took to bed, was insensible when the doctor came, and soon died. A sort of low fever was prevailing in the village, and his want of sleep, his exhaustion, and his misery, made him apt to take it. The grave was not difficult to re-open. A fresh fall of snow had again made all things white and smooth; Rab once more looked on, and slunk home to the stable.

And what of Rab? I asked for him next week at the new carrier who got the goodwill of James's business and was now master of Jess and her cart. 'How's Rab?' He put me off, and said rather rudely, 'What's *your* business wi' the dowg?' I was not to be so put off. 'Where's Rab?' He, getting confused and red, and intermeddling with his hair, said, ''Deed, sir, Rab's deid.' 'Dead! what did he die of?' 'Weel, sir,' said he, getting redder, 'he didna exactly dee, he was killed. I had to brain him wi' a rack-pin; there was nae doin' wi' him. He lay in the trevise wi' the mear, and wadna come oot. I tempit him wi' kail and meat, but he wad tak naething, and keepit me frae feedin' the beast, and he was aye gur gurrin', and grup gruppin' me by the legs. I was laith to make awa wi' the auld dowg, his like wasna atween this and Thornhill,—but, 'deed, sir, I could do naething else.' I believed him. Fit end for Rab, quick and complete. His teeth and his friends gone, why should he keep the peace, and be civil?

He was buried on the braeface, near the burn, the children of the village—his companions, who used to make very free with him and sit on his ample stomach as he lay half asleep at the door in the sun—watching the solemnity from a distance.

CHARLES DICKENS

1812–1870

THE SEVEN POOR TRAVELLERS

IN THREE CHAPTERS

[From *Christmas Stories* 1860]

CHAPTER I

IN THE OLD CITY OF ROCHESTER

STRICTLY speaking, there were only six Poor Travellers, but, being a Traveller myself, though an idle one, and being withal as poor as I hope to be, I brought the number up to seven This word of explanation is due at once, for what says the inscription over the quaint old door?

RICHARD WATTS, Esq
by his Will, dated 22 Aug 1579,
founded this Charity
for Six poor Travellers,
who not being ROGUES, or PROCTORS,
May receive gratis for one Night,
Lodging, Entertainment,
and Fourpence each

It was in the ancient little city of Rochester in Kent, of all the good days in the year upon a Christmas Eve, that I stood reading this inscription over the quaint old door in question I had been wandering about the neighbouring Cathedral, and had seen the tomb of Richard Watts, with the effigy of worthy Master Richard starting out of it like a ship's figure-head, and I had felt that I could do no less, as I gave the Verger his fee, than inquire the way to Watts's Charity The way being very short and very plain, I had come prosperously to the inscription and the quaint old door

'Now,' said I to myself, as I looked at the knocker, 'I know I am not a Proctor, I wonder whether I am a Rogue!'

Upon the whole, though Conscience reproduced two or three pretty faces which might have had smaller attraction for a moral Goliath than they had had for me, who am but a Tom Thumb in that way, I came to the conclusion that I was not a Rogue. So, beginning to regard the establishment as in some sort my property, bequeathed to me and divers co-legatees, share and share alike, by the Worshipful Master Richard Watts, I stepped backward into the road to survey my inheritance.

I found it to be a clean white house, of a staid and venerable air, with the quaint old door already three times mentioned (an arched door), choice little long low lattice-windows, and a roof of three gables. The silent High Street of Rochester is full of gables, with old beams and timbers carved into strange faces. It is oddly garnished with a queer old clock that projects over the pavement out of a grave red-brick building, as if Time carried on business there, and hung out his sign. Sooth to say, he did an active stroke of work in Rochester, in the old days of the Romans, and the Saxons, and the Normans, and down to the times of King John, when the rugged castle—I will not undertake to say how many hundreds of years old then—was abandoned to the centuries of weather which have so defaced the dark apertures in its walls, that the ruin looks as if the rooks and daws had pecked its eyes out.

I was very well pleased, both with my property and its situation. While I was yet surveying it with growing content, I espied, at one of the upper lattices which stood open, a decent body, of a wholesome matronly appearance, whose eyes I caught inquiringly addressed to mine. They said so plainly, 'Do you wish to see the house?' that I answered aloud, 'Yes, if you please.' And within a minute the old door opened, and I bent my head, and went down two steps into the entry.

'This,' said the matronly presence, ushering me into a low room on the right, 'is where the Travellers sit by

the fire, and cook what bits of suppers they buy with their fourpences'

'Oh! Then they have no Entertainment?' said I For the inscription over the outer door was still running in my head, and I was mentally repeating, in a kind of tune, 'Lodging, entertainment, and fourpence each'

'They have a fire provided for 'em,' returned the matron,—a mighty civil person, not, as I could make out, overpaid, 'and these cooking utensils And this what's painted on a board is the rules for their behaviour They have their fourpences when they get their tickets from the steward over the way,—for I don't admit 'em myself, they must get their tickets first,—and sometimes one buys a rasher of bacon, and another a herring, and another a pound of potatoes, or what not Sometimes two or three of 'em will club their fourpences together, and make a supper that way But not much of anything is to be got for fourpence, at present, when provisions is so dear'

'True indeed,' I remarked I had been looking about the room, admiring its snug fireside at the upper end, its glimpse of the street through the low mullioned window, and its beams overhead 'It is very comfortable,' said I

'Ill-conwenient,' observed the matronly presence

I liked to hear her say so, for it showed a commendable anxiety to execute in no niggardly spirit the intentions of Master Richard Watts But the room was really so well adapted to its purpose that I protested, quite enthusiastically, against her disparagement

'Nay, ma'am,' said I, 'I am sure it is warm in winter and cool in summer It has a look of homely welcome and soothing rest It has a remarkably cosy fireside, the very blink of which, gleaming out into the street upon a winter night, is enough to warm all Rochester's heart And as to the convenience of the six Poor Travellers——'

'I don't mean them,' returned the presence 'I speak of its being an ill-conwenience to myself and my daughter, having no other room to sit in of a night'

This was true enough, but there was another quaint room of corresponding dimensions on the opposite side

foundation was, at the period of his death, mere marsh land, but that, in course of time, it had been reclaimed and built upon, and was very considerably increased in value I found, too, that about a thirtieth part of the annual revenue was now expended on the purposes commemorated in the inscription over the door, the rest being handsomely laid out in Chancery, law expenses, collectorship, receivership, poundage, and other appendages of management, highly complimentary to the importance of the six Poor Travellers In short, I made the not entirely new discovery that it may be said of an establishment like this, in dear old England, as of the fat oyster in the American story, that it takes a good many men to swallow it whole

'And pray, ma'am,' said I, sensible that the blankness of my face began to brighten as the thought occurred to me, 'could one see these Travellers?'

'Well!' she returned dubiously, 'no!'

'Not to-night, for instance!' said I

'Well!' she returned more positively, 'no Nobody ever asked to see them, and nobody ever did see them'

As I am not easily baulked in a design when I am set upon it, I urged to the good lady that this was Christmas Eve, that Christmas comes but once a year, —which is unhappily too true, for when it begins to stay with us the whole year round we shall make this earth a very different place, that I was possessed by the desire to treat the Travellers to a supper and a temperate glass of hot Wassail, that the voice of Fame had been heard in that land, declaring my ability to make hot Wassail, that if I were permitted to hold the feast, I should be found conformable to reason, sobriety, and good hours, in a word, that I could be merry and wise myself, and had been even known at a pinch to keep others so, although I was decorated with no badge or medal, and was not a Brother, Orator, Apostle, Saint, or Prophet of any denomination whatever In the end I prevailed, to my great joy It was settled that at nine o'clock that night a Turkey and a piece of Roast Beef should smoke upon the board, and that I, faint and unworthy minister

for once of Master Richard Watts, should preside as the Christmas-supper host of the six Poor Travellers

I went back to my inn to give the necessary directions for the Turkey and Roast Beef, and, during the remainder of the day, could settle to nothing for thinking of the Poor Travellers When the wind blew hard against the windows,—it was a cold day, with dark gusts of sleet alternating with periods of wild brightness, as if the year were dying fitfully,—I pictured them advancing towards their resting-place along various cold roads, and felt delighted to think how little they foresaw the supper that awaited them I painted their portraits in my mind, and indulged in little heightening touches I made them footsore, I made them weary, I made them carry packs and bundles, I made them stop by finger-posts and milestones, leaning on their bent sticks, and looking wistfully at what was written there, I made them lose their way, and filled their five wits with apprehensions of lying out all night, and being frozen to death I took up my hat, and went out, climbed to the top of the Old Castle, and looked over the windy hills that slope down to the Medway, almost believing that I could descry some of my Travellers in the distance After it fell dark, and the Cathedral bell was heard in the invisible steeple—quite a bower of frosty rime when I had last seen it—striking five, six, seven, I became so full of my Travellers that I could eat no dinner, and felt constrained to watch them still in the red coals of my fire They were all arrived by this time, I thought, had got their tickets, and were gone in —There my pleasure was dashed by the reflection that probably some Travellers had come too late and were shut out

After the Cathedral bell had struck eight, I could smell a delicious savour of Turkey and Roast Beef rising to the window of my adjoining bedroom, which looked down into the inn-yard just where the lights of the kitchen reddened a massive fragment of the Castle Wall It was high time to make the Wassail now, therefore I had up the materials (which, together with their proportions and combinations, I must decline to impart, as

the only secret of my own I was ever known to keep), and made a glorious jorum. Not in a bowl, for a bowl anywhere but on a shelf is a low superstition, fraught with cooling and slopping, but in a brown earthenware pitcher, tenderly suffocated, when full, with a coarse cloth. It being now upon the stroke of nine, I set out for Watts's Charity, carrying my brown beauty in my arms. I would trust Ben, the waiter, with untold gold, but there are strings in the human heart which must never be sounded by another, and drinks that I make myself are those strings in mine.

The Travellers were all assembled, the cloth was laid, and Ben had brought a great billet of wood, and had laid it artfully on the top of the fire, so that a touch or two of the poker after supper should make a roaring blaze. Having deposited my brown beauty in a red nook of the hearth, inside the fender, where she soon began to sing like an ethereal cricket, diffusing at the same time odours as of ripe vineyards, spice forests, and orange groves,—I say, having stationed my beauty in a place of security and improvement, I introduced myself to my guests by shaking hands all round, and giving them a hearty welcome.

I found the party to be thus composed. Firstly, myself. Secondly, a very decent man indeed, with his right arm in a sling, who had a certain clean agreeable smell of wood about him, from which I judged him to have something to do with shipbuilding. Thirdly, a little sailor-boy, a mere child, with a profusion of rich dark brown hair, and deep womanly-looking eyes. Fourthly, a shabby-genteel personage in a threadbare black suit, and apparently in very bad circumstances, with a dry suspicious look, the absent buttons on his waistcoat eked out with red tape, and a bundle of extraordinarily tattered papers sticking out of an inner breast-pocket. Fifthly, a foreigner by birth, but an Englishman in speech, who carried his pipe in the band of his hat, and lost no time in telling me, in an easy, simple, engaging way, that he was a watchmaker from Geneva, and travelled all about the Continent, mostly on foot, work

ing as a journeyman, and seeing new countries,—possibly (I thought) also smuggling a watch or so, now and then Sixthly, a little widow, who had been very pretty and was still very young, but whose beauty had been wrecked in some great misfortune, and whose manner was remarkably timid, scared, and solitary Seventhly and lastly, a Traveller of a kind familiar to my boyhood, but now almost obsolete,—a Book-Pedlar, who had a quantity of Pamphlets and Numbers with him, and who presently boasted that he could repeat more verses in an evening than he could sell in a twelvemonth

All these I have mentioned in the order in which they sat at table I presided, and the matronly presence faced me We were not long in taking our places, for the supper had arrived with me, in the following procession

Myself with the pitcher
Ben with Beer
Inattentive Boy with hot plates Inattentive Boy with hot plates
THE TURKEY
Female carrying sauces to be heated on the spot
THE BEEF
Man with Tray on his head, containing Vegetables and Sundries
Volunteer Hostler from Hotel, grinning,
And rendering no assistance

As we passed along the High Street, comet-like, we left a long tail of fragrance behind us which caused the public to stop, sniffing in wonder We had previously left at the corner of the inn-yard a wall-eyed young man connected with the Fly department, and well accustomed to the sound of a railway whistle which Ben always carries in his pocket, whose instructions were, so soon as he should hear the whistle blown, to dash into the kitchen, seize the hot plum-pudding and mince-pies, and speed with them to Watts's Charity, where they would be received (he was further instructed) by the sauce-female, who would be provided with brandy in a blue state of combustion

All these arrangements were executed in the most exact and punctual manner. I never saw a finer turkey, finer beef, or greater prodigality of sauce and gravy; and my Travellers did wonderful justice to everything set before them. It made my heart rejoice to observe how their wind and frost hardened faces softened in the clatter of plates and knives and forks, and mellowed in the fire and supper heat. While their hats and caps and wrappers, hanging up, a few small bundles on the ground in a corner, and in another corner three or four old walking-sticks, worn down at the end to mere fringe, linked this snug interior with the bleak outside in a golden chain.

When supper was done, and my brown beauty had been elevated on the table, there was a general requisition to me to 'take the corner'; which suggested to me comfortably enough how much my friends here made of a fire,—for when had *I* ever thought so highly of the corner, since the days which I connected it with Jack Horner? However, as I declined, Ben, whose touch on all convivial instruments is perfect, drew the table apart, and instructing my Travellers to open right and left on either side of me, and form round the fire, closed up the centre with myself and my chair, and preserved the order we had kept at table. He had already, in a tranquil manner, boxed the ears of the inattentive boys until they had been by imperceptible degrees boxed out of the room; and he now rapidly skirmished the sauce-female into the High Street, disappeared, and softly closed the door.

This was the time for bringing the poker to bear on the billet of wood. I tapped it three times, like an enchanted talisman, and a brilliant host of merry-makers burst out of it, and sported off by the chimney,—rushing up the middle in a fiery country dance, and never coming down again. Meanwhile, by their sparkling light, which threw our lamp into the shade, I filled the glasses, and gave my Travellers, CHRISTMAS!—CHRISTMAS EVE, my friends, when the shepherds, who were Poor Travellers, too, in their way, heard the Angels sing, 'On earth, peace. Good-will towards men!'

I don't know who was the first among us to think that we ought to take hands as we sat, in deference to the toast, or whether any one of us anticipated the others, but at any rate we all did it We then drank to the memory of the good Master Richard Watts And I wish his Ghost may never have had worse usage under that roof than it had from us

It was the witching time for Story-telling 'Our whole life, Travellers,' said I, 'is a story more or less intelligible, —generally less, but we shall read it by a clearer light when it is ended I, for one, am so divided this night between fact and fiction, that I scarce know which is which Shall I beguile the time by telling you a story as we sit here?'

They all answered, yes I had little to tell them, but I was bound by my own proposal Therefore, after looking for awhile at the spiral column of smoke wreathing up from my brown beauty, through which I could have almost sworn I saw the effigy of Master Richard Watts less startled than usual, I fired away

CHAPTER II

THE STORY OF RICHARD DOUBLEDICK

In the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, a relative of mine came limping down, on foot, to this town of Chatham I call it this town, because if anybody present knows to a nicety where Rochester ends and Chatham begins, it is more than I do He was a poor traveller, with not a farthing in his pocket He sat by the fire in this very room, and he slept one night in a bed that will be occupied to-night by some one here

My relative came down to Chatham to enlist in a cavalry regiment, if a cavalry regiment would have him, if not, to take King George's shilling from any corporal or sergeant who would put a bunch of ribbons in his hat His object was to get shot, but he thought he might as well ride to death as be at the trouble of walking

My relative's Christian name was Richard, but he was

better known as Dick He dropped his own surname on the road down, and took up that of Doubledick He was passed as Richard Doubledick, age, twenty-two, height, five foot ten, native place, Exmouth, which he had never been near in his life There was no cavalry in Chatham when he limped over the bridge here with half a shoe to his dusty feet, so he enlisted into a regiment of the line, and was glad to get drunk and forget all about it

You are to know that this relative of mine had gone wrong, and run wild His heart was in the right place, but it was sealed up He had been betrothed to a good and beautiful girl, whom he had loved better than she—or perhaps even he—believed, but in an evil hour he had given her cause to say to him solemnly, 'Richard, I will never marry another man I will live single for your sake, but Mary Marshall's lips'—her name was Mary Marshall—'never address another word to you on earth Go, Richard! Heaven forgive you!' This finished him This brought him down to Chatham This made him Private Richard Doubledick, with a determination to be shot

There was not a more dissipated and reckless soldier in Chatham barracks, in the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, than Private Richard Doubledick He associated with the dregs of every regiment, he was as seldom sober as he could be, and was constantly under punishment It became clear to the whole barracks that Private Richard Doubledick would very soon be flogged

Now the Captain of Richard Doubledick's company was a young gentleman not above five years his senior, whose eyes had an expression in them which affected Private Richard Doubledick in a very remarkable way They were bright, handsome, dark eyes,—what are called laughing eyes generally, and, when serious, rather steady than severe,—but they were the only eyes now left in his narrowed world that Private Richard Doubledick could not stand Unabashed by evil report and punishment, defiant of everything else and everybody else, he had but to know that those eyes looked at him for a moment, and he felt ashamed He could not so

much as salute Captain Taunton in the street like any other officer He was reproached and confused,—troubled by the mere possibility of the captain's looking at him In his worst moments, he would rather turn back, and go any distance out of his way, than encounter those two handsome, dark, bright eyes

One day, when Private Richard Doubledick came out of the Black hole, where he had been passing the last eight-and-forty hours, and in which retreat he spent a good deal of his time, he was ordered to betake himself to Captain Taunton's quarters In the stale and squalid state of a man just out of the Black hole, he had less fancy than ever for being seen by the Captain, but he was not so mad yet as to disobey orders, and consequently went up to the terrace overlooking the parade ground, where the officers' quarters were, twisting and breaking in his hands, as he went along, a bit of the straw that had formed the decorative furniture of the Black hole

'Come in!' cried the Captain, when he knocked with his knuckles at the door Private Richard Doubledick pulled off his cap, took a stride forward, and felt very conscious that he stood in the light of the dark, bright eyes

There was a silent pause Private Richard Doubledick had put the straw in his mouth, and was gradually doubling it up into his windpipe and choking himself

'Doubledick,' said the Captain, 'do you know where you are going to?'

'To the Devil, sir?' faltered Doubledick

'Yes,' returned the Captain 'And very fast'

Private Richard Doubledick turned the straw of the Black hole in his mouth, and made a miserable salute of acquiescence

'Doubledick,' said the Captain, 'since I entered his Majesty's service, a boy of seventeen, I have been pained to see many men of promise going that road, but I have never been so pained to see a man determined to make the shameful journey as I have been, ever since you joined the regiment, to see you'

Private Richard Doubledick began to find a film stealing over the floor at which he looked, also to find the legs of the Captain's breakfast-table turning crooked, as if he saw them through water

'I am only a common soldier, sir,' said he 'It signifies very little what such a poor brute comes to'

'You are a man,' returned the Captain, with grave indignation, 'of education and superior advantages, and if you say that, meaning what you say, you have sunk lower than I had believed How low that must be, I leave you to consider, knowing what I know of your disgrace, and seeing what I see'

'I hope to get shot soon, sir,' said Private Richard Doubledick, 'and then the regiment and the world together will be rid of me'

The legs of the table were becoming very crooked Doubledick, looking up to steady his vision, met the eyes that had so strong an influence over him He put his hand before his own eyes, and the breast of his disgrace jacket swelled as if it would fly asunder

'I would rather,' said the young Captain, 'see this in you, Doubledick, than I would see five thousand guineas counted out upon this table for a gift to my good mother Have you a mother?'

'I am thankful to say she is dead, sir'

'If your praises,' returned the Captain, 'were sounded from mouth to mouth through the whole regiment, through the whole army, through the whole country, you would wish she had lived to say, with pride and joy, "He is my son!"'

'Spare me, sir,' said Doubledick 'She would never have heard any good of me She would never have had any pride and joy in owning herself my mother Love and compassion she might have had, and would have always had, I know, but not—Spare me, sir! I am a broken wretch, quite at your mercy!' And he turned his face to the wall, and stretched out his imploring hand

'My friend——' began the Captain

'God bless you, sir!' sobbed Private Richard Doubledick

'You are at the crisis of your fate Hold your course unchanged a little longer, and you know what must happen *I* know even better than you can imagine, that, after that has happened, you are lost No man who could shed those tears could bear those marks '

'I fully believe it, sir,' in a low, shivering voice said Private Richard Doubledick

'But a man in any station can do his duty,' said the young Captain, 'and, in doing it, can earn his own respect, even if his case should be so very unfortunate and so very rare that he can earn no other man's A common soldier, poor brute though you called him just now, has this advantage in the stormy times we live in, that he always does his duty before a host of sympathizing witnesses Do you doubt that he may so do it as to be extolled through a whole regiment, through a whole army, through a whole country? Turn while you may yet retrieve the past, and try '

'I will! I ask for only one witness, sir,' cried Richard, with a bursting heart

'I understand you I will be a watchful and a faithful one '

I have heard from Private Richard Doubledick's own lips, that he dropped down upon his knee, kissed that officer's hand, arose, and went out of the light of the dark, bright eyes, an altered man

In that year, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, the French were in Egypt, in Italy, in Germany, where not? Napoleon Bonaparte had likewise begun to stir against us in India, and most men could read the signs of the great troubles that were coming on In the very next year, when we formed an alliance with Austria against him, Captain Taunton's regiment was on service in India And there was not a finer non-commissioned officer in it,—no, nor in the whole line—than Corporal Richard Doubledick

In eighteen hundred and one, the Indian army were on the coast of Egypt Next year was the year of the proclamation of the short peace, and they were recalled It had then become well known to thousands of men,

that wherever Captain Taunton, with the dark, bright eyes, led, there, close to him, ever at his side, firm as a rock, true as the sun, and brave as Mars, would be certain to be found, while life beat in their hearts, that famous soldier, Sergeant Richard Doubledick

Eighteen hundred and five, besides being the great year of Trafalgar, was a year of hard fighting in India That year saw such wonders done by a Sergeant-Major, who cut his way single-handed through a solid mass of men, recovered the colours of his regiment, which had been seized from the hand of a poor boy shot through the heart, and rescued his wounded Captain, who was down, and in a very jungle of horses' hoofs and sabres,—saw such wonders done, I say, by this brave Sergeant-Major, that he was specially made the bearer of the colours he had won, and Ensign Richard Doubledick had risen from the ranks

Sorely cut up in every battle, but always reinforced by the bravest of men,—for the fame of following the old colours, shot through and through, which Ensign Richard Doubledick had saved, inspired all breasts,—this regiment fought its way through the Peninsular War, up to the investment of Badajos in eighteen hundred and twelve Again and again it had been cheered through the British ranks until the tears had sprung into men's eyes at the mere hearing of the mighty British voice, so exultant in their valour, and there was not a drummer boy but knew the legend, that wherever the two friends, Major Taunton, with the dark, bright eyes, and Ensign Richard Doubledick, who was devoted to him, were seen to go, there the boldest spirits in the English army became wild to follow

One day, at Badajos,—not in the great storming, but in repelling a hot sally of the besieged upon our men at work in the trenches, who had given way,—the two officers found themselves hurrying forward, face to face, against a party of French infantry, who made a stand There was an officer at their head, encouraging his men, —a courageous, handsome, gallant officer of five-and-thirty, whom Doubledick saw hurriedly, almost momen

tarily, but saw well He particularly noticed this officer waving his sword, and rallying his men with an eager and excited cry, when they fired in obedience to his gesture, and Major Taunton dropped

It was over in ten minutes more, and Doubledick returned to the spot where he had laid the best friend man ever had on a coat spread upon the wet clay Major Taunton's uniform was opened at the breast, and on his shirt were three little spots of blood

'Dear Doubledick,' said he, 'I am dying '

'For the love of Heaven, no!' exclaimed the other, kneeling down beside him, and passing his arm round his neck to raise his head 'Taunton! My preserver, my guardian angel, my witness! Dearest, truest, kindest of human beings! Taunton! For God's sake!'

The bright, dark eyes—so very, very dark now, in the pale face—smiled upon him, and the hand he had kissed thirteen years ago laid itself fondly on his breast

'Write to my mother You will see Home again Tell her how we became friends It will comfort her, as it comforts me '

He spoke no more, but faintly signed for a moment towards his hair as it fluttered in the wind The Ensign understood him He smiled again when he saw that, and, gently turning his face over on the supporting arm as if for rest, died, with his hand upon the breast in which he had revived a soul

No dry eye looked on Ensign Richard Doubledick that melancholy day He buried his friend on the field, and became a lone, bereaved man Beyond his duty he appeared to have but two remaining cares in life,—one, to preserve the little packet of hair he was to give to Taunton's mother, the other, to encounter that French officer who had rallied the men under whose fire Taunton fell A new legend now began to circulate among our troops, and it was, that when he and the French officer came face to face once more, there would be weeping in France

The war went on—and through it went the exact picture of the French officer on the one side, and the bodily

reality upon the other—until the Battle of Toulouse was fought In the returns sent home appeared these words 'Severely wounded, but not dangerously, Lieutenant Richard Doubledick'

At Midsummer-time, in the year eighteen hundred and fourteen, Lieutenant Richard Doubledick, now a browned soldier, seven-and-thirty years of age, came home to England invalided He brought the hair with him, near his heart Many a French officer had he seen since that day, many a dreadful night, in searching with men and lanterns for his wounded, had he relieved French officers lying disabled, but the mental picture and the reality had never come together

Though he was weak and suffered pain, he lost not an hour in getting down to Frome in Somersetshire, where Taunton's mother lived In the sweet, compassionate words that naturally present themselves to the mind to-night, 'he was the only son of his mother, and she was a widow'

It was a Sunday evening, and the lady sat at her quiet garden-window, reading the Bible, reading to herself, in a trembling voice, that very passage in it, as I have heard him tell He heard the words 'Young man, I say unto thee, arise!'

He had to pass the window, and the bright, dark eyes of his debased time seemed to look at him Her heart told her who he was, she came to the door quickly, and fell upon his neck

'He saved me from ruin, made me a human creature, won me from infamy and shame O, God for ever bless him! As He will, He will!'

'He will!' the lady answered 'I know he is in Heaven!' Then she piteously cried, 'But O, my darling boy, my darling boy!'

Never from the hour when Private Richard Doubledick enlisted at Chatham had the Private, Corporal, Sergeant, Sergeant-Major, Ensign, or Lieutenant breathed his right name, or the name of Mary Marshall, or a word of the story of his life, into any ear except his reclaimer's That previous scene in his existence was closed He had

firmly resolved that his expiation should be to live unknown, to disturb no more the peace that had long grown over his old offences, to let it be revealed, when he was dead, that he had striven and suffered, and had never forgotten, and then, if they could forgive him and believe him—well, it would be time enough—time enough!

But that night, remembering the words he had cherished for two years, 'Tell her how we became friends It will comfort her, as it comforts me,' he related everything It gradually seemed to him as if in his maturity he had recovered a mother, it gradually seemed to her as if in her bereavement she had found a son During his stay in England, the quiet garden into which he had slowly and painfully crept, a stranger, became the boundary of his home, when he was able to rejoin his regiment in the spring, he left the garden, thinking was this indeed the first time he had ever turned his face towards the old colours with a woman's blessing!

He followed them—so ragged, so scarred and pierced now, that they would scarcely hold together—to Quatre Bras and Ligny He stood beside them, in an awful stillness of many men, shadowy through the mist and drizzle of a wet June forenoon, on the field of Waterloo And down to that hour the picture in his mind of the French officer had never been compared with the reality

The famous regiment was in action early in the battle, and received its first check in many an eventful year, when he was seen to fall But it swept on to avenge him, and left behind it no such creature in the world of consciousness as Lieutenant Richard Doubledick

Through pits of mire, and pools of rain, along deep ditches, once roads, that were pounded and ploughed to pieces by artillery, heavy wagons, tramp of men and horses, and the struggle of every wheeled thing that could carry wounded soldiers, jolted among the dying and the dead, so disfigured by blood and mud as to be hardly recognizable for humanity, undisturbed by the moaning of men and the shrieking of horses, which, newly taken from the peaceful pursuits of life, could not endure the sight of the stragglers lying by the wayside, never to

resume their toilsome journey, dead, as to any sentient life that was in it, and yet alive,—the form that had been Lieutenant Richard Doubledick, with whose praises England rang, was conveyed to Brussels There it was tenderly laid down in hospital, and there it lay, week after week, through the long bright summer days, until the harvest, spared by war, had ripened and was gathered in

Over and over again the sun rose and set upon the crowded city, over and over again the moonlight nights were quiet on the plains of Waterloo and all that time was a blank to what had been Lieutenant Richard Doubledick Rejoicing troops marched into Brussels, and marched out, brothers and fathers, sisters, mothers, and wives, came thronging thither, drew their lots of joy or agony, and departed, so many times a day the bells rang, so many times the shadows of the great buildings changed, so many lights sprang up at dusk, so many feet passed here and there upon the pavements, so many hours of sleep and cooler air of night succeeded indifferent to all, a marble face lay on a bed, like the face of a recumbent statue on the tomb of Lieutenant Richard Doubledick

Slowly labouring, at last, through a long heavy dream of confused time and place, presenting faint glimpses of army surgeons whom he knew, and of faces that had been familiar to his youth,—dearest and kindest among them, Mary Marshall's, with a solicitude upon it more like reality than anything he could discern,—Lieutenant Richard Doubledick came back to life To the beautiful life of a calm autumn evening sunset, to the peaceful life of a fresh quiet room with a large window standing open, a balcony beyond, in which were moving leaves and sweet-smelling flowers, beyond, again, the clear sky, with the sun full in his sight, pouring its golden radiance on his bed

It was so tranquil and so lovely that he thought he had passed into another world And he said in a faint voice, 'Taunton, are you near me?'

A face bent over him Not his, his mother's

'I came to nurse you We have nursed you many weeks You were moved here long ago Do you remember nothing?'

'Nothing'

The lady kissed his cheek, and held his hand, soothing him

'Where is the regiment? What has happened? Let me call you mother What has happened, mother?'

'A great victory, dear The war is over, and the regiment was the bravest in the field'

His eyes kindled, his lips trembled, he sobbed, and the tears ran down his face He was very weak, too weak to move his hand

'Was it dark just now?' he asked presently

'No'

'It was only dark to me? Something passed away, like a black shadow But as it went, and the sun—O the blessed sun, how beautiful it is!—touched my face, I thought I saw a light white cloud pass out at the door Was there nothing that went out?'

She shook her head, and in a little while he fell asleep, she still holding his hand, and soothing him

From that time, he recovered Slowly, for he had been desperately wounded in the head, and had been shot in the body, but making some little advance every day When he had gained sufficient strength to converse as he lay in bed, he soon began to remark that Mrs Taunton always brought him back to his own history Then he recalled his preserver's dying words, and thought, 'It comforts her

One day he awoke out of a sleep, refreshed, and asked her to read to him But the curtain of the bed, softening the light, which she always drew back when he awoke, that she might see him from her table at the bedside where she sat at work, was held undrawn, and a woman's voice spoke, which was not hers

'Can you bear to see a stranger?' it said softly 'Will you like to see a stranger?'

'Stranger!' he repeated The voice awoke old memories, before the days of Private Richard Doubledick

'A stranger now, but not a stranger once,' it said in tones that thrilled him 'Richard, dear Richard, lost through so many years, my name——'

He cried out her name, 'Mary,' and she held him in her arms, and his head lay on her bosom

'I am not breaking a rash vow, Richard These are not Mary Marshall's lips that speak I have another name'

She was married

'I have another name, Richard Did you ever hear it?'

'Never!'

He looked into her face, so pensively beautiful, and wondered at the smile upon it through her tears

'Think again, Richard Are you sure you never heard my altered name?'

'Never!'

'Don't move your head to look at me, dear Richard Let it lie here, while I tell my story I loved a generous, noble man, loved him with my whole heart, loved him for years and years, loved him faithfully, devotedly, loved him with no hope of return, loved him, knowing nothing of his highest qualities—not even knowing that he was alive He was a brave soldier He was honoured and beloved by thousands of thousands, when the mother of his dear friend found me, and showed me that in all his triumphs he had never forgotten me He was wounded in a great battle He was brought, dying, here, into Brussels I came to watch and tend him, as I would have joyfully gone, with such a purpose, to the dreariest ends of the earth When he knew no one else, he knew me When he suffered most, he bore his sufferings barely murmuring, content to rest his head where yours rests now When he lay at the point of death, he married me, that he might call me Wife before he died And the name, my dear love, that I took on that forgotten night——'

'I know it now!' he sobbed 'The shadowy remembrance strengthens It is come back I thank Heaven that my mind is quite restored! My Mary, kiss me, lull

this weary head to rest, or I shall die of gratitude His parting words were fulfilled I see Home again!'

Well! They were happy It was a long recovery, but they were happy through it all The snow had melted on the ground, and the birds were singing in the leafless thickets of the early spring, when those three were first able to ride out together, and when people flocked about the open carriage to cheer and congratulate Captain Richard Doubledick

But even then it became necessary for the Captain, instead of returning to England, to complete his recovery in the climate of Southern France They found a spot upon the Rhône, within a ride of the old town of Avignon, and within view of its broken bridge, which was all they could desire, they lived there, together, six months, then returned to England Mrs Taunton, growing old after three years—though not so old as that her bright, dark eyes were dimmed—and remembering that her strength had been benefited by the change, resolved to go back for a year to those parts So she went with a faithful servant, who had often carried her son in his arms, and she was to be rejoined and escorted home, at the year's end, by Captain Richard Doubledick

She wrote regularly to her children (as she called them now), and they to her She went to the neighbourhood of Aix, and there, in their own chateau near the farmer's house she rented, she grew into intimacy with a family belonging to that part of France The intimacy began in her often meeting among the vineyards a pretty child, a girl with a most compassionate heart, who was never tired of listening to the solitary English lady's stories of her poor son and the cruel wars The family were as gentle as the child, and at length she came to know them so well that she accepted their invitation to pass the last month of her residence abroad under their roof All this intelligence she wrote home, piecemeal as it came about, from time to time, and at last enclosed a polite note, from the head of the château, soliciting, on the occasion of his approaching mission to that neighbourhood, the

honour of the company of cet homme si justement celebre, Monsieur le Capitaine Richard Doubledick

Captain Doubledick, now a hardy, handsome man in the full vigour of life, broader across the chest and shoulders than he had ever been before, dispatched a courteous reply, and followed it in person Travelling through all that extent of country after three years of Peace, he blessed the better days on which the world had fallen The corn was golden, not drenched in unnatural red, was bound in sheaves for food, not trodden underfoot by men in mortal fight The smoke rose up from peaceful hearths, not blazing ruins The carts were laden with the fair fruits of the earth, not with wounds and death To him who had so often seen the terrible reverse, these things were beautiful indeed, and they brought him in a softened spirit to the old chateau near Aix upon a deep blue evening

It was a large château of the genuine old ghostly kind, with round towers, and extinguishers, and a high leaden roof, and more windows than Aladdin's Palace The lattice blinds were all thrown open after the heat of the day, and there were glimpses of rambling walls and corridors within Then there were immense outbuildings fallen into partial decay, masses of dark trees, terrace-gardens, balustrades, tanks of water, too weak to play and too dirty to work, statues, weeds, and thickets of iron railing that seemed to have overgrown themselves like the shrubberies, and to have branched out in all manner of wild shapes The entrance doors stood open, as doors often do in that country when the heat of the day is past, and the Captain saw no bell or knocker, and walked in

He walked into a lofty stone hall, refreshingly cool and gloomy after the glare of a Southern day's travel Extending along the four sides of this hall was a gallery, leading to suites of rooms, and it was lighted from the top Still no bell was to be seen

'Faith,' said the Captain halting, ashamed of the clanking of his boots, 'this is a ghostly beginning!'

He started back, and felt his face turn white In the gallery, looking down at him, stood the French officer—

the officer whose picture he had carried in his mind so long and so far Compared with the original, at last—in every lineament how like it was!

He moved, and disappeared, and Captain Richard Doubledick heard his steps coming quickly down into the hall He entered through an archway There was a bright, sudden look upon his face, much such a look as it had worn in that fatal moment

Monsieur le Capitaine Richard Doubledick? Enchanted to receive him! A thousand apologies! The servants were all out in the air There was a little fete among them in the garden In effect, it was the fete day of my daughter, the little cherished and protected of Madame Taunton

He was so gracious and so frank that Monsieur le Capitaine Richard Doubledick could not withhold his hand 'It is the hand of a brave Englishman,' said the French officer, retaining it while he spoke 'I could respect a brave Englishman, even as my foe, how much more as my friend! I also am a soldier'

'He has not remembered me, as I have remembered him, he did not take such note of my face, that day, as I took of his,' thought Captain Richard Doubledick 'How shall I tell him?'

The French officer conducted his guest into a garden and presented him to his wife, an engaging and beautiful woman, sitting with Mrs Taunton in a whimsical old-fashioned pavilion His daughter, her fair young face beaming with joy, came running to embrace him, and there was a boy-baby to tumble down among the orange-trees on the broad steps, in making for his father's legs A multitude of children visitors were dancing to sprightly music, and all the servants and peasants about the château were dancing too It was a scene of innocent happiness that might have been invented for the climax of the scenes of peace which had soothed the Captain's journey

He looked on, greatly troubled in his mind, until a resounding bell rang, and the French officer begged to show him his rooms They went upstairs into the gallery

from which the officer had looked down, and Monsieur le Capitaine Richard Doubledick was cordially welcomed to a grand outer chamber, and a smaller one within, all clocks and draperies, and hearths, and brazen dogs, and tiles, and cool devices, and elegance, and vastness

'You were at Waterloo,' said the French officer

'I was,' said Captain Richard Doubledick 'And at Badajos '

Left alone with the sound of his own stern voice in his ears, he sat down to consider, What shall I do, and how shall I tell him? At that time, unhappily, many deplorable duels had been fought between English and French officers, arising out of the recent war, and these duels, and how to avoid this officer's hospitality, were the uppermost thought in Captain Richard Doubledick's mind

He was thinking, and letting the time run out in which he should have dressed for dinner, when Mrs Taunton spoke to him outside the door, asking if he could give her the letter he had brought from Mary 'His mother, above all,' the Captain thought 'How shall I tell *her*?'

'You will form a friendship with your host, I hope,' said Mrs Taunton, whom he hurriedly admitted, 'that will last for life He is so true-hearted and so generous, Richard, that you can hardly fail to esteem one another If He had been spared,' she kissed (not without tears) the locket in which she wore his hair, 'he would have appreciated him with his own magnanimity, and would have been truly happy that the evil days were past which made such a man his enemy '

She left the room, and the Captain walked, first to one window, whence he could see the dancing in the garden, then to another window, whence he could see the smiling prospect and the peaceful vineyards

'Spirit of my departed friend,' said he, 'is it through thee these better thoughts are rising in my mind? Is it thou who hast shown me, all the way I have been drawn to meet this man, the blessings of the altered time? Is it thou who hast sent thy stricken mother to me, to stay my

angry hand? Is it from thee the whisper comes, that this man did his duty as thou didst,—and as I did, through thy guidance, which has wholly saved me here on earth,—and that he did no more?'

He sat down, with his head buried in his hands, and, when he rose up, made the second strong resolution of his life,—that neither to the French officer, nor to the mother of his departed friend, nor to any soul, while either of the two was living, would he breathe what only he knew And when he touched that French officer's glass with his own, that day at dinner, he secretly forgave him in the name of the Divine Forgiver of injuries

Here I ended my story as the first Poor Traveller But, if I had told it now, I could have added that the time has since come when the son of Major Richard Doubledick, and the son of that French officer, friends as their fathers were before them, fought side by side in one cause, with their respective nations, like long-divided brothers whom the better times have brought together, fast united

CHAPTER III

THE ROAD

MY story being finished, and the Wassail too, we broke up as the Cathedral bell struck Twelve I did not take leave of my Travellers that night, for it had come into my head to reappear, in conjunction with some hot coffee, at seven in the morning

As I passed along the High Street, I heard the Waits at a distance, and struck off to find them They were playing near one of the old gates of the City, at the corner of a wonderfully quaint row of red-brick tenements, which the clarionet obligingly informed me were inhabited by the Minor-Canons They had odd little porches over the doors, like sounding-boards over old pulpits, and I thought I should like to see one of the Minor-Canons come out upon his top step, and favour

us with a little Christmas discourse about the poor scholars of Rochester, taking for his text the words of his Master relative to the devouring of Widows' houses

The clarionet was so communicative, and my inclinations were (as they generally are) of so vagabond a tendency, that I accompanied the Waits across an open green called the Vines, and assisted—in the French sense—at the performance of two waltzes, two polkas, and three Irish melodies, before I thought of my inn any more However, I returned to it then, and found a fiddle in the kitchen, and Ben, the wall-eyed young man, and two chambermaids, circling round the great deal table with the utmost animation

I had a very bad night It cannot have been owing to the turkey or the beef,—and the Wassail is out of the question,—but in every endeavour that I made to get to sleep I failed most dismally I was never asleep, and in whatsoever unreasonable direction my mind rambled, the effigy of Master Richard Watts perpetually embarrassed it

In a word, I only got out of the Worshipful Master Richard Watts's way by getting out of bed in the dark at six o'clock, and tumbling, as my custom is, into all the cold water that could be accumulated for the purpose The outer air was dull and cold enough in the street, when I came down there, and the one candle in our supper-room at Watts's Charity looked as pale in the burning as if it had had a bad night too But my Travellers had all slept soundly, and they took to the hot coffee, and the piles of bread-and-butter, which Ben had arranged like deals in a timber-yard, as kindly as I could desire

While it was yet scarcely daylight, we all came out into the street together, and there shook hands The widow took the little sailor towards Chatham, where he was to find a steamboat for Sheerness, the lawyer, with an extremely knowing look, went his own way, without committing himself by announcing his intentions, two more struck off by the cathedral and old castle for Maidstone, and the book-pedlar accompanied me over the

bridge As for me, I was going to walk by Cobham Woods, as far upon my way to London as I fancied

When I came to the stile and footpath by which I was to diverge from the main road, I bade farewell to my last remaining Poor Traveller, and pursued my way alone And now the mists began to rise in the most beautiful manner, and the sun to shine, and as I went on through the bracing air, seeing the hoar-frost sparkle everywhere, I felt as if all Nature shared in the joy of the great Birthday

Going through the woods, the softness of my tread upon the mossy ground and among the brown leaves enhanced the Christmas sacredness by which I felt surrounded As the whitened stems environed me, I thought how the Founder of the time had never raised his benignant hand, save to bless and heal, except in the case of one unconscious tree By Cobham Hall, I came to the village, and the churchyard where the dead had been quietly buried, 'in the sure and certain hope' which Christmas-time inspired What children could I see at play, and not be loving of, recalling who had loved them! No garden that I passed was out of unison with the day, for I remembered that the tomb was in a garden, and that 'she, supposing him to be the gardener,' had said, 'Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away' In time, the distant river with the ships came full in view, and with it pictures of the poor fishermen, mending their nets, who arose and followed him,—of the teaching of the people from a ship pushed off a little way from shore, by reason of the multitude,—of a majestic figure, walking on the water, in the loneliness of night My very shadow on the ground was eloquent of Christmas, for did not the people lay their sick where the mere shadows of the men who had heard and seen him might fall as they passed along?

Thus Christmas begirt me, far and near, until I had come to Blackheath, and had walked down the long vista of gnarled old trees in Greenwich Park, and was being steam-rattled through the mists now closing in once more,

towards the lights of London Brightly they shone, but not so brightly as my own fire, and the brighter faces around it, when we came together to celebrate the day And there I told of worthy Master Richard Watts, and of my supper with the Six Poor Travellers who were neither Rogues nor Proctors, and from that hour to this I have never seen one of them again

(1854)

ANTHONY TROLLOPE

1815–1882

MALACHI'S COVE

[From *Lotta Schmidt, and other Stories* 1867]

ON the northern coast of Cornwall, between Tintagel and Bossiney, down on the very margin of the sea, there lived not long since an old man who got his living by saving sea-weed from the waves, and selling it for manure. The cliffs there are bold and fine, and the sea beats in upon them from the north with a grand violence. I doubt whether it be not the finest morsel of cliff scenery in England, though it is beaten by many portions of the west coast of Ireland, and perhaps also by spots in Wales and Scotland. Cliffs should be nearly precipitous, they should be broken in their outlines, and should barely admit here and there of an insecure passage from their summit to the sand at their feet. The sea should come, if not up to them, at least very near to them, and then, above all things, the water below them should be blue, and not of that dead leaden colour which is so familiar to us in England. At Tintagel all these requisites are there, except that bright blue colour which is so lovely. But the cliffs themselves are bold and well broken, and the margin of sand at high water is very narrow—so narrow that at spring-tides there is barely a footing there.

Close upon this margin was the cottage or hovel of Malachi Trenglos, the old man of whom I have spoken. But Malachi, or old Glos, as he was commonly called by the people around him, had not built his house absolutely upon the sand. There was a fissure in the rock so great that at the top it formed a narrow ravine, and so complete from the summit to the base that it afforded an opening for a steep and rugged track from the top of the rock to the bottom. This fissure was so wide at the bottom that it had afforded space for Trenglos to fix his

habitation on a foundation of rock, and here he had lived for many years It was told of him that in the early days of his trade he had always carried the weed in a basket on his back to the top, but latterly he had been possessed of a donkey which had been trained to go up and down the steep track with a single pannier over his loins, for the rocks would not admit of panniers hanging by his side, and for this assistant he had built a shed adjoining his own, and almost as large as that in which he himself resided

But, as years went on, old Glos procured other assistance than that of the donkey, or, as I should rather say, Providence supplied him with other help, and, indeed, had it not been so, the old man must have given up his cabin and his independence and gone into the workhouse at Camelford For rheumatism had afflicted him, old age had bowed him till he was nearly double, and by degrees he became unable to attend the donkey on its upward passage to the world above, or even to assist in rescuing the coveted weed from the waves

At the time to which our story refers Trenglos had not been up the cliff for twelve months, and for the last six months he had done nothing towards the furtherance of his trade, except to take the money and keep it, if any of it was kept, and occasionally to shake down a bundle of fodder for the donkey The real work of the business was done altogether by Mahala Trenglos, his granddaughter

Mally Trenglos was known to all the farmers round the coast, and to all the small tradespeople in Camelford She was a wild-looking, almost unearthly creature, with wild-flowing, black, uncombed hair, small in stature, with small hands and bright black eyes, but people said that she was very strong, and the children around declared that she worked day and night, and knew nothing of fatigue As to her age there were many doubts Some said she was ten, and others five-and-twenty, but the reader may be allowed to know that at this time she had in truth passed her twentieth birthday The old people spoke well of Mally, because she was so good to her grandfather, and it was said of her that though she carried to

him a little gin and tobacco almost daily, she bought nothing for herself,—and as to the gin, no one who looked at her would accuse her of meddling with that. But she had no friends, and but few acquaintances among people of her own age. They said that she was fierce and ill-natured, that she had not a good word for any one, and that she was, complete at all points, a thorough little vixen. The young men did not care for her, for, as regarded dress, all days were alike with her. She never made herself smart on Sundays. She was generally without stockings, and seemed to care not at all to exercise any of those feminine attractions which might have been hers had she studied to attain them. All days were the same to her in regard to dress, and, indeed, till lately, all days had, I fear, been the same to her in other respects. Old Malachi had never been seen inside a place of worship since he had taken to live under the cliff.

But within the last two years Mally had submitted herself to the teaching of the clergyman at Tintagel, and had appeared at church on Sundays, if not absolutely with punctuality, at any rate so often that no one who knew the peculiarity of her residence was disposed to quarrel with her on that subject. But she made no difference in her dress on these occasions. She took her place on a low stone seat just inside the church door, clothed as usual in her thick red serge petticoat and loose brown serge jacket, such being the apparel which she had found to be best adapted for her hard and perilous work among the waters. She had pleaded to the clergyman when he attacked her on the subject of church attendance with vigour that she had got no church-going clothes. He had explained to her that she would be received there without distinction to her clothing. Mally had taken him at his word, and had gone, with a courage which certainly deserved admiration, though I doubt whether there was not mingled with it an obstinacy which was less admirable.

For people said that old Glos was rich, and that Mally might have proper clothes if she chose to buy them. Mr. Polwarth, the clergyman, who, as the old man could

not come to him, went down the rocks to the old man, did make some hint on the matter in Mally's absence But old Glos, who had been patient with him on other matters, turned upon him so angrily when he made an allusion to money, that Mr Polwarth found himself obliged to give that matter up, and Mally continued to sit upon the stone bench in her short serge petticoat, with her long hair streaming down her face She did so far sacrifice to decency as on such occasions to tie up her back hair with an old shoe-string So tied it would remain through the Monday and Tuesday, but by Wednesday afternoon Mally's hair had generally managed to escape

As to Mally's indefatigable industry there could be no manner of doubt, for the quantity of seaweed which she and the donkey amassed between them was very surprising Old Glos, it was declared, had never collected half what Mally gathered together, but then the article was becoming cheaper, and it was necessary that the exertion should be greater So Mally and the donkey toiled and toiled, and the seaweed came up in heaps which surprised those who looked at her little hands and light form Was there not some one who helped her at nights, some fairy, or demon, or the like? Mally was so snappish in her answers to people that she had no right to be surprised if ill-natured things were said of her

No one ever heard Mally Trenglos complain of her work, but about this time she was heard to make great and loud complaints of the treatment she received from some of her neighbours It was known that she went with her plaints to Mr Polwarth, and when he could not help her, or did not give her such instant help as she needed, she went—ah, so foolishly! to the office of a certain attorney at Camelford, who was not likely to prove himself a better friend than Mr Polwarth

Now the nature of her injury was as follows The place in which she collected her seaweed was a little cove, the people had come to call it Malachi's Cove from the name of the old man who lived there,—which was so formed, that the margin of the sea therein could only be reached by the passage from the top down to Trenglos's hut The

breadth of the cove when the sea was out might perhaps be two hundred yards, and on each side the rocks ran out in such a way that both from north and south the domain of Trenglos was guarded from intruders And this locality had been well chosen for its intended purpose

There was a rush of the sea into the cove, which carried there large, drifting masses of seaweed, leaving them among the rocks when the tide was out During the equinoctial winds of the spring and autumn the supply would never fail, and even when the sea was calm, the long, soft, salt-bedewed, trailing masses of the weed, could be gathered there when they could not be found elsewhere for miles along the coast The task of getting the weed from the breakers was often difficult and dangerous,—so difficult that much of it was left to be carried away by the next incoming tide

Mally doubtless did not gather half the crop that was there at her feet What was taken by the returning waves she did not regret, but when interlopers came upon her cove, and gathered her wealth,—her grandfather's wealth, beneath her eyes, then her heart was broken It was this interloping, this intrusion, that drove poor Mally to the Camelford attorney But, alas, though the Camelford attorney took Mally's money, he could do nothing for her, and her heart was broken!

She had an idea, in which no doubt her grandfather shared, that the path to the cove was, at any rate, their property When she was told that the cove, and sea running into the cove, were not the freeholds of her grandfather, she understood that the statement might be true But what then as to the use of the path? Who had made the path what it was? Had she not painfully, wearily, with exceeding toil, carried up bits of rock with her own little hands, that her grandfather's donkey might have footing for his feet? Had she not scraped together crumbs of earth along the face of the cliff that she might make easier to the animal the track of that rugged way? And now, when she saw big farmers' lads coming down with other donkeys,—and, indeed, there was one who came with a pony, no boy, but a young

man, old enough to know better than rob a poor old man and a young girl,—she reviled the whole human race, and swore that the Camelford attorney was a fool

Any attempt to explain to her that there was still weed enough for her was worse than useless Was it not all hers and his, or, at any rate, was not the sole way to it his and hers? And was not her trade stopped and impeded? Had she not been forced to back her laden donkey down, twenty yards she said, but it had, in truth, been five, because Farmer Gunliffe's son had been in the way with his thieving pony? Farmer Gunliffe had wanted to buy her weed at his own price, and because she had refused he had set on his thieving son to destroy her in this wicked way

'I'll hamstring the beast the next time as he's down here!' said Mally to old Glos, while the angry fire literally streamed from her eyes

Farmer Gunliffe's small homestead—he held about fifty acres of land—was close by the village of Tintagel, and not a mile from the cliff The sea-wrack, as they call it, was pretty well the only manure within his reach, and no doubt he thought it hard that he should be kept from using it by Mally Trenglos and her obstinacy

'There's heaps of other coves, Barty,' said Mally to Barty Gunliffe, the farmer's son

'But none so nigh, Mally, nor yet none that fills 'emselves as this place'

Then he explained to her that he would not take the weed that came up close to hand He was bigger than she was, and stronger, and would get it from the outer rocks, with which she never meddled Then, with scorn in her eye, she swore that she could get it where he durst not venture, and repeated her threat of hamstringing the pony Barty laughed at her wrath, jeered her because of her wild hair, and called her a mermaid

'I'll mermaid you!' she cried 'Mermaid, indeed! I wouldn't be a man to come and rob a poor girl and an old cripple But you're no man, Barty Gunliffe! You're not half a man'

Nevertheless, Bartholomew Gunliffe was a very fine

young fellow, as far as the eye went He was about five feet eight inches high, with strong arms and legs, with light curly brown hair and blue eyes His father was but in a small way as a farmer, but, nevertheless, Barty Gunliffe was well thought of among the girls around Everybody liked Barty,—excepting only Mally Trenglos, and she hated him like poison

Barty, when he was asked why so good-natured a lad as he persecuted a poor girl and an old man, threw himself upon the justice of the thing It wouldn't do at all, according to his view, that any single person should take upon himself to own that which God Almighty sent as the common property of all He would do Mally no harm, and so he had told her But Mally was a vixen,—a wicked little vixen, and she must be taught to have a civil tongue in her head When once Mally would speak him civil as he went for weed, he would get his father to pay the old man some sort of toll for the use of the path

'Speak him civil?' said Mally 'Never, not while I have a tongue in my mouth!' And I fear old Glos encouraged her rather than otherwise in her view of the matter

But her grandfather did not encourage her to hamstring the pony Hamstringing a pony would be a serious thing, and old Glos thought it might be very awkward for both of them if Mally were put into prison He suggested, therefore, that all manner of impediments should be put in the way of the pony's feet, surmising that the well-trained donkey might be able to work in spite of them And Barty Gunliffe, on his next descent, did find the passage very awkward when he came near to Malachi's hut, but he made his way down, and poor Mally saw the lumps of rock at which she had laboured so hard pushed on one side or rolled out of the way with a steady persistency of injury towards herself that almost drove her frantic

'Well, Barty, you're a nice boy,' said old Glos, sitting in the doorway of the hut, as he watched the intruder

'I ain't a doing no harm to none as doesn't harm me,' said Barty 'The sea's free to all, Malachi'

'And the sky's free to all, but I musn't get up on the top of your big barn to look at it,' said Mally, who was standing among the rocks with a long hook in her hand The long hook was the tool with which she worked in dragging the weed from the waves 'But you ain't got no justice nor yet no sperrit, or you wouldn't come here to vex an old man like he'

'I didn't want to vex him, nor yet to vex you, Mally You let me be for a while, and we'll be friends yet'

'Friends!' exclaimed Mally 'Who'd have the likes of you for a friend? What are you moving them stones for? Them stones belongs to grandfather' And in her wrath she made a movement as though she were going to fly at him

'Let him be, Mally,' said the old man, 'let him be He'll get his punishment He'll come to be drowned some day if he comes down here when the wind is in shore'

'That he may be drowned then!' said Mally, in her anger 'If he was in the big hole there among the rocks, and the sea running in at half tide, I wouldn't lift a hand to help him out'

'Yes, you would, Mally, you'd fish me up with your hook like a big stick of seaweed'

She turned from him with scorn as he said this, and went into the hut It was time for her to get ready for her work, and one of the great injuries done her lay in this,—that such a one as Barty Gunliffe should come and look at her during her toil among the breakers

It was an afternoon in April, and the hour was some thing after four o'clock There had been a heavy wind from the north-west all the morning, with gusts of rain, and the sea-gulls had been in and out of the cove all the day, which was a sure sign to Mally that the incoming tide would cover the rocks with weed

The quick waves were now returning with wonderful celerity over the low reefs, and the time had come at which the treasure must be seized, if it was to be garnered on that day By seven o'clock it would be growing dark, at nine it would be high water, and before daylight the

crop would be carried out again if not collected All this Mally understood very well, and some of this Barty was beginning to understand also

As Mally came down with her bare feet bearing her long hook in her hand, she saw Barty's pony standing patiently on the sand, and in her heart she longed to attack the brute Barty at this moment, with a common three-pronged fork in his hand, was standing down on a large rock, gazing forth towards the waters He had declared that he would gather the weed only at places which were inaccessible to Mally, and he was looking out that he might settle where he would begin

'Let 'un be, let 'un be,' shouted the old man to Mally, as he saw her take a step towards the beast, which she hated almost as much as she hated the man

Hearing her grandfather's voice through the wind, she desisted from her purpose, if any purpose she had had, and went forth to her work As she passed down the cove, and scrambled in among the rocks, she saw Barty still standing on his perch, out beyond, the white-curling waves were cresting and breaking themselves with violence, and the wind was howling among the caverns and abutments of the cliff

Every now and then there came a squall of rain, and though there was sufficient light, the heavens were black with clouds A scene more beautiful might hardly be found by those who love the glories of the coast The light for such objects was perfect Nothing could exceed the grandeur of the colours,—the blue of the open sea, the white of the breaking waves, the yellow sands, or the streaks of red and brown which gave such richness to the cliff

But neither Mally nor Barty were thinking of such things as these Indeed they were hardly thinking of their trade after its ordinary forms Barty was meditating how he might best accomplish his purpose of working beyond the reach of Mally's feminine powers, and Mally was resolving that wherever Barty went she would go farther

And, in many respects, Mally had the advantage She

knew every rock in the spot, and was sure of those which gave a good foothold, and sure also of those which did not And then her activity had been made perfect by practice for the purpose to which it was to be devoted Barty, no doubt, was stronger than she, and quite as active But Barty could not jump among the waves from one stone to another as she could do, nor was he as yet able to get aid in his work from the very force of the water as she could get it She had been hunting seaweed in that cove since she had been an urchin of six years old, and she knew every hole and corner and every spot of vantage The waves were her friends, and she could use them She could measure their strength, and knew when and where it would cease

Mally was great down in the salt pools of her own cove,—great, and very fearless As she watched Barty make his way forward from rock to rock, she told herself, gleefully, that he was going astray The curl of the wind as it blew into the cove would not carry the weed up to the northern buttresses of the cove, and then there was the great hole just there,—the great hole of which she had spoken when she wished him evil

And now she went to work, hooking up the dishevelled hairs of the ocean, and landing many a cargo on the extreme margin of the sand, from whence she would be able in the evening to drag it back before the invading waters would return to reclaim the spoil

And on his side also Barty made his heap up against the northern buttresses of which I have spoken Barty's heap became big and still bigger, so that he knew, let the pony work as he might, he could not take it all up that evening But still it was not as large as Mally's heap Mally's hook was better than his fork, and Mally's skill was better than his strength And when he failed in some haul Mally would jeer him with a wild, weird laughter, and shriek to him through the wind that he was not half a man At first he answered her with laughing words, but before long, as she boasted of her success and pointed to his failure, he became angry, and then he answered her no more He became angry with

himself, in that he missed so much of the plunder before him

The broken sea was full of the long straggling growth which the waves had torn up from the bottom of the ocean, but the masses were carried past him away from him,—nay, once or twice over him, and then Mally's weird voice would sound in his ear, jeering him The gloom among the rocks was now becoming thicker and thicker, the tide was beating in with increased strength, and the gusts of wind came with quicker and greater violence But still he worked on While Mally worked he would work, and he would work for some time after she was driven in He would not be beaten by a girl

The great hole was now full of water but of water which seemed to be boiling as though in a pot And the pot was full of floating masses,—large treasures of sea-weed which were thrown to and fro upon its surface, but lying there so thick that one would seem almost able to rest upon it without sinking

Mally knew well how useless it was to attempt to rescue aught from the fury of that boiling cauldron The hole went in under the rocks, and the side of it towards the shore lay high, slippery, and steep The hole even at low water, was never empty, and Mally believed that there was no bottom to it Fish thrown in there could escape out to the ocean, miles away,—so Mally in her softer moods would tell the visitors to the cove She knew the hole well Poulnadioul she was accustomed to call it, which was supposed, when translated, to mean that this was the hole of the Evil One Never did Mally attempt to make her own of weed which had found its way into that pot

But Barty Gunliffe knew no better, and she watched him as he endeavoured to steady himself on the treacherously slippery edge of the pool He fixed himself there and made a haul, with some small success How he managed it she hardly knew, but she stood still for a while watching him anxiously, and then she saw him slip He slipped, and recovered himself,—slipped again, and again recovered himself

'Barty, you fool!' she screamed, 'if you get yourself pitched in there you'll never come out no more.'

Whether she simply wished to frighten him, or whether her heart relented and she had thought of his danger with dismay, who shall say? She could not have told herself. She hated him as much as ever,—but she could hardly have wished to see him drowned before her eyes.

'You go on, and don't mind me,' said he, speaking in a hoarse, angry tone.

'Mind you!—who minds you?' retorted the girl. And then she again prepared herself for her work.

But as she went down over the rocks with her long hook balanced in her hands, she suddenly heard a splash, and, turning quickly round, saw the body of her enemy tumbling amidst the eddying waves in the pool. The tide had now come up so far that every succeeding wave washed into it and over it from the side nearest to the sea, and then ran down again back from the rocks, as the rolling wave receded, with a noise like the fall of a cataract. And then, when the surplus water had retreated for a moment, the surface of the pool would be partly calm, though the fretting bubbles would still boil up and down, and there was ever a simmer on the surface, as though, in truth, the cauldron were heated. But this time of comparative rest was but a moment, for the succeeding breaker would come up almost as soon as the foam of the preceding one had gone, and then again the waters would be dashed upon the rocks, and the sides would echo with the roar of the angry wave.

Instantly Mally hurried across to the edge of the pool, crouching down upon her hands and knees for security as she did so. As a wave receded, Barty's head and face was carried round near to her, and she could see that his forehead was covered with blood. Whether he were alive or dead she did not know. She had seen nothing but his blood, and the light-coloured hair of his head lying amidst the foam. Then his body was drawn along by the suction of the retreating wave, but the mass of water that escaped was not on this occasion large enough to carry the man out with it.

upon his hair to move it back from his face, and then she bent over his mouth to see if he breathed, and as she looked at him she knew that he was beautiful

What would she not give that he might live? Nothing now was so precious to her as his life,—as this life which she had so far rescued from the waters But what could she do? Her grandfather could scarcely get himself down over the rocks, if indeed he could succeed in doing so much as that Could she drag the wounded man backwards, if it were only a few feet, so that he might lie above the reach of the waves till further assistance could be procured?

She set herself to work and she moved him, almost lifting him As she did so she wondered at her own strength, but she was very strong at that moment Slowly, tenderly, falling on the rocks herself so that he might fall on her, she got him back to the margin of the sand, to a spot which the waters would not reach for the next two hours

Here her grandfather met them, having seen at last what had happened from the door

'Dada,' she said, 'he fell into the pool yonder, and was battered against the rocks See there at his forehead '

'Mally, I'm thinking that he's dead already,' said old Glos, peering down over the body

'No, dada, he is not dead, but mayhap he's dying But I ll go at once up to the farm '

'Mally,' said the old man, 'look at his head They'll say we murdered him '

'Who'll say so? Who'll lie like that? Didn't I pull him out of the hole?'

'What matters that? His father'll say we killed him '

It was manifest to Mally that whatever any one might say hereafter, her present course was plain before her She must run up the path to Gunliffe's farm and get necessary assistance If the world were as bad as her grandfather said, it would be so bad that she would not care to live longer in it But be that as it might, there was no doubt as to what she must do now

So away she went as fast as her naked feet could carry her up the cliff When at the top she looked round to

see if any person might be within ken, but she saw no one So she ran with all her speed along the headland of the corn-field which led in the direction of old Gunliffe's house, and as she drew near to the homestead she saw that Barty's mother was leaning on the gate As she approached, she attempted to call, but her breath failed her for any purpose of loud speech, so she ran on till she was able to grasp Mrs Gunliffe by the arm

'Where's himself?' she said, holding her hand upon her beating heart that she might husband her breath

'Who is it you mean?' said Mrs Gunliffe, who participated in the family feud against Trenglos and his granddaughter 'What does the girl clutch me for in that way?'

'He's dying then, that's all'

'Who is dying? Is it old Malachi? If the old man's bad, we'll send some one down'

'It ain't dada, it's Barty! Where's himself? where's the master?' But by this time Mrs Gunliffe was in an agony of despair, and was calling out for assistance lustily Happily Gunliffe, the father, was at hand, and with him a man from the neighbouring village

'Will you not send for the doctor?' said Mally 'Oh, man, you should send for the doctor!'

Whether any orders were given for the doctor she did not know, but in a very few minutes she was hurrying across the field again towards the path to the cove, and Gunliffe with the other man and his wife were following her

As Mally went along she recovered her voice, for their step was not so quick as hers, and that which to them was a hurried movement, allowed her to get her breath again And as she went she tried to explain to the father what had happened, saying but little, however, of her own doings in the matter The wife hung behind listening, exclaiming every now and again that her boy was killed, and then asking wild questions as to his being yet alive The father, as he went, said little He was known as a silent, sober man, well spoken of for diligence and general conduct, but supposed to be stern and very hard when angered

As they drew near to the top of the path, the other man whispered something to him, and then he turned round upon Mally and stopped her

'If he has come by his death between you, your blood shall be taken for his,' said he

Then the wife shrieked out that her child had been murdered, and Mally, looking round into the faces of the three, saw that her grandfather's words had come true They suspected her of having taken the life, in saving which she had nearly lost her own

She looked round at them with awe in her face, and then, without saying a word, preceded them down the path What had she to answer when such a charge as that was made against her? If they chose to say that she pushed him into the pool, and hit him with her hook as he lay amidst the waters, how could she show that it was not so?

Poor Mally knew little of the law of evidence, and it seemed to her that she was in their hands But as she went down the steep track with a hurried step,—a step so quick that they could not keep up with her,—her heart was very full,—very full and very high She had striven for the man's life as though he had been her brother The blood was yet not dry on her own legs and arms, where she had torn them in his service At one moment she had felt sure that she would die with him in that pool And now they said that she had murdered him! It may be that he was not dead, and what would he say if ever he should speak again? Then she thought of that moment when his eyes had opened, and he had seemed to see her She had no fear for herself, for her heart was very high But it was full also,—full of scorn, disdain, and wrath

When she had reached the bottom, she stood close to the door of the hut waiting for them, so that they might precede her to the other group, which was there in front of them, at a little distance on the sand

'He is there, and dada is with him Go and look at him,' said Mally

The father and mother ran on stumbling over the

stones, but Mally remained behind by the door of the hut

Barty Gunliffe was lying on the sand where Mally had left him, and old Malachi Trenglos was standing over him, resting himself with difficulty upon a stick

'Not a move he s moved since she left him,' said he, 'not a move I put his head on the old rug as you see and I tried 'un with a drop of gin, but he wouldn't take it,—he wouldn't take it'

'Oh, my boy! my boy!' said the mother, throwing herself beside her son upon the sand

'Haud your tongue, woman,' said the father, kneeling down slowly by the lad's head, 'whimpering that way will do 'un no good'

Then having gazed for a minute or two upon the pale face beneath him, he looked up sternly into that of Malachi Trenglos

The old man hardly knew how to bear this terrible inquisition

'He would come,' said Malachi 'he brought it all upon hisself'

'Who was it struck him?' said the father

'Sure he struck hisself, as he fell among the breakers'

'Liar!' said the father, looking up at the old man

'They have murdered him!—they have murdered him!' shrieked the mother

'Haud your peace, woman!' said the husband again 'They shall give us blood for blood'

Mally, leaning against the corner of the hovel, heard it all, but did not stir They might say what they liked They might make it out to be murder They might drag her and her grandfather to Camelford Gaol, and then to Bodmin, and the gallows, but they could not take from her the conscious feeling that was her own She had done her best to save him,—her very best And she had saved him!

She remembered her threat to him before they had gone down on the rocks together, and her evil wish Those words had been very wicked, but since that she had risked her life to save his They might say what they

pleased of her, and do what they pleased She knew what she knew

Then the father raised his son's head and shoulders in his arms, and called on the others to assist him in carrying Barty towards the path They raised him between them carefully and tenderly, and lifted their burden on towards the spot at which Mally was standing She never moved, but watched them at their work, and the old man followed them, hobbling after them with his crutch

When they had reached the end of the hut she looked upon Barty's face, and saw that it was very pale There was no longer blood upon the forehead, but the great gash was to be seen there plainly, with its jagged cut, and the skin livid and blue round the orifice His light brown hair was hanging back, as she had made it to hang when she had gathered it with her hand after the big wave had passed over them Ah, how beautiful he was in Mally's eyes with that pale face, and the sad scar upon his brow! She turned her face away, that they might not see her tears, but she did not move, nor did she speak

But now, when they had passed the end of the hut, shuffling along with their burden, she heard a sound which stirred her She roused herself quickly from her leaning posture, and stretched forth her head as though to listen, then she moved to follow them Yes, they had stopped at the bottom of the path, and had again laid the body on the rocks She heard that sound again, as of a long, long sigh, and then, regardless of any of them, she ran to the wounded man's head

'He is not dead,' she said 'There, he is not dead'

As she spoke Barty's eyes opened, and he looked about him

'Barty, my boy, speak to me,' said the mother

Barty turned his face upon his mother, smiled, and then stared about him wildly

'How is it with thee, lad?' said his father Then Barty turned his face again to the latter voice, and as he did so his eyes fell upon Mally

'Mally!' he said, 'Mally!'

It could have wanted nothing further to any of those

present to teach them that, according to Barty's own view of the case, Mally had not been his enemy, and, in truth, Mally herself wanted no further triumph That word had vindicated her, and she withdrew back to the hut

'Dada,' she said, 'Barty is not dead, and I'm thinking they won't say anything more about our hurting him '

Old Glos shook his head He was glad the lad hadn't met his death there, he didn't want the young man's blood, but he knew what folk would say The poorer he was the more sure the world would be to trample on him Mally said what she could to comfort him, being full of comfort herself

She would have crept up to the farm if she dared, to ask how Barty was But her courage failed her when she thought of that, so she went to work again, dragging back the weed she had saved to the spot at which on the morrow she would load the donkey As she did this she saw Barty's pony still standing patiently under the rock, so she got a lock of fodder and threw it down before the beast

It had become dark down in the cove, but she was still dragging back the sea-weed, when she saw the glimmer of a lantern coming down the pathway It was a most unusual sight, for lanterns were not common down in Malachi's Cove Down came the lantern rather slowly, —much more slowly than she was in the habit of descending, and then through the gloom she saw the figure of a man standing at the bottom of the path She went up to him, and saw that it was Mr Gunliffe, the father

Is that Mally?' said Gunliffe

'Yes, it is Mally, and how is Barty, Mr Gunliffe?'

'You must come to 'un yourself, now at once,' said the farmer 'He won't sleep a wink till he's seed you You must not say but you'll come '

'Sure I'll come if I'm wanted,' said Mally

Gunliffe waited a moment, thinking that Mally might have to prepare herself, but Mally needed no preparation She was dripping with salt water from the weed which she had been dragging, and her elfin locks were

streaming wildly from her head, but, such as she was, she was ready

'Dada's in bed,' she said, 'and I can go now if you please '

Then Gunliffe turned round and followed her up the path, wondering at the life which this girl led so far away from all her sex It was now dark night, and he had found her working at the very edge of the rolling waves by herself, in the darkness, while the only human being who might seem to be her protector had already gone to his bed

When they were at the top of the cliff Gunliffe took her by her hand, and led her along She did not comprehend this, but she made no attempt to take her hand from his Something he said about falling on the cliffs, but it was muttered so lowly that Mally hardly understood him But, in truth, the man knew that she had saved his boy's life, and that he had injured her instead of thanking her He was now taking her to his heart, and as words were wanting to him, he was showing his love after this silent fashion He held her by the hand as though she were a child, and Mally tripped along at his side asking him no questions

When they were at the farm-yard gate, he stopped there for a moment

'Mally, my girl,' he said, 'he'll not be content till he sees thee, but thou must not stay long wi' him, lass Doctor says he's weak like, and wants sleep badly '

Mally merely nodded her head, and then they entered the house Mally had never been within it before, and looked about wit wondering eyes at the furniture of the big kitchen Did any idea of her future destiny flash upon her then, I wonder? But she did not pause here a moment, but was led up to the bedroom above stairs, where Barty was lying on his mother's bed

'Is it Mally herself?' said the voice of the weak youth

'It's Mally herself,' said the mother, 'so now you can say what you please '

'Mally,' said he, 'Mally, it's along of you that I'm alive this moment '

'I'll not forget it on her,' said the father, with his eyes turned away from her 'I'll never forget it on her'

'We hadn't a one but only him,' said the mother, with her apron up to her face

'Mally, you'll be friends with me now?' said Barty

To have been made lady of the manor of the cove for ever, Mally couldn't have spoken a word now It was not only that the words and presence of the people there cowed her and made her speechless but the big bed, and the looking-glass, and the unheard-of wonders of the chamber, made her feel her own insignificance But she crept up to Barty's side, and put her hand upon his

'I'll come and get the weed, Mally, but it shall all be for you,' said Barty

'Indeed, you won't then, Barty dear,' said the mother, 'you'll never go near the awesome place again What would we do if you were took from us?'

'He mustn't go near the hole if he does,' said Mally, speaking at last in a solemn voice, and imparting the knowledge which she had kept to herself while Barty was her enemy, ''specially not if the wind's any way from the nor'ard'

'She'd better go down now,' said the father

Barty kissed the hand which he held, and Mally, looking at him as he did so, thought that he was like an angel

'You'll come and see us to-morrow, Mally,' said he

To this she made no answer, but followed Mrs Gunliffe out of the room When they were down in the kitchen, the mother had tea for her, and thick milk, and a hot cake,—all the delicacies which the farm could afford I don't know that Mally cared much for the eating and drinking that night, but she began to think that the Gunliffes were good people,—very good people It was better thus, at any rate, than being accused of murder and carried off to Camelford prison

'I'll never forget it on her—never,' the father had said

Those words stuck to her from that moment, and seemed to sound in her ears all the night How glad she was that Barty had come down to the cove,—oh, yes, how glad! There was no question of his dying now, and

as for the b'ow on his forehead, what harm was that to a lad like him?

'But father shall go with you,' said Mrs Gunliffe, when Mally prepared to start for the cove by herself Mally, however, would not hear of this She could find her way to the cove whether it was light or dark

'Mally, thou art my child now, and I shall think of thee so,' said the mother, as the girl went off by herself

Mally thought of this, too, as she walked home How could she become Mrs Gunliffe's child, ah, how?

I need not, I think, tell the tale any further That Mally did become Mrs Gunliffe's child, and how she became so the reader will understand, and in process of time the big kitchen and all the wonders of the farm house were ner own The people said that Barty Gunliffe had married a mermaid out of the sea, but when it was said in Mally's hearing I doubt whether she liked it, and when Barty himself would call her a meimaid she would frown at him, and throw about her black hair, and pretend to cuff him with her little hand

Old Glos was brought up to the top of the cliff, and lived his few remaining days under the roof of Mr Gunliffe's house, and as for the cove and the right of seaweed, from that time forth all that has been supposed to attach itself to Gunliffe's farm, and I do not know that any of the neighbours are prepared to dispute the right

GEORGE MEREDITH

1828–1909

THE PUNISHMENT OF SHAHPESH, THE PERSIAN, ON KHIPIL, THE BUILDER

[From *The Shaving of Shagpat* 1856]

THEY relate that Shahpesh, the Persian, commanded the building of a palace, and Khipil was his builder The work lingered from the first year of the reign of Shahpesh even to his fourth One day Shahpesh went to the river-side where it stood, to inspect it Khipil was sitting on a marble slab among the stones and blocks, round him stretched lazily the masons and stonecutters and slaves of burden, and they with the curve of humorous enjoyment on their lips, for he was reciting to them adventures, interspersed with anecdotes and recitations and poetic instances, as was his wont They were like pleased flocks whom the shepherd hath led to a pasture freshened with brooks, there to feed indolently, he, the shepherd, in the midst

Now, the King said to him, 'O Khipil, show me my palace where it standeth, for I desire to gratify my sight with its fairness'

Khipil abased himself before Shahpesh, and answered, ''Tis even here, O King of the age, where thou delightest the earth with thy foot and the ear of thy slave with sweetness Surely a site of vantage, one that dominateth earth, air, and water, which is the builder's first and chief requisition for a noble palace, a palace to fill foreign kings and sultans with the distraction of envy, and it is, O Sovereign of the time, a site, this site I have chosen, to occupy the tongues of travellers and awaken the flights of poets!'

Shahpesh smiled and said, 'The site is good! I laud the site! Likewise I laud the wisdom of Ebn Busrac, where he exclaims

Be sure, where Virtue faileth to appear,
For her a gorgeous mansion men will rear,
And day and night her praises will be heard,
Where never yet she spake a single word'

Then said he, 'O Khipil, my builder, there was once a farm-servant that, having neglected in the seed-time to sow, took to singing the richness of his soil when it was harvest, in proof of which he displayed the abundance of weeds that coloured the land everywhere Discover to me now the completeness of my halls and apartments, I pray thee, O Khipil, and be the excellence of thy construction made visible to me!'

Quoth Khipil, 'To hear is to obey'

He conducted Shahpesh among the unfinished saloons and imperfect courts and roofless rooms, and by half-erected obelisks, and columns pierced and chipped, of the palace of his building And he was bewildered at the words spoken by Shahpesh, but now the King exalted him, and admired the perfection of his craft, the greatness of his labour, the speediness of his construction, his assiduity, feigning not to behold his negligence

Presently they went up winding balusters to a marble terrace, and the King said, 'Such is thy devotion and constancy in toil, O Khipil, that thou shalt walk before me here'

He then commanded Khipil to precede him, and Khipil was heightened with the honour When Khipil had paraded a short space he stopped quickly, and said to Shahpesh, 'Here is, as it chanceth, a gap, O King! and we can go no further this way'

Shahpesh said, 'All is perfect, and it is my will thou delay not to advance'

Khipil cried, 'The gap is wide O mighty King, and manifest, and it is an incomplete part of thy palace'

Then said Shahpesh, 'O Khipil, I see no distinction between one part and another, excellent are all parts in beauty and proportion, and there can be no part incomplete in this palace that occupieth the builder four years in its building so advance, do my bidding'

Khipil yet hesitated, for the gap was of many strides,

and at the bottom of the gap was a deep water, and he one that knew not the motion of swimming. But Shahpesh ordered his guard to point their arrows in the direction of Khipil, and Khipil stepped forward hurriedly, and fell in the gap, and was swallowed by the water below. When he rose the second time, succour reached him, and he was drawn to land trembling, his teeth chattering. And Shahpesh praised him, and said, 'This is an apt contrivance for a bath, Khipil, O my builder! well conceived, one that taketh by surprise, and it shall be thy reward daily when much talking hath fatigued thee.'

Then he bade Khipil lead him to the hall of state. And when they were there Shahpesh said, 'For a privilege, and as a mark of my approbation, I give thee permission to sit in the marble chair of yonder throne, even in my presence, O Khipil.'

Khipil said, 'Surely, O King, the chair is not yet executed.'

And Shahpesh exclaimed, 'If this be so, thou art but the length of thy measure on the ground, O talkative one!'

Khipil said, 'Nay, 'tis not so, O King of splendours! blind that I am! yonder's indeed the chair.'

And Khipil feared the King, and went to the place where the chair should be, and bent his body in a sitting posture, eyeing the King, and made pretence to sit in the chair of Shahpesh, as in conspiracy to amuse his master.

Then said Shahpesh, 'For a token that I approve thy execution of the chair, thou shalt be honoured by remaining seated in it up to the hour of noon, but move thou to the right or to the left, showing thy soul insensible of the honour done thee, transfixed thou shalt be with twenty arrows and five.'

The King then left him with a guard of twenty-five of his body-guard, and they stood around him with bent bows, so that Khipil dared not move from his sitting posture. And the masons and the people crowded to see Khipil sitting on his master's chair, for it became rumoured about. When they beheld him sitting upon nothing, and he trembling to stir for fear of the loosening

of the arrows, they laughed so that they rolled upon the floor of the hall, and the echoes of laughter were a thousandfold Surely the arrows of the guards swayed with the laughter that shook them

Now, when the time had expired for his sitting in the chair, Shahpesh returned to him, and he was cramped, pitiable to see, and Shahpesh said, 'Thou hast been exalted above men, O Khipil! for that thou didst execute for thy master has been found fitting for thee'

Then he bade Khipil lead the way to the noble gardens of dalliance and pleasure that he had planted and contrived And Khipil went in that state described by the poet, when we go draggingly, with remonstrating members,

> Knowing a dreadful strength behind,
> And a dark fate before

They came to the gardens, and behold, these were full of weeds and nettles, the fountains dry, no tree to be seen—a desert And Shahpesh cried, 'This is indeed of admirable design, O Khipil! Feelest thou not the coolness of the fountains?—their refreshingness? Truly I am grateful to thee! And these flowers, pluck me now a handful, and tell me of their perfume'

Khipil plucked a handful of the nettles that were there in the place of flowers, and put his nose to them before Shahpesh, till his nose was reddened, and desire to rub it waxed in him, and possessed him, and became a passion, so that he could scarce refrain from rubbing it even in the King's presence And the King encouraged him to sniff and enjoy their fragrance, repeating the poet's words

> Methinks I am a lover and a child,
> A little child and happy lover, both!
> When by the breath of flowers I am beguiled
> From sense of pain, and lulled in odorous sloth
> So I adore them, that no mistress sweet
> Seems worthier of the love which they awake
> In innocence and beauty more complete,
> Was never maiden cheek in morning lake
> Oh, while I live, surround me with fresh flowers!
> Oh, when I die, then bury me in their bowers!

And the King said, 'What sayest thou, O my builder? that is a fair quotation, applicable to thy feelings, one that expresseth them?'

Khipil answered, ''Tis eloquent, O great King! comprehensiveness would be its portion, but that it alludeth not to the delight of chafing.'

Then Shahpesh laughed, and cried, 'Chafe not! it is an ill thing and a hideous! This nosegay, O Khipil, it is for thee to present to thy mistress. Truly she will receive thee well after its presentation! I will have it now sent in thy name, with word that thou followest quickly. And for thy nettled nose, surely if the whim seize thee that thou desirest its chafing, to thy neighbour is permitted what to thy hand is refused.'

The King set a guard upon Khipil to see that his orders were executed, and appointed a time for him to return to the gardens.

At the hour indicated Khipil stood before Shahpesh again. He was pale, saddened, his tongue drooped like the tongue of a heavy bell, that when it soundeth giveth forth mournful sounds only: he had also the look of one battered with many beatings. So the King said, 'How of the presentation of the flowers of thy culture, O Khipil?'

He answered, 'Surely, O King, she received me with wrath, and I am shamed by her.'

And the King said, 'How of my clemency in the matter of the chafing?'

Khipil answered, 'O King of splendours! I made petition to my neighbours whom I met, accosting them civilly and with imploring, for I ached to chafe, and it was the very raging thirst of desire to chafe that was mine, devouring eagerness for solace of chafing. And they chafed me, O King, yet not in those parts which throbbed for the chafing, but in those which abhorred it.'

Then Shahpesh smiled and said, ''Tis certain that the magnanimity of monarchs is as the rain that falleth, the sun that shineth: and in this spot it fertilizeth richness, in that encourageth rankness. So art thou but a weed, O Khipil! and my grace is thy chastisement.'

Now, the King ceased not persecuting Khipil, under

pretence of doing him honour and heaping favours on him Three days and three nights was Khipil gasping without water, compelled to drink of the drought of the fountain, as an honour at the hands of the King And he was seven days and seven nights made to stand with stretched arms, as they were the branches of a tree, in each hand a pomegranate And Shahpesh brought the people of his court to regard the wondrous pomegranate shoot planted by Khipil, very wondrous, and a new sort, worthy the gardens of a King So the wisdom of the King was applauded, and men wotted he knew how to punish offences in coin, by the punishment inflicted on Khipil, the builder Before that time his affairs had languished, and the currents of business instead of flowing had become stagnant pools It was the fashion to do as did Khipil, and fancy the tongue a constructor rather than a commentator, and there is a doom upon that people and that man which runneth to seed in gabble, as the poet says in his wisdom

If thou wouldst be famous, and rich in splendid fruits,
Leave to bloom the flower of things, and dig among the roots

Truly after Khipil's punishment there were few in the dominions of Shahpesh who sought to win the honours bestowed by him on gabblers and idlers as again the poet

When to loquacious fools with patience rare
I listen, I have thoughts of Khipil's chair
His bath, his nosegay, and his fount I see,—
Himself stretch'd out as a pomegranate tree
And that I am not Shahpesh I regret,
So to inmesh the babbler in his net
Well is that wisdom worthy to be sung
Which raised the Palace of the Wagging Tongue!

And whoso is punished after the fashion of Shahpesh, the Persian, on Khipil, the Builder, is said to be one 'in the Palace of the Wagging Tongue' to this time

WILLIAM HALE WHITE

('MARK RUTHERFORD')

1831–1913

MR WHITTAKER'S RETIREMENT

[From *More Pages from a Journal* 1910]

I HAD been a partner in the house of Whittaker, Johnson & Marsh, in the wholesale drug trade for twenty-five years, and, for the last ten years, senior partner For the first nine years of my seniority I was not only nominally, but practically, the head of the firm I had ceased to occupy myself with details, but nothing of importance was concluded without consulting me I was the pivot on which the management turned In the tenth year, after a long illness, my wife died I was very ill myself, and for months not a paper was sent to me When I returned to work I found that the junior partners, who were pushing men, had distributed between them what I was accustomed to do, and that some changes which they thought to be indispensable had been made I resumed my duties as well as I could, but it was difficult to pick up the dropped threads and I was dependent for explanation upon my subordinates Many transactions too, from a desire to avoid worrying me, were carried through without my knowledge, although formerly, as a matter of course, they would have been submitted to me Strangers, when they called, asked to see Johnson or Marsh I directed the messenger that they were to be shown into my room if I was disengaged This was a failure, for, when they came, I was obliged to ask for help, which was not given very generously Sometimes I sent for the papers, but it took a long time to read them, and my visitors became impatient During one of these interviews, I remember that I was sorely perplexed, but I had managed to say something loosely with no

particular meaning Johnson came in and at once took up the case, argued for ten minutes while I sat silent and helpless, and an arrangement was concluded in which I really had no voice whatever Now and then I strove to assert myself by disapproval of suggestions offered to me, but in the end was generally forced to admit I was wrong We had a very large order for which we were obliged to make special arrangements with manufacturers Both Johnson and Marsh were of opinion that a particular firm which had often supplied us was not to be trusted, as our dealings with them during my absence had been unsatisfactory I was inclined foolishly but naturally, to attach little importance to anything which had been done entirely without me, ridiculed their objections, and forced my decision upon them The firm broke down, our contract with them was cancelled, another had to be made under pressure, and we lost about five hundred pounds Although I was not reminded of my responsibility in so many words, I knew that I was solely to blame, I became more than ever convinced I was useless, and I was much dejected At last I made up my mind to retire I was urged to remain, but not, as I imagined, with any great earnestness, and on the 31st December 1856 I left the office in Eastcheap never to enter it again

For the first two or three weeks I enjoyed my freedom, but when they had passed I had had enough of it *I had nothing to do!* Every day at the hours when business was at its height, I thought of the hurry, of the inquiries, of the people waiting in the ante-room, of the ringing of bells, of the rapid instructions to clerks, of the consultations after the letters were opened, of our anxious deliberations, of the journeys to Scotland at an hour's notice, and of the interviews with customers I pictured to myself that all this still went on, but went on without me, while I had no better occupation than to unpack a parcel, pick the knots out of the string, and put it in a string-box I saw my happy neighbours drive off in the morning and return in the evening I envied them the haste, which I had so often cursed, over breakfast I

envied them, while I took an hour over lunch, the chop devoured in ten minutes, I envied them the weariness with which they dragged themselves along their gravel-paths, half an hour late for dinner I was thrown almost entirely amongst women I had no children, but a niece thirty-five years old, devoted to evangelical church affairs, kept house for me, and she had a multitude of female acquaintances, two or three of whom called every afternoon Sometimes, to relieve my loneliness, I took afternoon tea, and almost invariably saw the curate I was the only man present It was just as if, being strong, healthy, and blessed with a good set of teeth, I were being fed on water-gruel The bird-wittedness, the absence of resistance and of difficulty, were intolerable The curate, and occasionally the rector, tried to engage me, as I was a good subscriber, in discussion on church affairs, but there seemed to me to be nothing in these which required the force which was necessary for the commonest day in the City Mrs Coleman and the rector were once talking together most earnestly when I entered the room, and I instinctively sat down beside them, but I found that the subject of their eager debate was the allotment of stalls at a bazaar They were really excited—stirred I fully admit to their depths I believe they were more absorbed and anxious than I was on that never-to-be-forgotten morning when Mortons and Nicholsons both failed, and for two hours it was just a toss-up whether we should not go too

I went with my niece one day to St Paul's Churchyard to choose a gown, but it was too much for me to be in a draper's shop when the brokers' drug sales were just beginning I left my niece, walked round the Churchyard as fast as I could, trying to make people believe I was busy, and just as I came to Doctors Commons I stumbled against Larkins, who used to travel for Jackman and Larkins

'Hullo, Whittaker!' said he, 'haven't seen you since you left Lucky dog! Wish I could do the same Ta-ta, can't stop'

A year ago Mr Larkins, with the most pressing

engagement in front of him, would have spared me just as much time as I liked to give him

Formerly I woke up (sometimes, it is true, after a restless night) with the feeling that before me lay a day of adventure I did not know what was in my letters, nor what might happen Now, when I rose I had nothing to anticipate but fifteen hours of monotony varied only by my meals My niece proposed that I should belong to a club, but the members of clubs were not of my caste I had taken a pride in my garden and determined I would attend to it more myself I bought gardening books, but the gardener knew far more than I could ever hope to know, and I could not displace him I had been in the habit of looking through a microscope in the evening, although I did not understand any science in which the microscope is useful, and my slides were bought ready made I brought it out now in the daytime, but I was soon weary of it and sold it We went to Worthing for a month We had what were called comfortable lodgings and the weather was fine, but if I had been left to myself I should have gone back to Stockwell directly my boxes were unpacked We drove eastwards as far as we could and then westward, and after that there was nothing more to be done except to do the same thing over again At the end of the first week I could stand it no longer, and we returned I fancied my liver was out of order and consulted a physician He gave me some medicine and urged me to 'cultivate cheerful society', and to take more exercise I therefore tried long walks, and often extended them beyond Croydon, and once as far as Reigate, but I had never been accustomed to walking by myself, and as I knew the names of scarcely half a dozen birds or trees, my excursions gave me no pleasure I have stood on Banstead Downs in the blaze of sunlight on a still October morning, and when I saw the smoke-cloud black as night hang over the horizon northwards, I have longed with the yearning of an imprisoned convict to be the meanest of the blessed souls enveloped in it

I determined at last to break up my household at Stockwell, to move far away into the country, to breed

fowls—an occupation which I was assured was very profitable and very entertaining, dismiss my niece and marry again I began to consider which lady of those whom I knew would suit me best, and I found one who was exactly the person I wanted She was about thirty-five years old, was cheerful, fond of going out (I never was), a good housekeeper, played the piano fairly well, and, as the daughter of a retired major in the Army, had a certain air and manner which distinguished her from the wives and daughters of our set and would secure for me an acquaintance with the country gentlefolk, from which, without her, I should probably be debarred She had also told me when I mentioned my project to her, but saying nothing about marriage, that she doted on fowls—they had such pretty ways As it was obviously prudent not to engage myself until I knew more of her, I instigated my niece in a careless way to invite her to stay a fortnight with us She came, and once or twice I was on the verge of saying something decisive to her, but I could not A strange terror of change in my way of life took hold upon me I should now have to be more at home, and although I might occupy myself with the fowls during the morning and afternoon, the evening must be spent in company, and I could not endure for more than half an hour a drawing-room after dinner There was another reason for hesitation I could see the lady would accept me if I proposed to her, but I was not quite sure why She would in all probability survive me, and I fancied that her hope of survival might be her main reason for consenting I gave her up, but no sooner had she left us than I found myself impelled to make an offer to a handsome girl of eight-and-twenty who I was ass enough to dream might love me I was happily saved by an accident not worth relating, and although I afterwards dwelt much upon the charms of two or three other ladies and settled with myself I would take one of them, nothing came of my resolution I was greatly distressed by this growing indecision It began to haunt me If I made up my mind to-day that I would do this or that, I always had on the morrow twenty

reasons for not doing it I was never troubled with this malady in Eastcheap I was told that decay in the power of willing was one of the symptoms of softening of the brain, and this then was what was really the matter with me! It might last for years! Wretched creature! my life was to be nothing better than that of the horse in Bewick's terrible picture I was 'waiting for death'

Part of my income was derived from interest on money lent to a cousin Without any warning I had a letter to say that he was bankrupt, and that his estate would probably not pay eighteenpence in the pound It was quite clear that I must economize, and what to do and whither to go was an insoluble problem to me By chance I met an old City acquaintance who told me of a 'good thing' in Spanish bonds which, when information was disclosed which he possessed, were certain to rise twenty per cent If what he said was true—and I had no reason to doubt him—I could easily get back without much risk about two-thirds of the money I had lost Had I been in full work, I do not believe I should have wasted a shilling on the speculation, but the excitement attracted me, and I ventured a considerable sum In about a fortnight there was a sudden jump of two per cent in my securities, and I was so much elated that I determined to go farther I doubled my stake, in three weeks another rise was announced, I again increased the investment, and now I watched the market with feverish eagerness One day I was downstairs a quarter of an hour earlier than usual waiting for the boy who brought the paper I tore it open and to my horror saw that there was a panic on the Stock Exchange, my bonds were worthless, and I was ruined

I had always secretly feared that this would happen, and that I should be so distracted as to lose my reason To my surprise, I was never more self-possessed, and I was not so miserable as might have been expected I at once gave notice of discharge to my servants, sold nearly all my furniture, and let my house I was offered help, but declined it I moved into a little villa in one of the

new roads then being made at Brixton, and found that I possessed a capital which, placed in Consols—for I would not trust anything but the public funds—brought me one hundred and twenty-five pounds a year This was not enough for my niece, myself, and a maid, and I was forced to consider whether I could not obtain some employment To return to Eastcheap was clearly out of the question, but there was a possibility, although I was fifty-six, that my experience might make me useful elsewhere I therefore called on Jackman and Larkins at twelve o'clock, the hour at which I knew there was a chance of finding them able to see me During my prosperity I always walked straight into their room marked 'private', but now I went into the clerks' office, took off my hat and modestly inquired if either Mr Jackman or Mr Larkins could spare me a minute I was not asked to sit down—I, to whom these very clerks a little over a twelvemonth ago would have risen when I entered, but my message was taken, and I was told in reply that both Mr Jackman and Mr Larkins were engaged I was bold enough to send in another message and was informed I might call in two hours' time I went out, crossed London Bridge, and seeing the doors of St Saviour's, Southwark, open, rested there awhile When I returned at the end of two hours, I had to wait another ten minutes until a luncheon tray came out A bell then rang, which a clerk answered, and in about five minutes, with a 'come this way' I was ushered into the presence of Jackman, who was reading the newspaper with a decanter and a glass of sherry by his side

'Well, Whittaker, what brings you here? Ought to be looking after your grapes at Stockwell—but I forgot, heard you'd given up grape-growing Ah! odd thing, a man never retires, but he gets into some mess, marries or dabbles on the Stock Exchange I've known lots of cases like yours What can we do for you? Times are horribly bad' Jackman evidently thought I was going to borrow some money of him, and his tone altered when he found I did not come on that errand

'I was very sorry—really I was, my dear follow—to

hear of your loss, but it was a damned foolish thing to do, excuse me.'

'Mr Jackman,' said I, 'I have not lost all my property, but I cannot quite live on what is left. Can you give me some work? My connexion and knowledge of your business may be of some service.' I had put hundreds of pounds in this man's pocket, but forbore to urge this claim upon him.

'Delighted, I am sure, if it were possible, but we have no vacancy, and, to be quite plain with you, you are much too old. We could get more out of a boy at ten shillings a week than we could out of you.'

Mr Jackman drank another glass of sherry.

'But, sir'—(sir! that I should ever call Tom Jackman 'sir', but I did)—'as I just said, my experience and connexion might be valuable.'

'Oh, as to experience, me and Larkins supply all that, and the clerks do as they are told. Never keep a clerk more than two years; he then begins to think he knows too much and wants more pay. As to connexion, pardon me—mean nothing, of course—but your recommendation now wouldn't bring much.'

At this moment the door opened and Larkins entered in haste. 'I say, Jackman——' then turning and seeing me,—'Hullo, Whittaker, what the devil are you doing here? Jackman, I've just heard——'

'Good-bye, Whittaker,' said Jackman, 'sorry can't help you.'

Neither of them offered to shake hands, and I passed out into the street. The chop-houses were crammed, waiters were rushing hither and thither, I looked up at the first floor of that very superior house, used solely by principals, where I often had my lunch, and again crossed London Bridge on my way back. London Bridge at half-past one! I do not suppose I had ever been there at half-past one in my life. I saw a crowd still passing both southwards and northwards. At half-past nine it all went one way and at half-past six another. It was the morning and evening crowd which was the people to me. These half-past one o'clock creatures were strange

to me, loafers, nondescripts I was faint and sick when I reached home, for I walked all the way, and after vainly trying to eat something went straight to bed But the next post brought me a note saying that Jackman and Larkins were willing to engage me at a salary of £100 a year—much more, it was added, than they would have paid for more efficient service, but conceded as a recognition of the past The truth was, as I afterwards found out, that Larkins persuaded Jackman that it would increase their reputation to take old Whittaker Larkins too had become a little tired of soliciting orders, and I could act as his substitute I was known to nearly all the houses with which they did business and very likely should gain admittance where a stranger would be denied My hours would be long, from nine till seven, and must be observed rigidly Instead of my three-and-sixpenny lunch I should now have to take in my pocket whatever I wanted in the middle of the day For dinner I must substitute a supper—a meal which did not suit me I should have to associate with clerks, to meet as a humble subordinate those with whom I was formerly intimate as an equal, but all this was overlooked, and I was happy, happy as I had not been for months

It was on a Wednesday when I received my appointment, and on Monday I was to begin I said my prayers more fervently that night than I had said them for years, and determined that, please God, I would always go to church every Sunday morning no matter how fine it might be There were only three clear week-days Thursday, Friday, and Saturday, to be got through I imagined them to be holidays, although I had never before taken three consecutive holidays, save in those wretched Augusts or Septembers, when pride annually forced me away to the seaside At last Monday came our breakfast hour was henceforth fixed at half-past seven, and at eight o'clock I started to walk to Kennington, and thence to ride by an omnibus to King William's statue Oh! with what joy did I shut the little garden gate and march down the road, once more somebody! I looked round, saw other little front gates open, each by-

street contributed, so that in the Kennington Road there was almost a procession moving steadily and uniformly Citywards, and *I* was in it I was still a part of the great world, something depended on me Fifty-six? yes, but what was that? Many men are at their best at fifty-six So exhilarated was I, that just before I mounted the omnibus—it was a cold morning, but I would not ride inside—I treated myself to a twopenny cigar My excitement soon wore off I could not so far forget myself as not to make suggestions now and then, and Jackman took a delight in snubbing me It was a trial to me also to sit with the clerks We had never set ourselves up as grand people at Stockwell, but I had all my life been accustomed to delicate food properly cooked, and now that my appetite was declining with my years, I would almost at any time have gone without a meal rather than eat anything that was coarse or dirtily served My colleagues ridiculed my 'Stockwell manners', as they called them, and were very witty, so they thought, in their inquiries when I produced my sandwich wrapped up in a clean napkin, how much it cost me for my washing They were a very cheap set, had black finger-nails, and stuck their pens behind their ears One of them always brought a black-varnished canvas bag with him, not respectably stiff like leather—a puckered, dejected-looking bag It was deposited in the washing place to be out of the way of the sun At one o'clock it was brought out and emptied of its contents, which were usually a cold chop and a piece of bread A plate, knife and fork, and some pepper and salt were produced from the desk, and after the meat, which could be cut off from the chop, was devoured, the bone was gnawed, wrapped up in paper, and put back in the bag The plate, knife, and fork were washed in the wash-hand basin and wiped with the office jack-towel It was hard when old business friends called and I had to knock at the inner door and say, 'Mr —— wants to see you, sir,' the object of the visit not being entrusted to me A few of them behaved politely to me, but to others it seemed to be a pleasure to humble me On that very first Monday, Bullock, the

junior in Wiggens, Moggs, and Bullock, burst into the room. He knew me very well, but took no notice of me, although I was alone, except to ask—

'Is Mr Jackman in?'

'No, sir, can I do anything for you?'

He did not deign to say a word, but went out, slamming the door behind him.

Nevertheless I kept up my spirits, or rather they kept themselves up. At five o'clock, when the scramble to get the letters signed began, I thought of our street at home, so dull at that hour, of the milkman, and the muffin-boy, of the curate, and of my niece's companions, and reflected, thank God, that I was in the City, a man amongst men. When seven o'clock came and the gas was put out, there was the anticipation also of the fight for a place in the omnibus, especially if it was a wet night, and the certainty that I should meet with one or two neighbours who would recognize me. No more putting up window-blinds, pulling up weeds in the back garden, sticking in seeds which never grew, or errands to suburban shops at midday. How I used in my retirement to detest the sight of those little shopkeepers when the doors of Glyn's Bank were swinging to and fro! I came home dead-beaten now, it is true, but it was a luxury to be dead-beaten, and I slept more soundly than I had ever slept in my life. In about six months my position improved a little. Jackman's love for sherry grew upon him, and once or twice, to Larkins's disgust, his partner was not quite as fit to appear in public as he ought to have been. Very often he was absent, sick. Two of the cheap clerks also left in order to better themselves. I never shall forget the afternoon—I felt as if I could have danced for joy—when Larkins said to me, 'Whittaker, Mr Jackman hasn't very good health, and if he's not here when I am out, you must answer anybody who calls, but don't commit yourself—and—let me see—I was going to tell you you'll have ten pounds a year more, beginning next quarter—and there was something else—Oh! I recollect, if anybody should want to see Mr Jackman when he happens to be unwell here, and I am not

with him, send for me if you know where I am If you don't know, you must do the best you can' My office coat had hitherto been an old shiny, ragged thing, and I had always taken off my shirt-cuffs when I began work, because they so soon became dirty I rammed the old coat that night into the fire, brought my second-best coat in a brown paper parcel the next morning, and wore my shirt-cuffs all day long Continually I had to think—only fancy, to *think*—once more, in a very small way, it is true, but still to think and to act upon my thought, and when Larkins came in and inquired if anybody had called, he now and then said 'all right' when I told him what I had done A clerk from my old office swaggered in and did not remove his hat I descended from my stool and put on my own hat The next time he came he was more polite I have now had two years of it, and have not been absent for a day I hope I may go on till I drop My father died in a fit, his father died in a fit, and I myself often feel giddy, and things go round for a few seconds I should not care to have a fit here, because there would be a fuss and a muddle, but I should like, just when everything was *quite* straight, to be able to get home safely and then go off To lie in bed for weeks and worry about my work is what I could not endure

WILLIAM MORRIS

1834–1896

THE STORY OF THE UNKNOWN CHURCH

[*Oxford and Cambridge Magazine* January 1856]

I WAS the master-mason of a church that was built more than six hundred years ago, it is now two hundred years since that church vanished from the face of the earth, it was destroyed utterly,—no fragment of it was left, not even the great pillars that bore up the tower at the cross, where the choir used to join the nave No one knows now even where it stood, only in this very autumn-tide, if you knew the place, you would see the heaps made by the earth-covered ruins heaving the yellow corn into glorious waves, so that the place where my church used to be is as beautiful now as when it stood in all its splendour I do not remember very much about the land where my church was, I have quite forgotten the name of it, but I know it was very beautiful, and even now, while I am thinking of it, comes a flood of old memories, and I almost seem to see it again,—that old beautiful land! only dimly do I see it in spring and summer and winter, but I see it in autumn-tide clearly now, yes, clearer, clearer, oh! so bright and glorious! yet it was beautiful too in spring, when the brown earth began to grow green beautiful in summer, when the blue sky looked so much bluer, if you could hem a piece of it in between the new white carving, beautiful in the solemn starry nights, so solemn that it almost reached agony—the awe and joy one had in their great beauty But of all these beautiful times, I remember the whole only of autumn-tide, the others come in bits to me, I can think only of parts of them, but all of autumn, and of all days and nights in autumn, I remember one more particularly That autumn day the church was nearly finished, and the monks, for whom we were building the church, and

the people, who lived in the town hard by, crowded round us oftentimes to watch us carving

Now the great church, and the buildings of the Abbey where the monks lived, were about three miles from the town, and the town stood on a hill overlooking the rich autumn country it was girt about with great walls that had overhanging battlements, and towers at certain places all along the walls, and often we could see from the churchyard or the Abbey garden, the flash of helmets and spears, and the dim shadowy waving of banners, as the knights and lords and men-at-arms passed to and fro along the battlements, and we could see too in the town the three spires of the three churches, and the spire of the Cathedral, which was the tallest of the three, was gilt all over with gold, and always at night-time a great lamp shone from it that hung in the spire midway between the roof of the church and the cross at the top of the spire The Abbey where we built the church was not girt by stone walls, but by a circle of poplar trees, and whenever a wind passed over them, were it ever so little a breath, it set them all a-ripple, and when the wind was high, they bowed and swayed very low, and the wind, as it lifted the leaves, and showed their silvery white sides, or as again in the lulls of it, it let them drop, kept on changing the trees from green to white, and white to green, moreover, through the boughs and trunks of the poplars, we caught glimpses of the great golden corn sea, waving, waving, waving for leagues and leagues, and among the corn grew burning scarlet poppies, and blue corn-flowers, and the corn-flowers were so blue, that they gleamed, and seemed to burn with a steady light, as they grew beside the poppies among the gold of the wheat Through the corn sea ran a blue river, and always green meadows and lines of tall poplars followed its windings The old church had been burned, and that was the reason why the monks caused me to build the new one, the buildings of the Abbey were built at the same time as the burned-down church, more than a hundred years before I was born, and they were on the north side of the church, and joined to it by a cloister of round arches, and in the

midst of the cloister was a lawn, and in the midst of that lawn, a fountain of marble, carved round about with flowers and strange beasts, and at the edge of the lawn, near the round arches, were a great many sun-flowers that were all in blossom on that autumn day, and up many of the pillars of the cloister crept passion-flowers and roses Then farther from the church, and past the cloister and its buildings, were many detached buildings, and a great garden round them, all within the circle of the poplar trees, in the garden were trellises covered over with roses, and convolvulus, and the great-leaved fiery nasturtium, and specially all along by the poplar trees were there trellises, but on these grew nothing but deep crimson roses, the hollyhocks too were all out in blossom at that time, great spires of pink, and orange, and red, and white, with their soft, downy leaves I said that nothing grew on the trellises by the poplars but crimson roses, but I was not quite right, for in many places the wild flowers had crept into the garden from without, lush green briony, with green-white blossoms, that grows so fast, one could almost think that we see it grow, and deadly nightshade, La bella donna, O! so beautiful, red berry, and purple, yellow-spiked flower, and deadly, cruel-looking, dark green leaf, all growing together in the glorious days of early autumn And in the midst of the great garden was a conduit, with its sides carved with histories from the Bible, and there was on it too, as on the fountain in the cloister, much carving of flowers and strange beasts Now the church itself was surrounded on every side but the north by the cemetery, and there were many graves there, both of monks and of laymen, and often the friends of those, whose bodies lay there, had planted flowers about the graves of those they loved I remember one such particularly, for at the head of it was a cross of carved wood, and at the foot of it, facing the cross, three tall sun-flowers, then in the midst of the cemetery was a cross of stone, carved on one side with the Crucifixion of our Lord Jesus Christ, and on the other with Our Lady holding the Divine Child So that day, that I specially remember, in autumn-tide, when the

church was nearly finished, I was carving in the central porch of the west front, (for I carved all those bas-reliefs in the west front with my own hand,) beneath me my sister Margaret was carving at the flower-work, and the little quatrefoils that carry the signs of the zodiac and emblems of the months. now my sister Margaret was rather more than twenty years old at that time, and she was very beautiful, with dark brown hair and deep calm violet eyes. I had lived with her all my life, lived with her almost alone latterly, for our father and mother died when she was quite young, and I loved her very much, though I was not thinking of her just then, as she stood beneath me carving. Now the central porch was carved with a bas-relief of the Last Judgement, and it was divided into three parts by horizontal bands of deep flower-work. In the lowest division, just over the doors, was carved The Rising of the Dead, above were angels blowing long trumpets, and Michael the Archangel weigning the souls, and the blessed led into heaven by angels, and the lost into hell by the devil, and in the topmost division was the Judge of the world.

All the figures in the porch were finished except one, and I remember when I woke that morning my exultation at the thought of my church being so nearly finished, I remember, too, how a kind of misgiving mingled with the exultation, which, try all I could, I was unable to shake off, I thought then it was a rebuke for my pride, well, perhaps it was. The figure I had to carve was Abraham, sitting with a blossoming tree on each side of him, holding in his two hands the corners of his great robe, so that it made a mighty fold, wherein, with their hands crossed over their breasts, were the souls of the faithful, of whom he was called Father. I stood on the scaffolding for some time, while Margaret's chisel worked on bravely down below. I took mine in my hand, and stood so, listening to the noise of the masons inside, and two monks of the Abbey came and stood below me, and a knight, holding his little daughter by the hand, who every now and then looked up at him, and asked him strange questions. I did not think of these long, but

began to think of Abraham, yet I could not think of him sitting there, quiet and solemn, while the Judgement-Trumpet was being blown, I rather thought of him as he looked when he chased those kings so far, riding far ahead of any of his company, with his mail-hood off his head, and lying in grim folds down his back, with the strong west wind blowing his wild black hair far out behind him, with the wind rippling the long scarlet pennon of his lance, riding there amid the rocks and the sands alone, with the last gleam of the armour of the beaten kings disappearing behind the winding of the pass, with his company a long, long way behind, quite out of sight, though their trumpets sounded faintly among the clefts of the rocks, and so I thought I saw him, till in his fierce chase he leapt, horse and man, into a deep river, quiet, swift, and smooth, and there was something in the moving of the water-lilies as the breast of the horse swept them aside, that suddenly took away the thought of Abraham and brought a strange dream of lands I had never seen, and the first was of a place where I was quite alone, standing by the side of a river, and there was the sound of singing a very long way off, but no living thing of any kind could be seen, and the land was quite flat, quite without hills, and quite without trees too, and the river wound very much, making all kinds of quaint curves, and on the side where I stood there grew nothing but long grass, but on the other side grew, quite on to the horizon, a great sea of red corn-poppies, only paths of white lilies wound all among them, with here and there a great golden sun-flower So I looked down at the river by my feet, and saw how blue it was, and how, as the stream went swiftly by, it swayed to and fro the long green weeds, and I stood and looked at the river for long, till at last I felt some one touch me on the shoulder, and, looking round, I saw standing by me my friend Amyot, whom I love better than any one else in the world, but I thought in my dream that I was frightened when I saw him, for his face had changed so, it was so bright and almost transparent, and his eyes gleamed and shone as I had never seen them do before Oh! he was so won-

diously beautiful, so fearfully beautiful! and as I looked at him the distant music swelled, and seemed to come close up to me, and then swept by us, and fainted away, at last died off entirely, and then I felt sick at heart, and faint, and parched, and I stooped to drink of the water of the river, and as soon as the water touched my lips, lo! the river vanished, and the flat country with its poppies and lilies, and I dreamed that I was in a boat by myself again, floating in an almost land-locked bay of the northern sea, under a cliff of dark basalt I was lying on my back in the boat, looking up at the intensely blue sky, and a long low swell from the outer sea lifted the boat up and let it fall again and carried it gradually nearer and nearer towards the dark cliff, and as I moved on, I saw at last, on the top of the cliff, a castle, with many towers, and on the highest tower of the castle there was a great white banner floating, with a red chevron on it, and three golden stars on the chevron, presently I saw too on one of the towers, growing in a cranny of the worn stones, a great bunch of golden and blood-red wall flowers, and I watched the wall-flowers and banner for long, when suddenly I heard a trumpet blow from the castle, and saw a rush of armed men on to the battle ments and there was a fierce fight, till at last it was ended, and one went to the banner and pulled it down, and cast it over the cliff into the sea, and it came down in long sweeps, with the wind making little ripples in it,—slowly, slowly it came, till at last it fell over me and covered me from my feet till over my breast, and I let it stay there and looked again at the castle, and then I saw that there was an amber-coloured banner floating over the castle in place of the red chevron, and it was much larger than the other also now, a man stood on the battlements, looking towards me, he had a tilting helmet on, with the visor down, and an amber-coloured surcoat over his armour his right hand was ungauntleted, and he held it high above his head, and in his hand was the bunch of wall-flowers that I had seen growing on the wall, and his hand was white and small, like a woman's, for in my dream I could see even very far off things much clearer

than we see real material things on the earth presently he threw the wall-flowers over the cliff, and they fell in the boat just behind my head, and then I saw, looking down from the battlements of the castle, Amyot He looked down towards me very sorrowfully, I thought, but, even as in the other dream, said nothing, so I thought in my dream that I wept for very pity, and for love of him, for he looked as a man just risen from a long illness, and who will carry till he dies a dull pain about with him He was very thin and his long black hair drooped all about his face, as he leaned over the battlements looking at me he was quite pale, and his cheeks were hollow, but his eyes large, and soft, and sad So I reached out my arms to him, and suddenly I was walking with him in a lovely garden, and we said nothing, for the music which I had heard at first was sounding close to us now, and there were many birds in the boughs of the trees oh, such birds! gold and ruby, and emerald, but they sung not at all, but were quite silent, as though they too were listening to the music Now all this time Amyot and I had been looking at each other, but just then I turned my head away from him, and as soon as I did so, the music ended with a long wail, and when I turned again Amyot was gone, then I felt even more sad and sick at heart than I had before when I was by the river, and I leaned against a tree, and put my hands before my eyes When I looked again the garden was gone, and I knew not where I was, and presently all my dreams were gone The chips were flying bravely from the stone under my chisel at last, and all my thoughts now were in my carving, when I heard my name, 'Walter,' called, and when I looked down I saw one standing below me, whom I had seen in my dreams just before—Amyot, I had no hopes of seeing him for a long time, perhaps I might never see him again, I thought, for he was away (as I thought) fighting in the holy wars, and it made me almost beside myself to see him standing close by me in the flesh I got down from my scaffolding as soon as I could, and all thoughts else were soon drowned in the joy of having him by me, Margaret, too, how glad she must

have been, for she had been betrothed to him for some time before he went to the wars, and he had been five years away, five years! and how we had thought of him through those many weary days! how often his face had come before me! his brave, honest face, the most beautiful among all the faces of men and women I have ever seen Yes, I remember how five years ago I held his hand as we came together out of the cathedral of that great, far-off city, whose name I forget now, and then I remember the stamping of the horses' feet, I remember how his hand left mine at last, and then, some one looking back at me earnestly as they all rode on together—looking back, with his hand on the saddle behind him, while the trumpets sang in long solemn peals as they all rode on together, with the glimmer of arms and the fluttering of banners, and the clinking of the rings of the mail, that sounded like the falling of many drops of water into the deep, still waters of some pool that the rocks nearly meet over, and the gleam and flash of the swords, and the glimmer of the lance-heads and the flutter of the rippled banners, that streamed out from them, swept past me, and were gone, and they seemed like a pageant in a dream, whose meaning we know not, and those sounds too, the trumpets, and the clink of the mail, and the thunder of the horse-hoofs, they seemed dream-like too—and it was all like a dream that he should leave me, for we had said that we should always be together, but he went away, and now he is come back again

We were by his bed-side, Margaret and I, I stood and leaned over him, and my hair fell sideways over my face and touched his face, Margaret kneeled beside me, quivering in every limb, not with pain, I think, but rather shaken by a passion of earnest prayer After some time (I know not how long), I looked up from his face to the window underneath which he lay, I do not know what time of the day it was, but I know that it was a glorious autumn day, a day soft with melting, golden haze a vine and a rose grew together, and trailed half across the window, so that I could not see much of the beautiful blue sky, and nothing of town or country

beyond, the vine leaves were touched with red here and there, and three over-blown roses, light pink roses, hung amongst them I remember dwelling on the strange lines the autumn had made in red on one of the gold-green vine leaves, and watching one leaf of one of the over blown roses, expecting it to fall every minute, but as I gazed, and felt disappointed that the rose leaf had not fallen yet, I felt my pain suddenly shoot through me, and I remembered what I had lost, and then came bitter, bitter dreams,—dreams which had once made me happy, —dreams of the things I had hoped would be, of the things that would never be now, they came between the fair vine leaves and rose blossoms, and that which lay before the window, they came as before, perfect in colour and form, sweet sounds and shapes But now in every one was something unutterably miserable, they would not go away, they put out the steady glow of the golden haze, the sweet light of the sun through the vine leaves, the soft leaning of the full blown roses I wandered in them for a long time, at last I felt a hand put me aside gently, for I was standing at the head of—of the bed, then some one kissed my forehead, and words were spoken—I know not what words The bitter dreams left me for the bitterer reality at last, for I had found him that morning lying dead, only the morning after I had seen him when he had come back from his long absence—I had found him lying dead, with his hands crossed downwards, with his eyes closed, as though the angels had done that for him, and now when I looked at him he still lay there, and Margaret knelt by him with her face touching his she was not quivering now, her lips moved not at all as they had done just before, and so, suddenly those words came to my mind which she had spoken when she kissed me, and which at the time I had only heard with my outward hearing, for she had said, 'Walter, farewell, and Christ keep you, but for me, I must be with him, for so I promised him last night that I would never leave him any more, and God will let me go' And verily Margaret and Amyot did go, and left me very lonely and sad

It was just beneath the westernmost arch of the nave, there I carved their tomb I was a long time carving it, I did not think I should be so long at first, and I said, 'I shall die when I have finished carving it,' thinking that would be a very short time But so it happened after I had carved those two whom I loved, lying with clasped hands like husband and wife above their tomb, that I could not yet leave carving it, and so that I might be near them I became a monk, and used to sit in the choir and sing, thinking of the time when we should all be together again And as I had time I used to go to the westernmost arch of the nave and work at the tomb that was there under the great, sweeping arch, and in process of time I raised a marble canopy that reached quite up to the top of the arch, and I painted it too as fair as I could, and carved it all about with many flowers and histories, and in them I carved the faces of those I had known on earth (for I was not as one on earth now, but seemed quite away out of the world) And as I carved, sometimes the monks and other people too would come and gaze, and watch how the flowers grew, and sometimes too as they gazed, they would weep for pity, knowing how all had been So my life passed, and I lived in that abbey for twenty years after he died, till one morning, quite early, when they came into the church for matins, they found me lying dead, with my chisel in my hand, underneath the last lily of the tomb

goodly presence and ascetic life, the humblest, purest, most fervent, and most ingenuous of the sons of men So rare a choice might well be expected to be accompanied by some extraordinary manifestation, and, in fact, a prodigy took place which filled the sacred authorities with dismay The responses of the oracle ceased suddenly and altogether No revelation was vouchsafed to the pontiff in his slumbers, no access of prophetic fury constrained him to disclose the secrets of the future, no voice rang from the shrine, and the unanswered epistles of the suppliants lay a hopeless encumbrance on the great altar As a natural consequence they speedily ceased to arrive, the influx of offerings into the treasury terminated along with them, the temple-courts were bare of worshippers, and the only victims whose blood smoked within them were those slain by the priest himself, in the hope of appeasing the displeasure of Apollo The modest hierophant took all the blame upon his own shoulders, he did not doubt that he had excited the Deity's wrath by some mysterious but heinous pollution, and was confirmed in this opinion by the unanimous verdict of all whom he approached

One day as he sat sadly in the temple, absorbed in painful meditation, and pondering how he might best relieve himself of his sacred functions, he was startled by the now unwonted sound of a footstep, and, looking up, espied an ancient woman Her appearance was rather venerable than prepossessing He recognized her as one of the inferior ministers of the temple

'Reverend mother,' he addressed her, 'doubtless thou comest to mingle with mine thy supplications to the Deity, that it may please him to indicate the cause, and the remedy of his wrath'

'No, son,' returned the venerable personage, 'I propose to occasion no such needless trouble to Apollo, or any other Divinity I hold within mine own hand the power of reviving the splendour of this forsaken sanctuary, and for such consideration as thou wilt thyself pronounce equitable, I am minded to impart the same unto thee' And as the astonished priest made no answer, she continued—

'My price is one hundred pieces of gold'

'Wretch!' exclaimed the priest indignantly, 'thy mercenary demand alone proves the vanity of thy pretence of being initiated into the secrets of the Gods Depart my presence this moment!'

The old woman retired without a syllable of remonstrance, and the incident soon passed from the mind of the afflicted priest But on the following day, at the same hour, the aged woman again stood before him, and said—

'My price is *two* hundred pieces of gold'

Again she was commanded to depart, and again obeyed without a murmur But the adventure now occasioned the priest much serious reflection To his excited fancy, the patient persistency of the crone began to assume something of a supernatural character He considered that the ways of the Gods are not as our ways, and that it is rather the rule than the exception with them to accomplish their designs in the most circuitous manner, and by the most unlikely instruments He also reflected upon the history of the Sibyl and her books, and shuddered to think that unseasonable obstinacy might in the end cost the temple the whole of its revenues The result of his cogitations was a resolution, if the old woman should present herself on the following day, to receive her in a different manner

Punctual to the hour she made her appearance, and croaked out, 'My price is *three* hundred pieces of gold'

'Venerable ambassador of Heaven,' said the priest, 'thy boon is granted thee Relieve the anguish of my bosom as speedily as thou mayest'

The old woman's reply was brief and expressive It consisted in extending her open and hollow palm, into which the priest counted the three hundred pieces of gold with as much expedition as was compatible with the frequent interruptions necessitated by the crone's depositing each successive handful in a leather pouch, and the scrutiny, divided between jealousy and affection, which she bestowed on each individual coin

'And now,' said the priest, when the operation was at length completed, 'fulfil thy share of the compact'

'The cause of the oracle's silence,' returned the old woman, 'is the unworthiness of the minister '

'Alas! 'tis even as I feared,' sighed the priest 'Declare now, wherein consists my sin?'

'It consists in this,' replied the old woman, 'that the beard of thy understanding is not yet grown, and that the egg-shell of thy inexperience is still sticking to the head of thy simplicity, and that thy brains bear no adequate proportion to the skull enveloping them, and in fine, lest I seem to speak overmuch in parables, or to employ a superfluity of epithets, that thou art an egregious nincompoop '

And as the amazed priest preserved silence, she pursued—

'Can aught be more shameful in a religious man than ignorance of the very nature of religion? Not to know that the term, being rendered into the language of truth, doth therein signify deception practised by the few wise upon the many foolish, for the benefit of both, but more particularly the former? O silly as the crowds who hitherto have brought their folly here, but now carry it elsewhere to the profit of wiser men than thou! O fool! to deem that oracles were rendered by Apollo! How should this be, seeing that there is no such person? Needs there, peradventure, any greater miracle for the decipherment of these epistles than a hot needle? As for the supernatural voice, it doth in truth proceed from a respectable, and in some sense a sacred personage, being mine own when I am concealed within a certain recess prepared for me by thy lamented predecessor, whose mistress I was in youth, and whose coadjutor I have been in age I am now ready to minister to thee in the latter capacity Be ruled by me, exchange thy abject superstition for common sense, thy childish simplicity for discreet policy, thy unbecoming spareness for a majestic portliness, thy present ridiculous and uncomfortable situation for the repute of sanctity, and the veneration of men Thou wilt own that this is cheap at three hundred pieces '

The young priest had hearkened to the crone's dis-

course with an expression of the most exquisite distress When she had finished, he arose, and disregarding his repulsive companion's efforts to detain him, departed hastily from the temple

II

It was the young priest's purpose, as soon as he became capable of forming one, to place the greatest possible distance between himself and the city of Dorylaeum The love of roaming insensibly grew upon him, and ere long his active limbs had borne him over a considerable portion of Asia His simple wants were easily supplied by the wild productions of the country, supplemented when needful by the proceeds of light manual labour By degrees the self-contempt which had originally stung him to desperation took the form of an ironical compassion for the folly of mankind, and the restlessness which had at first impelled him to seek relief in a change of scene gave place to a spirit of curiosity and observation He learned to mix freely with all orders of men, save one, and rejoiced to find the narrow mysticism which he had imbibed from his previous education gradually yielding to contact with the great world From one class of men, indeed, he learned nothing—the priests, whose society he eschewed with scrupulous vigilance, nor did he ever enter the temples of the Gods Diviners, augurs, all that made any pretension whatever to a supernatural character, he held in utter abhorrence, and his ultimate return in the direction of his native country is attributed to his inability to persevere further in the path he was following without danger of encountering Chaldean soothsayers, or Persian magi, or Indian gymnosophists

He cherished, however, no intention of returning to Phrygia, and was still at a considerable distance from that region, when one night, as he was sitting in the inn of a small country town, his ear caught a phrase which arrested his attention

'As true as the oracle of Dorylaeum ' The speaker was a countryman, who appeared to have been asseverating something regarded by the rest of the company as greatly

in need of confirmation The sudden start and stifled cry of the ex-priest drew all eyes to him, and he felt constrained to ask, with the most indifferent air he could assume—

'Is the oracle of Dorylaeum, then, so exceedingly renowned for veracity?'

'Whence comest thou to be ignorant of that?' demanded the countryman, with some disdain 'Hast thou never heard of the priest Eubulides?'

'Eubulides!' exclaimed the young traveller, 'that is my own name!'

'Thou mayest well rejoice, then,' observed another of the guests, 'to bear the name of one so holy and pure, and so eminently favoured by the happy Gods So handsome and dignified, moreover, as I may well assert who have often beheld him discharging his sacred functions And truly, now that I scan thee more closely, the resemblance is marvellous Only that thy namesake bears with him a certain air of divinity, not equally conspicuous in thee'

'Divinity!' exclaimed another 'Aye, if Phoebus himself ministered at his own shrine, he could wear no more majestic semblance than Eubulides'

'Or predict the future more accurately,' added a priest

'Or deliver his oracles in more exquisite verse,' subjoined a poet

'Yet is it not marvellous,' remarked another speaker, 'that for some considerable time after his installation the good Eubulides was unable to deliver a single oracle?'

'Aye, and that the first he rendered should have foretold the death of an aged woman, one of the ministers of the temple'

'Ha!' exclaimed Eubulides, 'how was that?'

'He prognosticated her decease on the following day, which accordingly came to pass, from her being choked with a piece of gold, not lawfully appertaining to herself, which she was endeavouring to conceal under the root of her tongue'

'The Gods be praised for that!' ejaculated Eubulides, under his breath, 'Pshaw! as if there were Gods! If they existed, would they tolerate this vile mockery? To keep

up the juggle—well, I know it must be so, but to purloin my name! to counterfeit my person! By all the Gods that are not, I will expose the cheat, or perish in the endeavour.'

He arose early on the following morning and took his way towards the city of Dorylaeum. The further he progressed in this direction, the louder became the bruit of the oracle of Apollo, and the more emphatic the testimonies to the piety, prophetic endowments, and personal attractions of the priest Eubulides, his own resemblance to whom was the theme of continual remark. On approaching the city, he found the roads swarming with throngs hastening to the temple, about to take part in a great religious ceremony to be held therein. The seriousness of worship blended delightfully with the glee of the festival, and Eubulides, who at first regarded the gathering with bitter scorn, found his moroseness insensibly yielding to the poetic charm of the scene. He could not but acknowledge that the imposture he panted to expose was at least the source of much innocent happiness, and almost wished that the importance of religion, considered as an engine of policy, had been offered to his contemplation from this point of view, instead of the sordid and revolting aspect in which it had been exhibited by the old woman.

In this ambiguous frame of mind he entered the temple. Before the high altar stood the officiating priest, a young man, the image, yet not the image, of himself. Lineament for lineament, the resemblance was exact, but over the stranger's whole figure was diffused an air of majesty, of absolute serenity and infinite superiority, which excluded every idea of deceit, and so awed the young priest that his purpose of rushing forward to denounce the imposter and drag him from the shrine was immediately and involuntarily relinquished. As he stood confounded and irresolute, the melodious voice of the hierophant rang through the temple.

'Let the priest Eubulides stand forth.'

This summons naturally created the greatest astonishment in every one but Eubulides, who emerged as swiftly

as he could from the swaying and murmuring crowd, and confronted his namesake at the altar A cry of amazement broke from the multitude as they beheld the pair, whose main distinction in the eyes of most was their garb But, as they gazed, the form of the officiating priest assumed colossal proportions, a circle of beams, dimming sunlight, broke forth around his head, hyacinthine locks clustered on his shoulders, his eyes sparkled with supernatural radiance, a quiver depended at his back, an unstrung bow occupied his hand, the majesty and benignity of his presence alike seemed augmented tenfold Eubulides and the crowd sank simultaneously on their knees, for all recognized Apollo

All was silence for a space It was at length broken by Phoebus

'Well, Eubulides,' inquired he, with the bland raillery of an Immortal, 'has it at length occurred to thee that I may have been long enough away from Parnassus, filling thy place here while thou hast been disporting thyself amid heretics and barbarians?'

The abashed Eubulides made no response The Deity continued

'Deem not that thou hast in aught excited the displeasure of the Gods In deserting their altars for Truth's sake, thou didst render them the most acceptable of sacrifices, the only one, it may be, by which they set much store But, Eubulides, take heed how thou again sufferest the unworthiness of men to overcome the instincts of thine own nature Thy holiest sentiments should not have been at the mercy of a knave If the oracle of Dorylaeum was an imposture, hadst thou no oracle in thine own bosom? If the voice of Religion was no longer breathed from the tripod, were the winds and waters silent, or had aught quenched the everlasting stars? If there was no power to impose its mandates from without, couldst thou be unconscious of a power within? If thou hadst nothing to reveal unto men, mightest thou not have found somewhat to propound unto them? Know this, that thou hast never experienced a more truly religious emotion than that which led thee

to form the design of overthrowing this my temple the abode, as thou didst deem it, of fraud and superstition'

'But now, Phoebus,' Eubulides ventured to reply, 'shall I not return to the shrine purified by thy presence, and again officiate as thy unworthy minister?'

'No, Eubulides,' returned Phoebus, with a smile, 'silver is good, but not for ploughshares Thy strange experience, thy long wanderings, thy lonely meditations, and varied intercourse with men, have spoiled thee for a priest, while, as I would fain hope, qualifying thee for a sage Some worthy person may easily be found to preside over this temple, and by the aid of such inspiration as I may from time to time see meet to vouchsafe him, administer its affairs indifferently well Do thou, Eubulides, consecrate thy powers to a more august service than Apollo's, to one that shall endure when Delphi and Delos know *his* no more'

'To whose service, Phoebus?' inquired Eubulides

'To the service of Humanity, my son,' responded Apollo

FRANCIS BRET HARTE

1839–1902

MIGGLES

[From *The Luck of Roaring Camp, &c* 1869]

WE were eight, including the driver We had not spoken during the passage of the last six miles, since the jolting of the heavy vehicle over the roughening road had spoiled the Judge's last poetical quotation The tall man beside the Judge was asleep, his arm passed through the swaying strap and his head resting upon it—altogether a limp, helpless-looking object, as if he had hanged himself and been cut down too late The French lady on the back seat was asleep, too, yet in a half-conscious propriety of attitude, shown even in the disposition of the handkerchief which she held to her forehead, and which partially veiled her face The lady from Virginia City, travelling with her husband, had long since lost all individuality in a wild confusion of ribbons, veils, furs, and shawls There was no sound but the rattling of wheels and the dash of rain upon the roof Suddenly the stage stopped, and we became dimly aware of voices The driver was evidently in the midst of an exciting colloquy with some one in the road—a colloquy of which such fragments as 'bridge gone', 'twenty feet of water', 'can't pass', were occasionally distinguishable above the storm Then came a lull, and a mysterious voice from the road shouted the parting adjuration,—

'Try Miggles's'

We caught a glimpse of our leaders as the vehicle slowly turned, of a horseman vanishing through the rain, and we were evidently on our way to Miggles's

Who and where was Miggles? The Judge, our authority, did not remember the name, and he knew the country thoroughly The Washoe traveller thought Miggles must keep a hotel We only knew that we were stopped by high water in front and rear, and that

Miggles was our rock of refuge A ten minutes' splashing through a tangled by-road, scarcely wide enough for the stage, and we drew up before a barred and boarded gate in a wide stone wall or fence about eight feet high Evidently Miggles's, and evidently Miggles did not keep a hotel

The driver got down and tried the gate It was securely locked

'Miggles! O Miggles!'

No answer

'Migg-ells! You Miggles!' continued the driver, with rising wrath

'Migglesy!' joined in the expressman, persuasively 'O Miggy! Mig!'

But no reply came from the apparently insensate Miggles The Judge, who had finally got the window down, put his head out and propounded a series of questions, which if answered categorically would have undoubtedly elucidated the whole mystery, but which the driver evaded by replying that 'if we didn't want to sit in the coach all night, we had better rise up and sing out for Miggles'

So we rose up and called on Miggles in chorus, then separately And when we had finished, a Hibernian fellow-passenger from the roof called for 'Maygells!' whereat we all laughed While we were laughing, the driver cried 'Shoo!'

We listened To our infinite amazement the chorus of 'Miggles' was repeated from the other side of the wall, even to the final and supplemental 'Maygells'

'Extraordinary echo,' said the Judge

'Extraordinary d—d skunk!' roared the driver, contemptuously 'Come out of that, Miggles, and show yourself! Be a man, Miggles! Don't hide in the dark, I wouldn't if I were you, Miggles,' continued Yuba Bill, now dancing about in an excess of fury

'Miggles!' continued the voice, 'O Miggles!'

'My good man! Mr Myghail!' said the Judge, softening the asperities of the name as much as possible 'Consider the inhospitality of refusing shelter from the

inclemency of the weather to helpless females Really, my dear sir——' But a succession of 'Miggles', ending in a burst of laughter, drowned his voice

Yuba Bill hesitated no longer Taking a heavy stone from the road, he battered down the gate, and with the expressman entered the enclosure We followed Nobody was to be seen In the gathering darkness all that we could distinguish was that we were in a garden—from the rose-bushes that scattered over us a minute spray from their dripping leaves—and before a long, rambling wooden building

'Do you know this Miggles?' asked the Judge of Yuba Bill

'No, nor don't want to,' said Bill, shortly, who felt the Pioneer Stage Company insulted in his person by the contumacious Miggles

'But, my dear sir,' expostulated the Judge, as he thought of the barred gate

'Lookee here,' said Yuba Bill, with fine irony, 'hadn't you better go back and sit in the coach till yer introduced? I'm going in,' and he pushed open the door of the building

A long room lighted only by the embers of a fire that was dying on the large hearth at its further extremity The walls curiously papered, and the flickering firelight bringing out its grotesque pattern, somebody sitting in a large arm-chair by the fireplace All this we saw as we crowded together into the room, after the driver and expressman

'Hello, be you Miggles?' said Yuba Bill to the solitary occupant

The figure neither spoke nor stirred Yuba Bill walked wrathfully toward it, and turned the eye of his coach-lantern upon its face It was a man's face, prematurely old and wrinkled, with very large eyes, in which there was that expression of perfectly gratuitous solemnity which I had sometimes seen in an owl's The large eyes wandered from Bill's face to the lantern, and finally fixed their gaze on that luminous object, without further recognition

Bill restrained himself with an effort

'Miggles! Be you deaf? You ain't dumb anyhow, you know,' and Yuba Bill shook the insensate figure by the shoulder

To our great dismay, as Bill removed his hand, the venerable stranger apparently collapsed,—sinking into half his size and an undistinguishable heap of clothing

'Well, dern my skin,' said Bill, looking appealingly at us, and hopelessly retiring from the contest

The Judge now stepped forward, and we lifted the mysterious invertebrate back into his original position Bill was dismissed with the lantern to reconnoitre outside, for it was evident that from the helplessness of this solitary man there must be attendants near at hand, and we all drew around the fire The Judge, who had regained his authority, and had never lost his conversational amiability,—standing before us with his back to the hearth,—charged us, as an imaginary jury, as follows —

'It is evident that either our distinguished friend here has reached that condition described by Shakespeare as "the sere and yellow leaf", or has suffered some premature abatement of his mental and physical faculties Whether he is really the Miggles——'

Here he was interrupted by 'Miggles! O Miggles! Migglesy! Mig!' and, in fact, the whole chorus of Miggles in very much the same key as it had once before been delivered unto us

We gazed at each other for a moment in some alarm The Judge, in particular, vacated his position quickly, as the voice seemed to come directly over his shoulder The cause, however, was soon discovered in a large magpie who was perched upon a shelf over the fireplace, and who immediately relapsed into a sepulchral silence, which contrasted singularly with his previous volubility It was, undoubtedly, his voice which we had heard in the road, and our friend in the chair was not responsible for the discourtesy Yuba Bill, who re-entered the room after an unsuccessful search, was loath to accept the explanation, and still eyed the helpless sitter with suspicion

He had found a shed in which he had put up his horses, but he came back dripping and sceptical 'Thar ain't nobody but him within ten mile of the shanty, and that 'ar d—d old skeesicks knows it'

But the faith of the majority proved to be securely based Bill had scarcely ceased growling before we heard a quick step upon the porch, the trailing of a wet skirt, the door was flung open, and with a flash of white teeth, a sparkle of dark eyes, and an utter absence of ceremony or diffidence, a young woman entered, shut the door, and, panting, leaned back against it

'Oh, if you please, I'm Miggles!'

And this was Miggles! this bright-eyed, full-throated young woman, whose wet gown of coarse blue stuff could not hide the beauty of the feminine curves to which it clung, from the chestnut crown of whose head, topped by a man's oil-skin sou'wester, to the little feet and ankles, hidden somewhere in the recesses of her boy's brogans, all was grace,—this was Miggles, laughing at us, too, in the most airy, frank, off-hand manner imaginable

'You see, boys,' said she, quite out of breath, and holding one little hand against her side, quite unheeding the speechless discomfiture of our party, or the complete demoralization of Yuba Bill, whose features had relaxed into an expression of gratuitous and imbecile cheerful ness,—'you see, boys, I was mor'n two miles away when you passed down the road I thought you might pull up here, and so I ran the whole way, knowing nobody was home but Jim,—and—and—I'm out of breath—and—that lets me out'

And here Miggles caught her dripping oil-skin hat from her head, with a mischievous swirl that scattered a shower of rain-drops over us, attempted to put back her hair, dropped two hair-pins in the attempt, laughed and sat down beside Yuba Bill, with her hands crossed lightly on her lap

The Judge recovered himself first, and essayed an extravagant compliment

'I'll trouble you for that thar har-pin,' said Miggles,

gravely Half a dozen hands were eagerly stretched forward, the missing hair-pin was restored to its fair owner, and Miggles, crossing the room, looked keenly in the face of the invalid The solemn eyes looked back at hers with an expression we had never seen before Life and intelligence seemed to struggle back into the rugged face Miggles laughed again,—it was a singularly eloquent laugh,—and turned her black eyes and white teeth once more towards us

'This afflicted person is——' hesitated the Judge

'Jim,' said Miggles

'Your father?'

'No'

'Brother?'

'No'

'Husband?'

Miggles darted a quick, half-defiant glance at the two lady passengers who I had noticed did not participate in the general masculine admiration of Miggles, and said, gravely, 'No, it's Jim'

There was an awkward pause The lady passengers moved closer to each other, the Washoe husband looked abstractedly at the fire, and the tall man apparently turned his eyes inward for self-support at this emergency But Miggles's laugh, which was very infectious, broke the silence 'Come,' she said briskly, 'you must be hungry Who'll bear a hand to help me get tea?'

She had no lack of volunteers In a few moments Yuba Bill was engaged like Caliban in bearing logs for this Miranda, the expressman was grinding coffee on the verandah, to myself the arduous duty of slicing bacon was assigned, and the Judge lent each man his good-humoured and voluble counsel And when Miggles, assisted by the Judge and our Hibernian 'deck passenger', set the table with all the available crockery, we had become quite joyous, in spite of the rain that beat against windows, the wind that whirled down the chimney, the two ladies who whispered together in the corner, or the magpie who uttered a satirical and croaking commentary on their conversation from his perch above In the

now bright, blazing fire we could see that the walls were papered with illustrated journals, arranged with feminine taste and discrimination The furniture was extemporized, and adapted from candle-boxes and packing-cases, and covered with gay calico, or the skin of some animal The arm-chair of the helpless Jim was an ingenious variation of a flour-barrel There was neatness, and even a taste for the picturesque, to be seen in the few details of the long low room

The meal was a culinary success But more, it was a social triumph,—chiefly, I think, owing to the rare tact of Miggles in guiding the conversation, asking all the questions herself, yet bearing throughout a frankness that rejected the idea of any concealment on her own part, so that we talked of ourselves, of our prospects, of the journey, of the weather, of each other,—of everything but our host and hostess It must be confessed that Miggles's conversation was never elegant, rarely grammatical, and that at times she employed expletives, the use of which had generally been yielded to our sex But they were delivered with such a lighting up of teeth and eyes, and were usually followed by a laugh—a laugh peculiar to Miggles—so frank and honest that it seemed to clear the moral atmosphere

Once, during the meal, we heard a noise like the rubbing of a heavy body against the outer walls of the house This was shortly followed by a scratching and sniffling at the door 'That's Joaquin,' said Miggles, in reply to our questioning glances, 'would you like to see him?' Before we could answer she had opened the door, and disclosed a half-grown grizzly, who instantly raised himself on his haunches, with his fore-paws hanging down in the popular attitude of mendicancy, and looked admiringly at Miggles, with a very singular resemblance in his manner to Yuba Bill 'That's my watch-dog,' said Miggles, in explanation 'Oh, he don't bite,' she added, as the two lady passengers fluttered into a corner 'Does he, old Toppy?' (the latter remark being addressed directly to the sagacious Joaquin) 'I tell you what, boys,' continued Miggles, after she had fed and closed

the door on *Ursa Minor*, 'you were in big luck that Joaquin wasn't hanging round when you dropped in to-night ' 'Where was he?' asked the Judge 'With me,' said Miggles 'Lord love you, he trots round with me nights like as if he was a man '

We were silent for a few moments, and listened to the wind Perhaps we all had the same picture before us,—of Miggles walking through the rainy woods, with her savage guardian at her side The Judge, I remember, said something about Una and her lion, but Miggles received it as she did other compliments, with quiet gravity Whether she was altogether unconscious of the admiration she excited,—she could hardly have been oblivious of Yuba Bill's adoration,—I know not, but her very frankness suggested a perfect sexual equality that was cruelly humiliating to the younger members of our party

The incident of the bear did not add anything in Miggles's favour to the opinions of those of her own sex who were present In fact, the repast over, a chillness radiated from the two lady passengers that no pine-boughs brought in by Yuba Bill and cast as a sacrifice upon the hearth could wholly overcome Miggles felt it, and, suddenly declaring that it was time to 'turn in', offered to show the ladies to their bed in an adjoining room 'You, boys, will have to camp out here by the fire as well as you can,' she added, 'for thar ain't but the one room '

Our sex—by which, my dear sir, I allude of course to the stronger portion of humanity—has been generally relieved from the imputation of curiosity, or a fondness for gossip Yet I am constrained to say, that hardly had the door closed on Miggles than we crowded together, whispering, snickering, smiling, and exchanging suspicions, surmises, and a thousand speculations in regard to our pretty hostess and her singular companion I fear that we even hustled that imbecile paralytic, who sat like a voiceless Memnon in our midst, gazing with the serene indifference of the Past in his passionless eyes upon our wordy counsels In the midst of an exciting discussion, the door opened again, and Miggles re-entered

But not, apparently, the same Miggles who a few hours before had flashed upon us Her eyes were downcast, and as she hesitated for a moment on the threshold, with a blanket on her arm, she seemed to have left behind her the frank fearlessness which had charmed us a moment before Coming into the room, she drew a low stool beside the paralytic's chair, sat down, drew the blanket over her shoulders, and saying, 'If it's all the same to you, boys, as we're rather crowded, I'll stop here to-night,' took the invalid's withered hand in her own, and turned her eyes upon the dying fire An instinctive feeling that this was only premonitory to more confidential relations, and perhaps some shame at our previous curiosity, kept us silent The rain still beat upon the roof, wandering gusts of wind stirred the embers into momentary brightness, until, in a lull of the elements, Miggles suddenly lifted up her head, and, throwing her hair over her shoulder, turned her face upon the group and asked,—

'Is there any of you that knows me?'

There was no reply

'Think again! I lived at Marysville in '53 Everybody knew me there, and everybody had the right to know me I kept the Polka Saloon until I came to live with Jim That's six years ago Perhaps I've changed some'

The absence of recognition may have disconcerted her She turned her head to the fire again, and it was some seconds before she again spoke, and then more rapidly,—

'Well, you see, I thought some of you must have known me There's no great harm done, anyway What I was going to say was this Jim here'—she took his hand in both of hers as she spoke—'used to know me, if you didn't, and spent a heap of money upon me I reckon he spent all he had And one day—it's six years ago this winter—Jim came into my back room, sat down on my sofy, like as you see him in that chair, and never moved again without help He was struck all of a heap, and never seemed to know what ailed him The doctors came and said as how it was caused all along of his way of life, —for Jim was mighty free and wild like,—and that he would never get better, and couldn't last long anyway

They advised me to send him to Frisco to the hospital, for he was no good to any one and would be a baby all his life Perhaps it was something in Jim's eye, perhaps it was that I never had a baby, but I said "No" I was rich then, for I was popular with everybody,—gentlemen like yourself, sir, came to see me,—and I sold out my business and bought this yer place, because it was sort of out of the way of travel, you see, and I brought my baby here '

With a woman s intuitive tact and poetry, she had, as she spoke, slowly shifted her position so as to bring the mute figure of the ruined man between her and her audience, hiding in the shadow behind it, as if she offered it as a tacit apology for her actions Silent and expressionless, it yet spoke for her, helpless, crushed, and smitten with the Divine thunderbolt, it still stretched an invisible arm around her

Hidden in the darkness, but still holding his hand, she went on,—

'It was a long time before I could get the hang of things about yer, for I was used to company and excitement I couldn't get any woman to help me, and a man I dursent trust, but what with the Indians hereabout, who'd do odd jobs for me, and having everything sent from the North Fork, Jim and I managed to worry through The Doctor would run up from Sacramento once in a while He'd ask to see "Miggles's baby", as he called Jim, and when he'd go away, he'd say, "Miggles, you're a trump,—God bless you!" and it didn't seem so lonely after that But the last time he was here he said, as he opened the door to go, "Do you know, Miggles, your baby will grow up to be a man yet and an honour to his mother, but not here, Miggles, not here!" And I thought he went away sad—and—and'—and here Miggles's voice and head were somehow both lost completely in the shadow

'The folks about here are very kind,' said Miggles, after a pause, coming a little into the light again 'The men from the Fork used to hang around here, until they found they wasn't wanted, and the women are kind—

and don't call. I was pretty lonely until I picked up Joaquin in the woods yonder one day, when he wasn't so high, and taught him to beg for his dinner, and then thar's Polly—that's the magpie—she knows no end of tricks, and makes it quite sociable of evenings with her talk, and so I don't feel like as I was the only living being about the ranch. And Jim here,' said Miggles, with her old laugh again, and coming out quite into the firelight, 'Jim—why, boys, you would admire to see how much he knows for a man like him. Sometimes I bring him flowers, and he looks at 'em just as natural as if he knew 'em, and times, when we're sitting alone, I read him those things on the wall. Why, Lord!' said Miggles, with her frank laugh, 'I've read him that whole side of the house this winter. There never was such a man for reading as Jim.'

'Why,' asked the Judge, 'do you not marry this man to whom you have devoted your youthful life?'

'Well, you see,' said Miggles, 'it would be playing it rather low down on Jim, to take advantage of his being so helpless. And then, too, if we were man and wife, now, we'd both know that I was *bound* to do what I do now of my own accord.'

'But you are young yet and attractive——'

'It's getting late,' said Miggles, gravely, 'and you'd better all turn in. Good-night, boys,' and, throwing the blanket over her head, Miggles laid herself down beside Jim's chair, her head pillowed on the low stool that held his feet, and spoke no more. The fire slowly faded from the hearth, we each sought our blankets in silence, and presently there was no sound in the long room but the pattering of the rain upon the roof, and the heavy breathing of the sleepers.

It was nearly morning when I awoke from a troubled dream. The storm had passed, the stars were shining, and through the shutterless window the full moon, lifting itself over the solemn pines without, looked into the room. It touched the lonely figure in the chair with an infinite compassion, and seemed to baptize with a shining flood the lowly head of the woman whose hair, as in the sweet

old story, bathed the feet of him she loved It even lent a kindly poetry to the rugged outline of Yuba Bill, half reclining on his elbow between them and his passengers, with savagely patient eyes keeping watch and ward And then I fell asleep and only woke at broad day, with Yuba Bill standing over me, and 'All aboard' ringing in my ears

Coffee was waiting for us on the table, but Miggles was gone We wandered about the house and lingered long after the horses were harnessed, but she did not return It was evident that she wished to avoid a formal leave-taking, and had so left us to depart as we had come After we had helped the ladies into the coach, we returned to the house and solemnly shook hands with the paralytic Jim, as solemnly settling him back into position after each hand-shake Then we looked for the last time around the long low room, at the stool where Miggles had sat, and slowly took our seats in the waiting coach The whip cracked, and we were off!

But as we reached the high road, Bill's dexterous hand laid the six horses back on their haunches, and the stage stopped with a jerk For there, on a little eminence beside the road, stood Miggles, her hair flying, her eyes sparkling, her white handkerchief waving, and her white teeth flashing a last 'good-bye' We waved our hats in return And then Yuba Bill, as if fearful of further fascination, madly lashed his horses forward, and we sank back in our seats We exchanged not a word until we reached the North Fork and the stage drew up at the Independence House Then, the Judge leading, we walked into the bar-room and took our places gravely at the bar

'Are your glasses charged, gentlemen?' said the Judge, solemnly taking off his white hat

They were

'Well, then, here's to *Miggles*, GOD BLESS HER!'

Perhaps He had Who knows?

TENNESSEE'S PARTNER

[From *The Luck of Roaring Camp, &c* 1869]

I DO not think that we ever knew his real name Our ignorance of it certainly never gave us any social inconvenience, for at Sandy Bar in 1854 most men were christened anew Sometimes these appellatives were derived from some distinctiveness of dress, as in the case of 'Dungaree Jack', or from some peculiarity of habit, as shown in 'Saleratus Bill', so called from an undue proportion of that chemical in his daily bread, or from some unlucky slip, as exhibited in 'The Iron Pirate', a mild, inoffensive man, who earned that baleful title by his unfortunate mispronunciation of the term 'iron pyrites' Perhaps this may have been the beginning of a rude heraldry, but I am constrained to think that it was because a man's real name in that day rested solely upon his own unsupported statement 'Call yourself Clifford, do you?' said Boston, addressing a timid new-comer with infinite scorn, 'hell is full of such Cliffords!' He then introduced the unfortunate man, whose name happened to be really Clifford, as 'Jay-bird Charley', —an unhallowed inspiration of the moment, that clung to him ever after

But to return to Tennessee's Partner, whom we never knew by any other than this relative title, that he had ever existed as a separate and distinct individuality we only learned later It seems that in 1853 he left Poker Flat to go to San Francisco, ostensibly to procure a wife He never got any farther than Stockton At that place he was attracted by a young person who waited upon the table at the hotel where he took his meals One morning he said something to her which caused her to smile not unkindly, to somewhat coquettishly break a plate of toast over his upturned, serious, simple face, and to retreat to the kitchen He followed her, and emerged a few moments later, covered with more toast and victory That day week they were married by a Justice of the Peace, and returned to Poker Flat I am aware that

something more might be made of this episode, but I prefer to tell it as it was current at Sandy Bar,—in the gulches and bar-rooms,—where all sentiment was modified by a strong sense of humour

Of their married felicity but little is known, perhaps for the reason that Tennessee, then living with his partner, one day took occasion to say something to the bride on his own account, at which, it is said, she smiled not unkindly and chastely retreated,—this time as far as Marysville, where Tennessee followed her, and where they went to housekeeping without the aid of a Justice of the Peace Tennessee's Partner took the loss of his wife simply and seriously, as was his fashion But to everybody's surprise, when Tennessee one day returned from Marysville, without his partner's wife,—she having smiled and retreated with somebody else,—Tennessee's Partner was the first man to shake his hand and greet him with affection The boys who had gathered in the cañon to see the shooting were naturally indignant Their indignation might have found vent in sarcasm but for a certain look in Tennessee's Partner's eye that indicated a lack of humorous appreciation In fact, he was a grave man, with a steady application to practical detail which was unpleasant in a difficulty

Meanwhile a popular feeling against Tennessee had grown up on the Bar He was known to be a gambler, he was suspected to be a thief In these suspicions Tennessee's Partner was equally compromised, his continued intimacy with Tennessee after the affair above quoted could only be accounted for on the hypothesis of a copartnership of crime At last Tennessee's guilt became flagrant One day he overtook a stranger on his way to Red Dog The stranger afterwards related that Tennessee beguiled the time with interesting anecdote and reminiscence, but illogically concluded the interview in the following words 'And now, young man, I'll trouble you for your knife, your pistols, and your money You see your weppings might get you into trouble at Red Dog, and your money 's a temptation to the evilly disposed I think you said your address was San Francisco

I shall endeavour to call' It may be stated here that Tennessee had a fine flow of humour, which no business preoccupation could wholly subdue

This exploit was his last Red Dog and Sandy Bar made common cause against the highwayman Tennessee was hunted in very much the same fashion as his prototype, the grizzly As the toils closed around him, he made a desperate dash through the Bar, emptying his revolver at the crowd before the Arcade Saloon, and so on up Grizzly Cañon, but at its farther extremity he was stopped by a small man on a grey horse The men looked at each other a moment in silence Both were fearless, both self-possessed and independent, and both types of a civilization that in the seventeenth century would have been called heroic, but, in the nineteenth, simply 'reckless' 'What have you got there?—I call,' said Tennessee, quietly 'Two bowers and an ace,' said the stranger, as quietly, showing two revolvers and a bowie knife 'That takes me,' returned Tennessee, and, with th s gamblers' epigram, he threw away his useless pistol, and rode back with his captor

It was a warm night The cool breeze which usually sprang up with the going down of the sun behind the *chaparral*-crested mountain was that evening withheld from Sandy Bar The little cañon was stifling with heated resinous odours, and the decaying drift-wood on the Bar sent forth faint, sickening exhalations The feverishness of day, and its fierce passions, still filled the camp Lights moved restlessly along the bank of the river, striking no answering reflection from its tawny current Against the blackness of the pines the windows of the old loft above the express-office stood out staringly bright, and through their curtainless panes the loungers below could see the forms of those who were even then deciding the fate of Tennessee And above all this, etched on the dark firmament, rose the Sierra, remote and passionless, crowned with remoter passionless stars

The trial of Tennessee was conducted as fairly as was consistent with a judge and jury who felt themselves to

some extent obliged to justify, in their verdict, the previous irregularities of arrest and indictment The law of Sandy Bar was implacable, but not vengeful The excitement and personal feeling of the chase were over, with Tennessee safe in their hands, they were ready to listen patiently to any defence, which they were already satisfied was insufficient There being no doubt in their own minds, they were willing to give the prisoner the benefit of any that might exist Secure in the hypothesis that he ought to be hanged, on general principles, they indulged him with more latitude of defence than his reckless hardihood seemed to ask The Judge appeared to be more anxious than the prisoner, who, otherwise unconcerned, evidently took a grim pleasure in the responsibility he had created 'I don't take any hand in this yer game,' had been his invariable but good-humoured reply to all questions The Judge—who was also his captor—for a moment vaguely regretted that he had not shot him 'on sight' that morning, but presently dismissed this human weakness as unworthy of the judicial mind Nevertheless, when there was a tap at the door, and it was said that Tennessee's Partner was there on behalf of the prisoner, he was admitted at once without question Perhaps the younger members of the jury, to whom the proceedings were becoming irksomely thoughtful, hailed him as a relief

For he was not, certainly, an imposing figure Short and stout, with a square face, sunburned into a preternatural redness, clad in a loose duck 'jumper' and trousers streaked and splashed with red soil, his aspect under any circumstances would have been quaint, and was now even ridiculous As he stooped to deposit at his feet a heavy carpet-bag he was carrying, it became obvious, from partially developed legends and inscriptions, that the material with which his trousers had been patched had been originally intended for a less ambitious covering Yet he advanced with great gravity, and after having shaken the hand of each person in the room with laboured cordiality, he wiped his serious, perplexed face on a red bandanna handkerchief, a shade lighter than

his complexion, laid his powerful hand upon the table to steady himself, and thus addressed the Judge

'I was passin' by,' he began, by way of apology, 'and I thought I'd just step in and see how things was gittin' on with Tennessee thar—my pardner It's a hot night I disremember any sich weather before on the Bar'

He paused a moment, but nobody volunteering any other meteorological recollection, he again had recourse to his pocket-handkerchief, and for some moments mopped his face diligently

'Have you anything to say in behalf of the prisoner?' said the Judge, finally

'Thet's it,' said Tennessee's Partner, in a tone of relief 'I come yar as Tennessee's pardner—knowing him nigh on four year, off and on, wet and dry, in luck and out o' luck His ways ain't allers my ways, but thar ain't any p'ints in that young man, thar ain't any liveliness as he's been up to, as I don't know And you sez to me, sez you—confidential-like, and between man and man—sez you, "Do you know anything in his behalf?" and I sez to you, sez I—confidential-like, as between man and man—"What should a man know of his pardner?"'

'Is this all you have to say?' asked the Judge, impatiently, feeling, perhaps, that a dangerous sympathy of humour was beginning to humanize the Court

'Thet's so,' continued Tennessee's Partner 'It ain't for me to say anything agin' him And now, what's the case? Here's Tennessee wants money, wants it bad, and doesn't like to ask it of his old pardner Well, what does Tennessee do? He lays for a stranger, and he fetches that stranger And you lays for *him*, and you fetches *him*, and the honours is easy And I put it to you, bein' a far-minded man, and to you, gentlemen, all, as far-minded men, ef this isn't so'

'Prisoner,' said the Judge, interrupting, 'have you any questions to ask this man?'

'No! no!' continued Tennessee's Partner, hastily 'I play this yer hand alone To come down to the bed-rock, it's just this Tennessee, thar, has played it pretty rough

and expensive-like on a stranger, and on this yer camp And now, what's the fair thing? Some would say more, some would say less Here's seventeen hundred dollars in coarse gold and a watch,—it's about all my pile,—and call it square!' And before a hand could be raised to prevent him, he had emptied the contents of the carpet-bag upon the table

For a moment his life was in jeopardy One or two men sprang to their feet, several hands groped for hidden weapons, and a suggestion to 'throw him from the window' was only overridden by a gesture from the Judge Tennessee laughed And apparently oblivious of the excitement, Tennessee's Partner improved the opportunity to mop his face again with his handkerchief

When order was restored, and the man was made to understand, by the use of forcible figures and rhetoric, that Tennessee's offence could not be condoned by money, his face took a more serious and sanguinary hue, and those who were nearest to him noticed that his rough hand trembled slightly on the table He hesitated a moment as he slowly returned the gold to the carpet-bag, as if he had not yet entirely caught the elevated sense of justice which swayed the tribunal, and was perplexed with the belief that he had not offered enough Then he turned to the Judge, and saying, 'This yer is a lone hand, played alone, and without my pardner,' he bowed to the jury and was about to withdraw, when the Judge called him back 'If you have anything to say to Tennessee, you had better say it now' For the first time that evening the eyes of the prisoner and his strange advocate met Tennessee smiled, showed his white teeth, and saying, 'Euchred, old man!' held out his hand Tennessee's Partner took it in his own, and saying, 'I just dropped in as I was passin' to see how things was gettin' on,' let the hand passively fall, and adding that 'it was a warm night', again mopped his face with his handkerchief, and without another word withdrew

The two men never again met each other alive For the unparalleled insult of a bribe offered to Judge Lynch—who, whether bigoted, weak, or narrow, was at least

incorruptible—firmly fixed in the mind of that mythical personage any wavering determination of Tennessee's fate, and at the break of day he was marched, closely guarded, to meet it at the top of Marley's Hill

How he met it, how cool he was, how he refused to say anything, how perfect were the arrangements of the committee, were all duly reported, with the addition of a warning moral and example to all future evil-doers, in the *Red Dog Clarion*, by its editor, who was present, and to whose vigorous English I cheerfully refer the reader But the beauty of that midsummer morning, the blessed amity of earth and air and sky, the awakened life of the free woods and hills, the joyous renewal and promise of Nature, and above all, the infinite Serenity that thrilled through each, was not reported, as not being a part of the social lesson And yet, when the weak and foolish deed was done, and a life, with its possibilities and responsibilities, had passed out of the misshapen thing that dangled between earth and sky, the birds sang, the flowers bloomed, the sun shone, as cheerily as before, and possibly the *Red Dog Clarion* was right

Tennessee's Partner was not in the group that surrounded the ominous tree But as they turned to disperse, attention was drawn to the singular appearance of a motionless donkey-cart halted at the side of the road As they approached, they at once recognized the venerable 'Jenny' and the two-wheeled cart as the property of Tennessee's Partner,—used by him in carrying dirt from his claim, and a few paces distant the owner of the equipage himself, sitting under a buckeye-tree, wiping the perspiration from his glowing face In answer to an inquiry, he said he had come for the body of the 'diseased', 'if it was all the same to the committee' He didn't wish to 'hurry anything', he could 'wait' He was not working that day, and when the gentlemen were done with the 'diseased', he would take him 'Ef thar is any present,' he added, in his simple, serious way, 'as would care to jine in the fun'l, they kin come' Perhaps it was from a sense of humour, which I have already intimated was a feature of Sandy Bar,—perhaps it was from something

even better than that, but two-thirds of the loungers accepted the invitation at once

It was noon when the body of Tennessee was delivered into the hands of his partner As the cart drew up to the fatal tree, we noticed that it contained a rough oblong box—apparently made from a section of sluicing,—and half filled with bark and the tassels of pine The cart was further decorated with slips of willow, and made fragrant with buckeye-blossoms When the body was deposited in the box, Tennessee's Partner drew over it a piece of tarred canvas, and gravely mounting the narrow seat in front, with his feet upon the shafts, urged the little donkey forward The equipage moved slowly on, at that decorous pace which was habitual with 'Jenny' even under less solemn circumstances The men—half-curiously, half-jestingly, but all good-humouredly—strolled along beside the cart, some in advance, some a little in the rear of the homely catafalque But, whether from the narrowing of the road or some present sense of decorum, as the cart passed on the company fell to the rear in couples, keeping step, and otherwise assuming the external show of a formal procession Jack Folinsbee, who nad at the outset plaved a funeral march in dumb show upon an imaginary trombone, desisted, from a lack of sympathy and appreciation,—not having, perhaps, your true humourist's capacity to be content with the enjoyment of his own fun

The way led through Grizzly Cañon—by this time clothed in funereal drapery and shadows The red-woods, burying their moccasined feet in the red soil, stood in Indian file along the track, trailing an uncouth benediction from their bending boughs upon the passing bier A hare, surprised into helpless inactivity, sat upright and pulsating in the ferns by the roadside as the *cortège* went by Squirrels hastened to gain a secure outlook from higher boughs, and the blue-jays, spreading their wings fluttered before them like outriders, until the outskirts of Sandy Bar were reached, and the solitary cabin of Tennessee's Partner

Viewed under more favourable circumstances, it

would not have been a cheerful place The unpicturesque site, the rude and unlovely outlines, the unsavoury details, which distinguish the nest-building of the California miner, were all here, with the dreariness of decay superadded A few paces from the cabin there was a rough enclosure, which, in the brief days of Tennessee's Partner's matrimonial felicity, had been used as a garden, but was now overgrown with fern As we approached it, we were surprised to find that what we had taken for a recent attempt at cultivation was the broken soil about an open grave

The cart was halted before the enclosure, and rejecting the offers of assistance with the same air of simple self reliance he had displayed throughout, Tennessee's Partner lifted the rough coffin on his back, and deposited it, unaided, within the shallow grave He then nailed down the board which served as a lid, and mounting the little mound of earth beside it, took off his hat, and slowly mopped his face with his handkerchief This the crowd felt was a preliminary to speech, and they disposed themselves variously on stumps and boulders, and sat expectant

'When a man,' began Tennessee's Partner, slowly, 'has been running free all day, what's the natural thing for him to do? Why, to come home And if he ain't in a condition to go home, what can his best friend do? Why, bring him home! And here's Tennessee has been running free, and we brings him home from his wandering' He paused, and picked up a fragment of quartz, rubbed it thoughtfully on his sleeve, and went on 'It ain't the first time that I've packed him on my back, as you see'd me now It ain't the first time that I brought him to this yer cabin when he couldn't help himself, it ain't the first time that I and "Jinny" have waited for him on yon hill, and picked him up and so fetched him home, when he couldn't speak, and didn't know me And now that it's the last time, why——' he paused, and rubbed the quartz gently on his sleeve—'you see it's sort of rough on his pardner And now, gentlemen,' he added, abruptly, picking up his long-handled shovel, 'the fun'l's over, and

my thanks, and Tennessee's tharks, to you for your trouble '

Resisting any proffers of assistance, he began to fill in the grave, turning his back upon the crowd, that after a few moments' hesitation gradually withdrew As they crossed the little ridge that hid Sandy Bar from view, some, looking back, thought they could see Tennessee's Partner, his work done, sitting upon the grave, his shovel between his knees, and his face buried in his red bandanna handkerchief But it was argued by others that you couldn't tell his face from his handkerchief at that distance, and this point remained undecided

In the reaction that followed the feverish excitement of that day, Tennessee's Partner was not forgotten A secret investigation had cleared him of any complicity in Tennessee's guilt, and left only a suspicion of his general sanity Sandy Bar made a point of calling on him, and proffering various uncouth but well-meant kindnesses But from that day his rude health and great strength seemed visibly to decline, and when the rainy season fairly set in, and the tiny grass-blades were beginning to peep from the rocky mound above Tennessee's grave, he took to his bed

One night, when the pines beside the cabin were swaying in the storm, and trailing their slender fingers over the roof, and the roar and rush of the swollen river were heard below, Tennessee's Partner lifted his head from the pillow, saying, 'It is time to go for Tennessee, I must put "Jinny" in the cart,' and would have risen from his bed but for the restraint of his attendant Struggling, he still pursued his singular fancy 'There, now, steady, "Jinny," —steady, old girl How dark it is! Look out for the ruts, —and look out for him, too, old gal Sometimes, you know, when he's blind drunk, he drops down right in the trail Keep on straight up to the pine on the top of the hill Thar—I told you so!—thar he is,—coming this way, too,—all by himself, sober, and his face a-shining Tennessee! Pardner!'

And so they met

THE ILIAD OF SANDY BAR

[From *Sandy Bar, &c* 1873]

BEFORE nine o'clock it was pretty well known all along the river that the two parties of the 'Amity Claim' had quarrelled and separated at daybreak At that time the attention of their nearest neighbour had been attracted by the sounds of altercations and two consecutive pistol-shots Running out, he had seen, dimly, in the grey mist that rose from the river, the tall form of Scott, one of the partners, descending the hill toward the cañon, a moment later, York, the other partner, had appeared from the cabin, and walked in an opposite direction toward the river, passing within a few feet of the curious watcher Later it was discovered that a serious Chinaman, cutting wood before the cabin, had witnessed part of the quarrel But John was stolid, indifferent, and reticent 'Me choppee wood, me no fightee,' was his serene response to all anxious queries 'But what did they *say*, John?' John did not '*sabe*' Colonel Starbottle deftly ran over the various popular epithets which a generous public sentiment might accept as reasonable provocation for an assault But John did not recognize them 'And this yer 's the cattle,' said the Colonel, with some severity, 'that some thinks oughter be allowed to testify agin' a White Man! Git—you heathen!'

Still the quarrel remained inexplicable That two men, whose amiability and grave tact had earned for them the title of 'The Peacemakers', in a community not greatly given to the passive virtues—that these men, singularly devoted to each other, should suddenly and violently quarrel, might well excite the curiosity of the camp A few of the more inquisitive visited the late scene of conflict, now deserted by its former occupants There was no trace of disorder or confusion in the neat cabin The rude table was arranged as if for breakfast, the pan of yellow biscuit still sat upon that hearth whose dead embers might have typified the evil passions that had raged there but an hour before But Colonel

Starbottle's eye—albeit, somewhat bloodshot and rheumy—was more intent on practical details. On examination, a bullet-hole was found in the doorpost, and another, nearly opposite, in the casing of the window. The Colonel called attention to the fact that the one 'agreed with' the bore of Scott's revolver, and the other with that of York's derringer. 'They must hev stood about yer,' said the Colonel, taking position, 'not mor'n three feet apart, and—missed!' There was a fine touch of pathos in the falling inflection of the Colonel's voice, which was not without effect. A delicate perception of wasted opportunity thrilled his auditors.

But the Bar was destined to experience a greater disappointment. The two antagonists had not met since the quarrel, and it was vaguely rumoured that, on the occasion of a second meeting, each had determined to kill the other 'on sight'. There was, consequently, some excitement—and, it is to be feared, no little gratification—when, at ten o'clock, York stepped from the Magnolia Saloon into the one, long straggling street of the camp, at the same moment that Scott left the blacksmith's shop at the forks of the road. It was evident, at a glance, that a meeting could only be avoided by the actual retreat of one or the other.

In an instant the doors and windows of the adjacent saloons were filled with faces. Heads unaccountably appeared above the river-banks and from behind boulders. An empty wagon at the cross-road was suddenly crowded with people, who seemed to have sprung from the earth. There was much running and confusion on the hillside. On the mountain-road, Mr. Jack Hamlin had reined up his horse and was standing upright on the seat of his buggy. And the two objects of this absorbing attention approached each other.

'York's got the sun,' 'Scott'll line him on that tree,' 'He's waiting to draw his fire,' came from the cart, and then it was silent. But above this human breathlessness the river rushed and sang, and the wind rustled the tree tops with an indifference that seemed obtrusive. Colonel Starbottle felt it, and, in a moment of sublime preoccupa-

tion, without looking around, waved his cane behind him warningly to all nature, and said, 'Shu!'

The men were now within a few feet of each other A hen ran across the road before one of them A feathery seed-vessel, wafted from a wayside tree, fell at the feet of the other And, unheeding this irony of Nature, the two opponents came nearer, erect and rigid, looked in each other's eyes, and—passed!

Colonel Starbottle had to be lifted from the cart 'This yer camp is played out,' he said, gloomily, as he affected to be supported into the 'Magnolia' With what further expression he might have indicated his feelings it was impossible to say, for at that moment Scott joined the group 'Did you speak to me?' he asked of the Colonel, dropping his hand, as if with accidental familiarity, on that gentleman's shoulder The Colonel, recognizing some occult quality in the touch, and some unknown quantity in the glance of his questioner, contented himself by replying, 'No, sir,' with dignity A few rods away, York's conduct was as characteristic and peculiar 'You had a mighty fine chance, why didn't you plump him?' said Jack Hamlin, as York drew near the buggy 'Because I hate him,' was the reply, heard only by Jack Contrary to popular belief, this reply was not hissed between the lips of the speaker, but was said in an ordinary tone But Jack Hamlin, who was an observer of mankind, noticed that the speaker's hands were cold, and his lips dry, as he helped him into the buggy, and accepted the seeming paradox with a smile

When Sandy Bar became convinced that the quarrel between York and Scott could not be settled after the usual local methods, it gave no further concern thereto But presently it was rumoured that the 'Amity Claim' was in litigation, and that its possession would be expensively disputed by each of the partners As it was well known that the claim in question was 'worked out' and worthless, and that the partners, whom it had already enriched, had talked of abandoning it but a day or two before the quarrel, this proceeding could only be accounted for as

gratuitous spite Later, two San Francisco lawyers made their appearance in this guileless Arcadia, and were eventually taken into the saloons, and—what was pretty much the same thing—the confidences of the inhabitants The results of this unhallowed intimacy were many subpœnas, and, indeed, when the 'Amity Claim' came to trial, all of Sandy Bar that was not in compulsory attendance at the county seat came there from curiosity The gulches and ditches for miles around were deserted I do not propose to describe that already famous trial Enough that, in the language of the plaintiff's counsel, 'it was one of no ordinary significance, involving the inherent rights of that untiring industry which had developed the Pactolian resources of this golden land,' and, in the homelier phrase of Colonel Starbottle, 'A fuss that gentlemen might hev settled in ten minutes over a social glass, ef they meant business, or in ten seconds with a revolver, ef they meant fun ' Scott got a verdict, from which York instantly appealed It was said that he had sworn to spend his last dollar in the struggle

In this way Sandy Bar began to accept the enmity of the former partners as a lifelong feud, and the fact that they had ever been friends was forgotten The few who expected to learn from the trial the origin of the quarrel were disappointed Among the various conjectures, that which ascribed some occult feminine influence as the cause was naturally popular, in a camp given to dubious compliment of the sex 'My word for it, gentlemen,' said Colonel Starbottle, who had been known in Sacramento as a Gentleman of the Old School, 'there's some lovely creature at the bottom of this ' The gallant Colonel then proceeded to illustrate his theory, by divers sprightly stories, such as Gentlemen of the Old School are in the habit of repeating, but which, from deference to the prejudices of gentlemen of a more recent school, I refrain from transcribing here But it would appear that even the Colonel's theory was fallacious The only woman who personally might have exercised any influence over the partners, was the pretty daughter of 'old man Folinsbee', of Poverty Flat, at whose hospitable house—which

exhibited some comforts and refinements rare in that crude civilization—both York and Scott were frequent visitors Yet into this charming retreat York strode one evening, a month after the quarrel, and beholding Scott sitting there, turned to the fair hostess with the abrupt query, 'Do you love this man?' The young woman thus addressed returned that answer—at once spirited and evasive—which would occur to most of my fair readers in such an exigency Without another word, York left the house 'Miss Jo' heaved the least possible sigh as the door closed on York's curls and square shoulders, and then, like a good girl, turned to her insulted guest 'But would you believe it, dear?' she afterward related to an intimate friend, 'the other creature, after glowering at me for a moment, got upon its hind legs, took its hat, and left, too, and that's the last I've seen of either '

The same hard disregard of all other interests or feelings in the gratification of their blind rancour characterized all their actions When York purchased the land below Scott's new claim, and obliged the latter, at a great expense, to make a long detour to carry a 'tail-race' around it, Scott retaliated by building a dam that overflowed York's claim on the river It was Scott, who, in conjunction with Colonel Starbottle, first organized that active opposition to the Chinamen, which resulted in the driving off of York's Mongolian labourers, it was York who built the wagon-road and established the express which rendered Scott's mules and pack-trains obsolete, it was Scott who called into life the Vigilance Committee which expatriated York's friend, Jack Hamlin, it was York who created the *Sandy Bar Herald*, which characterized the act as 'a lawless outrage' and Scott as a 'Border Ruffian', it was Scott, at the head of twenty masked men, who, one moonlight night, threw the offending 'forms' into the yellow river, and scattered the types in the dusty road These proceedings were received in the distant and more civilized outlying towns as vague indications of progress and vitality I have before me a copy of the *Poverty Flat Pioneer* for the week ending August 12, 1856, in which the editor, under the head of 'County Improvements', says

'The new Presbyterian Church on C Street, at Sandy Bar, is completed It stands upon the lot formerly occupied by the Magnolia Saloon, which was so mysteriously burnt last month The temple, which now rises like a Phoenix from the ashes of the Magnolia, is virtually the free gift of H J York, Esq , of Sandy Bar, who purchased the lot and donated the lumber Other buildings are going up in the vicinity, but the most noticeable is the "Sunny South Saloon", erected by Captain Mat. Scott, nearly opposite the church Captain Scott has spared no expense in the furnishing of this saloon, which promises to be one of the most agreeable places of resort in old Tuolumne He has recently imported two new, first-class billiard-tables, with cork cushions Our old friend, "Mountain Jimmy", will dispense liquors at the bar We refer our readers to the advertisement in another column Visitors to Sandy Bar cannot do better than give "Jimmy" a call ' Among the local items occurred the following 'H J York, Esq , of Sandy Bar, has offered a reward of $100 for the detection of the parties who hauled away the steps of the new Presbyterian Church, C Street, Sandy Bar, during divine service on Sabbath evening last Captain Scott adds another hundred for the capture of the miscreants who broke the magnificent plate-glass windows of the new saloon on the following evening There is some talk of reorganizing the old Vigilance Committee at Sandy Bar '

When, for many months of cloudless weather, the hard, unwinking sun of Sandy Bar had regularly gone down on the unpacified wrath of these men, there was some talk of mediation In particular, the pastor of the church to which I have just referred—a sincere, fearless, but perhaps not fully-enlightened man—seized gladly upon the occasion of York's liberality to attempt to reunite the former partners He preached an earnest sermon on the abstract sinfulness of discord and rancour But the excellent sermons of the Rev Mr Daws were directed to an ideal congregation that did not exist at Sandy Bar—a congregation of beings of unmixed vices and virtues, of single impulses, and perfectly logical

motives, of preternatural simplicity, of childlike faith, and grown-up responsibilities As, unfortunately, the people who actually attended Mr Daws's church were mainly very human, somewhat artful, more self-excusing than self-accusing, rather good-natured, and decidedly weak, they quietly shed that portion of the sermon which referred to themselves, and accepting York and Scott—who were both in defiant attendance—as curious examples of those ideal beings above referred to, felt a certain satisfaction—which, I fear, was not altogether Christian-like—in their 'raking-down' If Mr Daws expected York and Scott to shake hands after the sermon he was disappointed But he did not relax his purpose With that quiet fearlessness and determination which had won for him the respect of men who were too apt to regard piety as synonymous with effeminacy, he attacked Scott in his own house What he said has not been recorded, but it is to be feared that it was part of his sermon. When he had concluded, Scott looked at him, not unkindly, over the glasses of his bar, and said, less irreverently than the words might convey, 'Young man, I rather like your style, but when you know York and me as well as you do God Almighty, it'll be time to talk'

And so the feud progressed, and so, as in more illustrious examples, the private and personal enmity of two representative men led gradually to the evolution of some crude, half-expressed principle or belief It was not long before it was made evident that those beliefs were identical with certain principles laid down by the founders of the American Constitution, as expounded by the statesmanlike A , or were the fatal quicksands, on which the ship of state might be wrecked, warningly pointed out by the eloquent B The practical result of all which was the nomination of York and Scott to represent the opposite factions of Sandy Bar in legislative councils

For some weeks past, the voters of Sandy Bar and the adjacent camps had been called upon, in large type, to 'RALLY!' In vain the great pines at the cross-roads—whose trunks were compelled to bear this and other

'There's naught, gentlemen,' said Scott, leaning forward on the railing,—'there's naught as that man hez said as isn't true I was run outer Cairo, I did belong to the Regulators, I did desert from the army, I did leave a wife in Kansas But thar's one thing he didn't charge me with, and, maybe, he's forgotten For three years, gentlemen, I was that man's pardner !—' Whether he intended to say more, I cannot tell, a burst of applause artistically rounded and enforced the climax, and virtually elected the speaker That Fall he went to Sacramento, York went abroad, and for the first time in many years, distance and a new atmosphere isolated the old antagonists

With little of change in the green wood, grey rock, and yellow river, but with much shifting of human landmarks, and new faces in its habitations, three years passed over Sandy Bar The two men, once so identified with its character, seemed to have been quite forgotten 'You will never return to Sandy Bar,' said Miss Folinsbee, the 'Lily of Poverty Flat', on meeting York in Paris, 'for Sandy Bar is no more They call it Riverside now, and the new town is built higher up on the river-bank By the by, "Jo" says that Scott has won his suit about the "Amity Claim", and that he lives in the old cabin, and is drunk half his time O, I beg your pardon,' added the lively lady, as a flush crossed York's sallow cheek, 'but, bless me, I really thought that old grudge was made up I'm sure it ought to be '

It was three months after this conversation, and a pleasant summer evening, that the Poverty Flat coach drew up before the veranda of the Union Hotel at Sandy Bar Among its passengers was one, apparently a stranger, in the local distinction of well-fitting clothes and closely shaven face, who demanded a private room and retired early to rest But before sunrise next morning he arose, and, drawing some clothes from his carpet-bag, proceeded to array himself in a pair of white duck trousers, a white duck overshirt, and straw hat When this toilet was completed, he tied a red bandanna handkerchief in a loop and threw it loosely over his shoulders

The transformation was complete As he crept softly down the stairs and stepped into the road, no one would have detected in him the elegant stranger of the previous night, and but few have recognized the face and figure of Henry York of Sandy Bar

In the uncertain light of that early hour, and in the change that had come over the settlement, he had to pause for a moment to recall where he stood The Sandy Bar of his recollection lay below him, nearer the river, the buildings around him were of later date and newer fashion As he strode toward the river, he noticed here a schoolhouse and there a church A little farther on, 'The Sunny South' came in view, transformed into a restaurant, its gilding faded and its paint rubbed off He now knew where he was, and running briskly down a declivity, crossed a ditch, and stood upon the lower boundary of the Amity Claim

The grey mist was rising slowly from the river, clinging to the tree-tops and drifting up the mountain-side, until it was caught among these rocky altars, and held a sacrifice to the ascending sun At his feet the earth, cruelly gashed and scarred by his forgotten engines, had, since the old days, put on a show of greenness here and there, and now smiled forgivingly up at him, as if things were not so bad after all A few birds were bathing in the ditch with a pleasant suggestion of its being a new and special provision of Nature, and a hare ran into an inverted sluice-box, as he approached, as if it were put there for that purpose

He had not yet dared to look in a certain direction But the sun was now high enough to paint the little eminence on which the cabin stood In spite of his self-control, his heart beat faster as he raised his eyes toward it Its window and door were closed, no smoke came from its *adobe* chimney, but it was else unchanged When within a few yards of it, he picked up a broken shovel, and shouldering it with a smile, strode toward the door and knocked There was no sound from within The smile died upon his lips as he nervously pushed the door open

A figure started up angrily and came toward him,—a figure whose bloodshot eyes suddenly fixed into a vacant stare, whose arms were at first outstretched and then thrown up in warning gesticulation,—a figure that suddenly gasped, choked, and then fell forward in a fit

But before he touched the ground, York had him out into the open air and sunshine In the struggle, both fell and rolled over on the ground But the next moment York was sitting up, holding the convulsed frame of his former partner on his knee, and wiping the foam from his inarticulate lips Gradually the tremor became less frequent, and then ceased, and the strong man lay unconscious in his arms

For some moments York held him quietly thus, looking in his face Afar, the stroke of a woodman's axe—a mere phantom of sound—was all that broke the stillness High up the mountain, a wheeling hawk hung breathlessly above them And then came voices, and two men joined them

'A fight?' No, a fit, and would they help him bring the sick man to the hotel?

And there, for a week, the stricken partner lay, unconscious of aught but the visions wrought by disease and fear On the eighth day, at sunrise, he rallied, and, opening his eyes, looked upon York, and pressed his hand, then he spoke

'And it's you I thought it was only whisky'

York replied by taking both of his hands, boyishly working them backward and forward, as his elbow rested on the bed, with a pleasant smile

'And you've been abroad How did you like Paris?'

'So, so How did *you* like Sacramento?'

'Bully!'

And that was all they could think to say Presently Scott opened his eyes again

'I'm mighty weak'

'You'll get better soon'

'Not much'

A long silence followed, in which they could hear the sounds of wood-chopping, and that Sandy Bar was

already astir for the coming day. Then Scott slowly and with difficulty turned his face to York, and said,—

'I might hev killed you once.'

'I wish you had.'

They pressed each other's hands again, but Scott's grasp was evidently failing. He seemed to summon his energies for a special effort.

'Old man!'

'Old chap.'

'Closer!'

York bent his head toward the slowly-fading face.

'Do ye mind that morning?'

'Yes.'

A gleam of fun slid into the corner of Scott's blue eye, as he whispered,

'Old man, thar *was* too much saleratus in that bread.'

It is said that these were his last words. For when the sun, which had so often gone down upon the idle wrath of these foolish men, looked again upon them reunited, it saw the hand of Scott fall cold and irresponsive from the yearning clasp of his former partner, and it knew that the feud of Sandy Bar was at an end.

MLISS

[From *The Luck of Roaring Camp, &c.* 1869]

CHAPTER I

JUST where the Sierra Nevada begins to subside in gentler undulations, and the rivers grow less rapid and yellow, on the side of a great red mountain, stands 'Smith's Pocket.' Seen from the red road at sunset, in the red light and the red dust, its white houses look like the outcroppings of quartz on the mountain-side. The red stage topped with red-shirted passengers is lost to view half a dozen times in the tortuous descent, turning up unexpectedly in out-of-the-way places, and vanishing altogether within a hundred yards of the town. It is probably owing to this sudden twist in the road that the advent of a stranger at Smith's Pocket is usually attended

with a peculiar circumstance Dismounting from the vehicle at the stage office, the too confident traveller is apt to walk straight out of town under the impression that it lies in quite another direction It is related that one of the tunnel-men, two miles from town, met one of these self-reliant passengers with a carpet-bag, umbrella, *Harper's Magazine*, and other evidences of 'Civilization and Refinement', plodding along over the road he had just ridden, vainly endeavouring to find the settlement of Smith's Pocket

An observant traveller might have found some compensation for his disappointment in the weird aspect of that vicinity There were huge fissures on the hillside, and displacements of the red soil, resembling more the chaos of some primary elemental upheaval than the work of man, while, half-way down, a long flume straddled its narrow body and disproportionate legs over the chasm, like an enormous fossil of some forgotten antediluvian At every step smaller ditches crossed the road, hiding in their sallow depths unlovely streams that crept away to a clandestine union with the great yellow torrent below, and here and there were the ruins of some cabin with the chimney alone left intact and the hearthstone open to the skies

The settlement of Smith's Pocket owed its origin to the finding of a 'pocket' on its site by a veritable Smith Five thousand dollars were taken out of it in one half-hour by Smith Three thousand dollars were expended by Smith and others in erecting a flume and in tunnelling And then Smith's Pocket was found to be only a pocket, and subject like other pockets to depletion Although Smith pierced the bowels of the great red mountain, that five thousand dollars was the first and last return of his labour The mountain grew reticent of its golden secrets, and the flume steadily ebbed away the remainder of Smith's fortune Then Smith went into quartz-mining, then into quartz-milling, then into hydraulics and ditching, and then by easy degrees into saloon-keeping Presently it was whispered that Smith was drinking a great deal, then it was known that Smith was a habitual

drunkard, and then people began to think, as they are apt to, that he had never been anything else But the settlement of Smith's Pocket, like that of most discoveries, was happily not dependent on the fortune of its pioneer, and other parties projected tunnels and found pockets So Smith's Pocket became a settlement with its two fancy stores, its two hotels, its one express-office, and its two first families Occasionally its one long straggling street was overawed by the assumption of the latest San Francisco fashions, imported per express, exclusively to the first families, making outraged Nature, in the ragged outline of her furrowed surface, look still more homely, and putting personal insult on that greater portion of the population to whom the Sabbath, with a change of linen, brought merely the necessity of cleanliness, without the luxury of adornment Then there was a Methodist Church, and hard by a Monte Bank, and a little beyond, on the mountain-side, a graveyard, and then a little school-house

'The Master', as he was known to his little flock, sat alone one night in the school-house, with some open copy-books before him, carefully making those bold and full characters which are supposed to combine the extremes of chirographical and moral excellence, and had got as far as 'Riches are deceitful', and was elaborating the noun with an insincerity of flourish that was quite in the spirit of his text, when he heard a gentle tapping The woodpeckers had been busy about the roof during the day, and the noise did not disturb his work But the opening of the door, and the tapping continuing from the inside, caused him to look up He was slightly startled by the figure of a young girl, dirty and shabbily clad Still, her great black eyes, her coarse, uncombed, lustreless black hair falling over her sun-burned face, her red arms and feet streaked with the red soil, were all familiar to him It was Melissa Smith,—Smith's motherless child

'What can she want here?' thought the master Everybody knew 'Mliss', as she was called, throughout the length and height of Red Mountain Everybody knew her as an incorrigible girl Her fierce, ungovernable

disposition, her mad freaks and lawless character, were in their way as proverbial as the story of her father's weaknesses, and as philosophically accepted by the townsfolk. She wrangled with and fought the schoolboys with keener invective and quite as powerful arm. She followed the trails with a woodman's craft, and the master had met her before, miles away, shoeless, stockingless, and bareheaded on the mountain road. The miners' camps along the stream supplied her with subsistence during these voluntary pilgrimages, in freely offered alms. Not but that a larger protection had been previously extended to Mliss. The Rev. Joshua McSnagley, 'stated' preacher, had placed her in the hotel as servant, by way of preliminary refinement, and had introduced her to his scholars at Sunday School. But she threw plates occasionally at the landlord, and quickly retorted to the cheap witticisms of the guests, and created in the Sabbath School a sensation that was so inimical to the orthodox dullness and placidity of that institution, that, with a decent regard for the starched frocks and unblemished morals of the two pink-and-white-faced children of the first families, the reverend gentleman had her ignominiously expelled. Such were the antecedents, and such the character of Mliss, as she stood before the master. It was shown in the ragged dress, the unkempt hair, and bleeding feet, and asked his pity. It flashed from her black, fearless eyes, and commanded his respect.

'I come here to-night,' she said rapidly and boldly, keeping her hard glance on his, 'because I knew you was alone. I wouldn't come here when them gals was here. I hate 'em and they hates me. That's why. You keep school, don't you? I want to be teached!'

If to the shabbiness of her apparel and uncomeliness of her tangled hair and dirty face she had added the humility of tears, the master would have extended to her the usual moiety of pity, and nothing more. But with the natural though illogical instincts of his species, her boldness awakened in him something of that respect which all original natures pay unconsciously to one another in any grade. And he gazed at her the more fixedly as she went

on still rapidly, her hand on that door-latch and her eyes on his —

'My name's Mliss,—Mliss Smith! You can bet your life on that My father's Old Smith,—Old Bummer Smith,—that's what's the matter with him Mliss Smith, —and I'm coming to school!'

'Well?' said the master

Accustomed to be thwarted and opposed, often wantonly and cruelly, for no other purpose than to excite the violent impulses of her nature, the master's phlegm evidently took her by surprise She stopped, she began to twist a lock of her hair between her fingers, and the rigid line of upper lip, drawn over the wicked little teeth, relaxed and quivered slightly Then her eyes dropped, and something like a blush struggled up to her cheek, and tried to assert itself through the splashes of redder soil, and the sunburn of years Suddenly she threw herself forward, calling on God to strike her dead, and fell quite weak and helpless, with her face on the master's desk, crying and sobbing as if her heart would break

The master lifted her gently and waited for the paroxysm to pass When with face still averted, she was repeating between her sobs the *mea culpa* of childish penitence,—that 'she'd be good, she didn't mean to,' &c, it came to him to ask her why she had left Sabbath School

Why had she left the Sabbath School?—why? Oh, yes What did he (McSnagley) want to tell her she was wicked for? What did he tell her that God hated her for? If God hated her, what did she want to go to Sabbath School for? *She* didn't want to be 'beholden' to anybody who hated her

Had she told McSnagley this?

Yes, she had

The master laughed It was a hearty laugh, and echoed so oddly in the little school-house, and seemed so inconsistent and discordant with the sighing of the pines without, that he shortly corrected himself with a sigh The sigh was quite as sincere in its way, however, and after a moment of serious silence he asked her about her father

Her father? What father? Whose father? What had he ever done for her? Why did the girls hate her? Come now! what made the folks say, 'Old Bummer Smith's Mliss!' when she passed? Yes, oh, yes She wished he was dead,—she was dead,—everybody was dead, and her sobs broke forth anew

The master, then, leaning over her, told her as well as he could what you or I might have said after hearing such unnatural theories from childish lips, only bearing in mind perhaps better than you or I the unnatural facts of her ragged dress, her bleeding feet, and the omnipresent shadow of her drunken father Then, raising her to her feet, he wrapped his shawl around her, and, bidding her come early in the morning, he walked with her down the road There he bade her 'good night' The moon shone brightly on the narrow path before them He stood and watched the bent little figure as it staggered down the road, and waited until it had passed the little graveyard and reached the curve of the hill, where it turned and stood for a moment, a mere atom of suffering outlined against the far-off patient stars Then he went back to his work But the lines of the copy-book thereafter faded into long parallels of never-ending road, over which childish figures seemed to pass sobbing and crying into the night Then, the little school-house seeming lonelier than before, he shut the door and went home

The next morning Mliss came to school Her face had been washed, and her coarse black hair bore evidence of recent struggles with the comb, in which both had evidently suffered The old defiant look shone occasionally in her eyes, but her manner was tamer and more subdued Then began a series of little trials and self-sacrifices, in which master and pupil bore an equal part, and which increased the confidence and sympathy between them Although obedient under the master's eye, at times during recess, if thwarted or stung by a fancied slight, Mliss would rage in ungovernable fury, and many a palpitating young savage, finding himself matched with his own weapons of torment, would seek the master with torn jacket and scratched face, and complaints of the

dreadful Mliss. There was a serious division among the townspeople on the subject, some threatening to withdraw their children from such evil companionship, and others as warmly upholding the course of the master in his work of reclamation. Meanwhile, with a steady persistence that seemed quite astonishing to him on looking back afterward, the master drew Mliss gradually out of the shadow of her past life, as though it were but her natural progress down the narrow path on which he had set her feet the moonlit night of their first meeting. Remembering the experience of the evangelical McSnagley, he carefully avoided that Rock of Ages on which that unskilful pilot had shipwrecked her young faith. But if, in the course of her reading, she chanced to stumble upon those few words which have lifted such as she above the level of the older, the wiser, and the more prudent,—if she learned something of a faith that is symbolized by suffering, and the old light softened in her eyes, it did not take the shape of a lesson. A few of the plainer people had made up a little sum by which the ragged Mliss was enabled to assume the garments of respect and civilization, and often a rough shake of the hand, and words of homely commendation from a red-shirted and burly figure, sent a glow to the cheek of the young master, and set him to thinking if it was altogether deserved.

Three months had passed from the time of their first meeting, and the master was sitting late one evening over the moral and sententious copies, when there came a tap at the door, and again Mliss stood before him. She was neatly clad and clean-faced, and there was nothing, perhaps, but the long black hair and bright black eyes to remind him of his former apparition. 'Are you busy?' she asked. 'Can you come with me?'—and on his signifying his readiness, in her old wilful way she said, 'Come, then, quick!'

They passed out of the door together and into the dark road. As they entered the town the master asked her whither she was going. She replied, 'To see my father.'

It was the first time he had heard her call him by that

filial title, or indeed anything more than 'Old Smith', or the 'Old Man'. It was the first time in three months that she had spoken of him at all, and the master knew she had kept resolutely aloof from him since her great change. Satisfied from her manner that it was fruitless to question her purpose, he passively followed. In out-of-the-way places, low groggeries, restaurants, and saloons, in gambling-hells and dance-houses, the master, preceded by Miss, came and went. In the reeking smoke and blasphemous outcries of low dens, the child, holding the master's hand, stood and anxiously gazed, seemingly unconscious of all in the one absorbing nature of her pursuit. Some of the revellers, recognizing Miss, called to the child to sing and dance for them, and would have forced liquor upon her but for the interference of the master. Others, recognizing him mutely, made way for them to pass. So an hour slipped by. Then the child whispered in his ear that there was a cabin on the other side of the creek crossed by the long flume, where she thought he still might be. Thither they crossed,—a toilsome half-hour's walk,—but in vain. They were returning by the ditch at the abutment of the flume, gazing at the lights of the town on the opposite bank, when, suddenly, sharply, a quick report rang out on the clear night air. The echoes caught it, and carried it round and round Red Mountain, and set the dogs to barking all along the streams. Lights seemed to dance and move quickly on the outskirts of the town for a few moments, the stream rippled quite audibly beside them, a few stones loosened themselves from the hillside, and splashed into the stream, a heavy wind seemed to surge the branches of the funereal pines, and then the silence seemed to fall thicker, heavier, and deadlier. The master turned towards Miss with an unconscious gesture of protection, but the child had gone. Oppressed by a strange fear, he ran quickly down the trail to the river's bed, and, jumping from boulder to boulder, reached the base of Red Mountain and the outskirts of the village. Midway of the crossing he looked up and held his breath in awe. For high above him, on the narrow flume, he saw the

fluttering little figure of his late companion crossing swiftly in the darkness

He climbed the bank, and, guided by a few lights moving about a central point on the mountain, soon found himself breathless among a crowd of awe-stricken and sorrowful men Out from among them the child appeared, and, taking the master's hand, led him silently before what seemed a ragged hole in the mountain Her face was quite white, but her excited manner gone, and her look that of one to whom some long-expected event had at last happened,—an expression that, to the master in his bewilderment, seemed almost like relief The walls of the cavern were partly propped by decaying timbers The child pointed to what appeared to be some ragged cast-off clothes left in the hole by the late occupant The master approached nearer with his flaming dip, and bent over them It was Smith, already cold, with a pistol in his hand, and a bullet in his heart, lying beside his empty pocket

CHAPTER II

THE opinion which McSnagley expressed in reference to a 'change of heart' supposed to be experienced by Mliss was more forcibly described in the gulches and tunnels It was thought there that Mliss had 'struck a good lead' So when there was a new grave added to the little enclosure, and at the expense of the master a little board and inscription put above it, the *Red Mountain Banner* came out quite handsomely, and did the fair thing to the memory of one of 'our oldest Pioneers', alluding gracefully to that 'bane of noble intellects', and otherwise genteelly shelving our dear brother with the past 'He leaves an only child to mourn his loss,' says the *Banner*, 'who is now an exemplary scholar, thanks to the efforts of the Rev Mr McSnagley' The Rev McSnagley, in fact, made a strong point of Mliss's conversion, and, indirectly attributing to the unfortunate child the suicide of her father, made affecting allusions in Sunday School to the beneficial effects of the 'silent tomb', and in this cheerful contemplation drove most of the children into

speechless horror, and caused the pink-and-white scions of the first families to howl dismally and refuse to be comforted

The long dry summer came As each fierce day burned itself out in little whiffs of pearl-grey smoke on the mountain summits, and the upspringing breeze scattered its red embers over the landscape, the green wave which in early spring upheaved above Smith's grave grew sere and dry and hard In those days the master, strolling in the little churchyard of a Sabbath afternoon, was sometimes surprised to find a few wild-flowers plucked from the damp pine-forests scattered there, and oftener rude wreaths hung upon the little pine cross Most of these wreaths were formed of a sweet-scented grass, which the children loved to keep in their desks, intertwined with the plumes of the buckeye, the syringa, and the wood-anemone, and here and there the master noticed the dark blue cowl of the monk's-hood, or deadly aconite There was something in the odd association of this noxious plant with these memorials which occasioned a painful sensation to the master deeper than his aesthetic sense One day, during a long walk, in crossing a wooded ridge he came upon Mliss in the heart of the forest, perched upon a prostrate pine, on a fantastic throne formed by the hanging plumes of lifeless branches, her lap full of grasses and pine-burrs, and crooning to herself one of the negro melodies of her younger life Recognizing him at a distance, she made room for him on her elevated throne, and with a grave assumption of hospitality and patronage that would have been ridiculous had it not been so terribly earnest, she fed him with pine-nuts and crab-apples The master took that opportunity to point out to her the noxious and deadly qualities of the monk's-hood, whose dark blossoms he saw in her lap, and extorted from her a promise not to meddle with it as long as she remained his pupil This done,—as the master had tested her integrity before,—he rested satisfied, and the strange feeling which had overcome him on seeing them died away

Of the homes that were offered Mliss when her

conversion became known, the master preferred that of Mrs Morpher, a womanly and kind-hearted specimen of South-western efflorescence, known in her maidenhood as the 'Per-rairie Rose' Being one of those who contend resolutely against their own natures, Mrs Morpher, by a long series of self-sacrifices and struggles, had at last subjugated her naturally careless disposition to principles of 'order', which she considered, in common with Mr Pope, as 'Heaven's first law' But she could not entirely govern the orbits of her satellites, however regular her own movements, and even her own 'Jeemes' sometimes collided with her Again her old nature asserted itself in her children Lycurgus dipped into the cupboard 'between meals', and Aristides came home from school without shoes, leaving those important articles on the threshold, for the delight of a barefooted walk down the ditches Octavia and Cassandra were 'keerless' of their clothes So with but one exception, however much the 'Prairie Rose' might have trimmed and pruned and trained her own matured luxuriance, the little shoots came up defiantly wild and straggling That one exception was Clytemnestra Morpher, aged fifteen She was the realization of her mother's immaculate conception,—neat, orderly, and dull

It was an amiable weakness of Mrs Morpher to imagine that 'Clytie' was a consolation and model for Mliss Following this fallacy, Mrs Morpher threw Clytie at the head of Mliss when she was 'bad', and set her up before the child for adoration in her penitential moments It was not, therefore, surprising to the master to hear that Clytie was coming to school, obviously as a favour to the master and as an example for Mliss and others For 'Clytie' was quite a young lady Inheriting her mother's physical peculiarities, and in obedience to the climatic laws of the Red Mountain region, she was an early bloomer The youth of Smith's Pocket, to whom this kind of flower was rare, sighed for her in April and languished in May Enamoured swains haunted the schoolhouse at the hour of dismissal A few were jealous of the master

Perhaps it was this latter circumstance that opened the master's eyes to another He could not help noticing that Clytie was romantic, that in school she required a great deal of attention, that her pens were uniformly bad and wanted fixing, that she usually accompanied the request with a certain expectation in her eye that was somewhat disproportionate to the quality of service she verbally required, that she sometimes allowed the curves of a round, plump white arm to rest on his when he was writing her copies, that she always blushed and flung back her blond curls when she did so I don't remember whether I have stated that the master was a young man, —it's of little consequence, however, he had been severely educated in the school in which Clytie was taking her first lesson, and, on the whole, withstood the flexible curves and factitious glance like the fine young Spartan that he was Perhaps an insufficient quality of food may have tended to this asceticism He generally avoided Clytie, but one evening, when she returned to the schoolhouse after something she had forgotten, and did not find it until the master walked home with her, I hear that he endeavoured to make himself particularly agreeable, —partly from the fact, I imagine, that his conduct was adding gall and bitterness to the already overcharged hearts of Clytemnestra's admirers

The morning after this affecting episode Mliss did not come to school Noon came, but not Mliss Questioning Clytie on the subject, it appeared that they had left for school together, but the wilful Mliss had taken another road The afternoon brought her not In the evening he called on Mrs Morpher, whose motherly heart was really alarmed Mr Morpher had spent all day in search of her, without discovering a trace that might lead to her discovery Aristides was summoned as a probable accomplice, but that equitable infant succeeded in impressing the household with his innocence Mrs Morpher entertained a vivid impression that the child would yet be found drowned in a ditch, or, what was almost as terrible, muddied and soiled beyond the redemption of soap and water Sick at heart, the master returned to the school-

house As he lit his lamp and seated himself at his desk, he found a note lying before him addressed to himself, in Mliss's handwriting It seemed to be written on a leaf torn from some old memorandum-book, and, to prevent sacrilegious trifling, had been sealed with six broken wafers Opening it almost tenderly, the master read as follows

RESPECTED SIR,—When you read this, I am run away Never to come back *Never*, NEVER, NEVER You can give my beeds to Mary Jennings, and my Amerika's Pride [a highly coloured lithograph from a tobacco-box] to Sally Flanders But don't you give anything to Clytie Morpher Don't you dare to Do you know what my opinion is of her, it is this, she is perfekly disgustin That is all and no more at present from

Yours respectfully,

MELISSA SMITH

The master sat pondering on this strange epistle till the moon lifted its bright face above the distant hills, and illuminated the trail that led to the school-house, beaten quite hard with the coming and going of little feet Then, more satisfied in mind, he tore the missive into fragments and scattered them along the road

At sunrise the next morning he was picking his way through the palm-like fern and thick underbrush of the pine-forest, starting the hare from its form, and awakening a querulous protest from a few dissipated crows, who had evidently been making a night of it, and so came to the wooded ridge where he had once found Mliss There he found the prostrate pine and tasselled branches, but the throne was vacant As he drew nearer, what might have been some frightened animal started through the crackling limbs It ran up the tossed arms of the fallen monarch, and sheltered itself in some friendly foliage The master, reaching the old seat, found the nest still warm, looking up in the intertwining branches, he met the black eyes of the errant Mliss They gazed at each other without speaking She was first to break the silence

'What do you want?' she asked curtly

The master had decided on a course of action 'I want some crab-apples,' he said, humbly

'Shan't have 'em! go away Why don't you get 'em of Clytemnerestera?' (It seemed to be a relief to Miss to express her contempt in additional syllables to that classical young woman's already long-drawn title) 'Oh, you wicked thing!'

'I am hungry, Lissy I have eaten nothing since dinner yesterday I am famished!' and the young man, in a state of remarkable exhaustion, leaned against the tree

Melissa's heart was touched In the bitter days of her gipsy life she had known the sensation he so artfully simulated Overcome by his heartbroken tone, but not entirely divested of suspicion, she said,—

'Dig under the tree near the roots, and you'll find lots, but mind you don't tell,' for Miss had *her* hoards as well as the rats and squirrels

But the master, of course, was unable to find them, the effects of hunger probably blinding his senses Miss grew uneasy At length she peered at him through the leaves in an elfish way, and questioned,—

'If I come down and give you some, you'll promise you won't touch me?'

The master promised

'Hope you'll die if you do!'

The master accepted instant dissolution as a forfeit Miss slid down the tree For a few moments nothing transpired but the munching of the pine-nuts 'Do you feel better?' she asked, with some solicitude The master confessed to a recuperated feeling, and then, gravely thanking her, proceeded to retrace his steps As he expected, he had not gone far before she called him He turned She was standing there quite white, with tears in her widely opened orbs The master felt that the right moment had come Going up to her, he took both her hands, and, looking in her tearful eyes, said, gravely, 'Lissy, do you remember the first evening you came to see me?'

Lissy remembered

'You asked me if you might come to school, for you wanted to learn something and be better, and I said——'

'Come,' responded the child, promptly

'What would *you* say if the master now came to you and said that he was lonely without his little scholar, and that he wanted her to come and teach him to be better?'

The child hung her head for a few moments in silence The master waited patiently Tempted by the quiet, a hare ran close to the couple, and raising her bright eyes and velvet forepaws, sat and gazed at them A squirrel ran half-way down the furrowed bark of the fallen tree, and there stopped

'We are waiting, Lissy,' said the master, in a whisper, and the child smiled Stirred by a passing breeze, the tree-tops rocked, and a long pencil of light stole through their interlaced boughs full on the doubting face and irresolute little figure Suddenly she took the master's hand in her quick way What she said was scarcely audible, but the master, putting the black hair back from her forehead, kissed her, and so, hand in hand, they passed out of the damp aisles and forest odours into the open sunlit road

CHAPTER III

SOMEWHAT less spiteful in her intercourse with other scholars, Mliss still retained an offensive attitude in regard to Clytemnestra Perhaps the jealous element was not entirely lulled in her passionate little breast Perhaps it was only that the round curves and pump outline offered more extended pinching surface But while such ebullitions were under the master's control, her enmity occasionally took a new and irrepressible form

The master in his first estimate of the child's character could not conceive that she had ever possessed a doll But the master, like many other professed readers of character, was safer in *a posteriori* than *a priori* reasoning Mliss had a doll, but then it was emphatically Mliss's doll,—a smaller copy of herself Its unhappy existence had been a secret discovered accidentally by Mrs Morpher It had been the old-time companion of Mliss's wanderings, and bore evident marks of suffering Its original complexion was long since washed away by the weather and anointed by the slime of ditches It looked

very much as Mliss had in days past Its one gown of faded stuff was dirty and ragged as hers had been Mliss had never been known to apply to it any childish term of endearment She never exhibited it in the presence of other children It was put severely to bed in a hollow tree near the school-house, and only allowed exercise during Mliss's rambles Fulfilling a stern duty to her doll, as she would to herself, it knew no luxuries

Now Mrs Morpher, obeying a commendable impulse, bought another doll and gave it to Mliss The child received it gravely and curiously The master on looking at it one day fancied he saw a slight resemblance in its round red cheeks and mild blue eyes to Clytemnestra It became evident before long that Mliss had also noticed the same resemblance Accordingly she hammered its waxen head on the rocks when she was alone, and sometimes dragged it with a string round its neck to and from school At other times, setting it up on her desk, she made a pin-cushion of its patient and inoffensive body Whether this was done in revenge of what she considered a second figurative obtrusion of Clytie's excellences upon her, or whether she had an intuitive appreciation of the rites of certain other heathens, and, indulging in that 'Fetish' ceremony, imagined that the original of her wax model would pine away and finally die, is a metaphysical question I shall not now consider

In spite of these moral vagaries, the master could not help noticing in her different tasks the working of a quick, restless, and vigorous perception She knew neither the hesitancy nor the doubts of childhood Her answers in class were always slightly dashed with audacity Of course she was not infallible But her courage and daring in passing beyond her own depth and that of the floundering little swimmers around her, in their minds outweighed all errors of judgement Children are not better than grown people in this respect, I fancy, and whenever the little red hand flashed above her desk, there was a wondering silence, and even the master was sometimes oppressed with a doubt of his own experience and judgement

Nevertheless, certain attributes which at first amused and entertained his fancy began to afflict him with grave doubts He could not but see that Mliss was revengeful, irreverent, and wilful That there was but one better quality which pertained to her semi-savage disposition,—the faculty of physical fortitude and self-sacrifice, and another, though not always an attribute of the noble savage,—Truth Mliss was both fearless and sincere, perhaps in such a character the adjectives were synonymous

The master had been doing some hard thinking on this subject, and had arrived at that conclusion quite common to all who think sincerely, that he was generally the slave of his own prejudices, when he determined to call on the Rev McSnagley for advice This decision was somewhat humiliating to his pride, as he and McSnagley were not friends But he thought of Mliss, and the evening of their first meeting, and perhaps with a pardonable superstition that it was not chance alone that had guided her wilful feet to the schoolhouse, and perhaps with a complacent consciousness of the rare magnanimity of the act, he choked back his dislike and went to McSnagley

The reverend gentleman was glad to see him Moreover, he observed that the master was looking 'peartish', and hoped he had got over the 'neuralgy' and 'rheumatiz' He himself had been troubled with a dumb 'ager' since last Conference But he had learned to 'rastle and pray'

Pausing a moment to enable the master to write his certain method of curing the dumb 'ager' upon the book and volume of his brain, Mr McSnagley proceeded to inquire after Sister Morpher 'She is an adornment to Christ*ew*anity, and has a likely growin' young family,' added Mr McSnagley, 'and there's that mannerly young gal,—so well behaved,—Miss Clytie' In fact, Clytie's perfections seemed to affect him to such an extent that he dwelt for several minutes upon them The master was doubly embarrassed In the first place, there was an enforced contrast with poor Mliss in all this praise of

Clytie Secondly, there was something unpleasantly confidential in his tone of speaking of Mrs Morpher's earliest born So that the master, after a few futile efforts to say something natural, found it convenient to recall another engagement, and left without asking the information required, but in his after reflections somewhat unjustly giving the Rev Mr McSnagley the full benefit of having refused it

Perhaps this rebuff placed the master and pupil once more in the close communion of old The child seemed to notice the change in the master's manner, which had of late been constrained, and in one of their long post-prandial walks she stopped suddenly, and, mounting a stump, looked full in his face with big searching eyes 'You ain't mad?' said she, with an interrogative shake of the black braids 'No ' 'Nor bothered?' 'No ' 'Nor hungry?' (Hunger was to Mliss a sickness that might attack a person at any moment) 'No ' 'Nor thinking of her?' 'Of whom, Lissy?' 'That white girl ' (This was the latest epithet invented by Mliss, who was a very dark brunette, to express Clytemnestra) 'No ' 'Upon your word?' (A substitute for 'Hope you'll die?' proposed by the master) 'Yes ' 'And sacred honour?' 'Yes ' Then Mliss gave him a fierce little kiss, and, hopping down, fluttered off For two or three days after that she condescended to appear more like other children, and be, as she expressed it, 'good'

Two years had passed since the master's advent at Smith's Pocket, and as his salary was not large, and the prospects of Smith's Pocket eventually becoming the capital of the State not entirely definite, he contemplated a change He had informed the school trustees privately of his intentions, but, educated young men of unblemished moral character being scarce at that time, he consented to continue his school term through the winter to early spring None else knew of his intention except his one friend, a Dr Duchesne, a young Creole physician known to the people of Wingdam as 'Duchesny' He never mentioned it to Mrs Morpher, Clytie, or any of his scholars His reticence was partly the result of a

constitutional indisposition to fuss, partly a desire to be spared the questions and surmises of vulgar curiosity, and partly that he never really believed he was going to do anything before it was done

He did not like to think of Mliss It was a selfish instinct, perhaps, which made him try to fancy his feeling for the child was foolish, romantic, and unpractical He even tried to imagine that she would do better under the control of an older and sterner teacher Then she was nearly eleven, and in a few years, by the rules of Red Mountain, would be a woman He had done his duty After Smith's death he addressed letters to Smith's relatives, and received one answer from a sister of Melissa's mother Thanking the master, she stated her intention of leaving the Atlantic States for California with her husband in a few months This was a slight superstructure for the airy castle which the master pictured for Mliss's home, but it was easy to fancy that some loving, sympathetic woman, with the claims of kindred, might better guide her wayward nature Yet, when the master had read the letter, Mliss listened to it carelessly, received it submissively, and afterwards cut figures out of it with her scissors, supposed to represent Clytemnestra, labelled 'the white girl', to prevent mistakes, and impaled them upon the outer walls of the school-house

When the summer was about spent, and the last harvest had been gathered in the valleys, the master bethought him of gathering in a few ripened shoots of the young idea, and of having his Harvest-Home, or Examination So the savants and professionals of Smith's Pocket were gathered to witness that time-honoured custom of placing timid children in a constrained position, and bullying them as in a witness-box. As usual in such cases, the most audacious and self-possessed were the lucky recipients of the honours The reader will imagine that in the present instance Mliss and Clytie were pre-eminent, and divided public attention, Mliss with her clearness of material perception and self-reliance, Clytie with her placid self-esteem and saint-like correctness of deportment The other little ones were

timid and blundering Mliss's readiness and brilliancy, of course, captivated the greatest number and provoked the greatest applause Mliss's antecedents had unconsciously awakened the strongest sympathies of a class whose athletic forms were ranged against the walls, or whose handsome bearded faces looked in at the windows But Mliss's popularity was overthrown by an unexpected circumstance

McSnagley had invited himself, and had been going through the pleasing entertainment of frightening the more timid pupils by the vaguest and most ambiguous questions delivered in an impressive funereal tone, and Mliss had soared into Astronomy, and was tracking the course of our spotted ball through space, and keeping time with the music of the spheres, and defining the tethered orbits of the planets, when McSnagley impressively arose 'Meelissy! ye were speaking of the revolutions of this yere yearth and the move*ments* of the sun, and I think ye said it had been a-doing of it since the creashun, eh?' Mliss nodded a scornful affirmative 'Well, war that the truth?' said McSnagley, folding his arms 'Yes,' said Mliss, shutting up her little red lips tightly The handsome outlines at the windows peered further in the school-room, and a saintly Raphael-face, with blond beard and soft blue eyes, belonging to the biggest scamp in the diggings, turned toward the child and whispered, 'Stick to it, Mliss!' The reverend gentleman heaved a deep sigh, and cast a compassionate glance at the master, then at the children, and then rested his look on Clytie That young woman softly elevated her round, white arm Its seductive curves were enhanced by a gorgeous and massive specimen bracelet, the gift of one of her humblest worshippers, worn in honour of the occasion There was a momentary silence Clytie's round cheeks were very pink and soft Clytie's big eyes were very bright and blue Clytie's low-necked white book-muslin rested softly on Clytie's white, plump shoulders Clytie looked at the master, and the master nodded Then Clytie spoke softly

'Joshua commanded the sun to stand still, and it

obeyed him!' There was a low hum of applause in the school-room, a triumphant expression on McSnagley's face, a grave shadow on the master's, and a comical look of disappointment reflected from the windows Mliss skimmed rapidly over her Astronomy, and then shut the book with a loud snap A groan burst from McSnagley, an expression of astonishment from the school-room, a yell from the windows, as Mliss brought her red fist down on the desk, with the emphatic declaration,

'It's a d—n lie I don't believe it!'

CHAPTER IV

The long wet season had drawn near its close Signs of spring were visible in the swelling buds and rushing torrents The pine-forests exhaled the fresher spicery The azaleas were already budding, the ceanothus getting ready its lilac livery for spring On the green upland which climbed Red Mountain at its southern aspect the long spike of the monk's-hood shot up from its broad-leaved stool, and once more shook its dark blue bells Again the billow above Smith's grave was soft and green, its crest just tossed with the foam of daisies and buttercups The little graveyard had gathered a few new dwellers in the past year, and the mounds were placed two by two by the little paling until they reached Smith's grave, and there there was but one General superstition had shunned it, and the plot beside Smith was vacant

There had been several placards posted about the town, intimating that, at a certain period, a celebrated dramatic company would perform, for a few days, a series of 'side-splitting' and 'screaming' farces, that, alternating pleasantly with this, there would be some melodrama and a grand divertisement, which would include singing, dancing, &c These announcements occasioned a great fluttering among the little folk, and were the theme of much excitement and great speculation among the master's scholars The master had promised Mliss, to whom this sort of thing was sacred

and rare, that she should go, and on that momentous evening the master and Mliss 'assisted'.

The performance was the prevalent style of heavy mediocrity, the melodrama was not bad enough to laugh at nor good enough to excite. But the master, turning wearily to the child, was astonished, and felt something like self-accusation in noticing the peculiar effect upon her excitable nature. The red blood flushed in her cheeks at each stroke of her panting little heart. Her small passionate lips were slightly parted to give vent to her hurried breath. Her widely opened lids threw up and arched her black eyebrows. She did not laugh at the dismal comicalities of the funny man, for Mliss seldom laughed. Nor was she discreetly affected to the delicate extremes of the corner of a white handkerchief, as was the tender-hearted 'Clytie', who was talking with her 'feller' and ogling the master at the same moment. But when the performance was over, and the green curtain fell on the little stage, Mliss drew a long deep breath, and turned to the master's grave face with a half-apologetic smile and wearied gesture. Then she said, 'Now take me home!' and dropped the lids of her black eyes, as if to dwell once more in fancy on the mimic stage.

On their way to Mrs Morpher's the master thought proper to ridicule the whole performance. Now he shouldn't wonder if Mliss thought that the young lady who acted so beautifully was really in earnest, and in love with the gentleman who wore such fine clothes. Well, if she were in love with him, it was a very unfortunate thing! 'Why?' said Mliss, with an upward sweep of the drooping lid. 'Oh! well, he couldn't support his wife at his present salary, and pay so much a week for his fine clothes, and then they wouldn't receive as much wages if they were married as if they were merely lovers, —that is,' added the master, 'if they are not already married to somebody else, but I think the husband of the pretty young countess takes the tickets at the door, or pulls up the curtain, or snuffs the candles, or does something equally refined and elegant. As to the young

man with nice clothes, which are really nice now, and must cost at least two and a half or three dollars, not to speak of that mantle of red drugget which I happen to know the price of, for I bought some of it for my room once,—as to this young man, Lissy, he is a pretty good fellow, and if he does drink occasionally, I don't think people ought to take advantage of it and give him black eyes, and throw him in the mud Do you? I am sure he might owe me two dollars and a half a long time, before I would throw it up in his face, as the fellow did the other night at Wingdam'

Mliss had taken his hand in both of hers and was trying to look in his eyes, which the young man kept as resolutely averted Mliss had a faint idea of irony, indulging herself sometimes in a species of sardonic humour, which was equally visible in her actions and her speech But the young man continued in this strain until they had reached Mrs Morpher's, and he had deposited Mliss in her maternal charge Waiving the invitation of Mrs Morpher to refreshment and rest, and shading his eyes with his hand to keep out the blue-eyed Clytemnestra's siren glances, he excused himself, and went home

For two or three days after the advent of the dramatic company, Mliss was late at school, and the master's usual Friday afternoon ramble was for once omitted, owing to the absence of his trustworthy guide As he was putting away his books and preparing to leave the school-house, a small voice piped at his side, 'Please, sir!' The master turned, and there stood Aristides Morpher

'Well, my little man,' said the master, impatiently, 'what is it? quick!'

'Please, sir, me and "Kerg" thinks that Mliss is going to run away agin'

'What's that, sir?' said the master, with that unjust testiness with which we always receive disagreeable news

'Why, sir, she don't stay home any more, and "Kerg" and me see her talking with one of those actor fellers, and she's with him now, and please, sir, yesterday she told "Kerg" and me she could make a speech as well as Miss Cellerstina Montmoressy, and she spouted right off by

heart,' and the little fellow paused in a collapsed condition

'What actor?' asked the master

'Him as wears the shiny hat And hair And gold pin And gold chain,' said the just Aristides, putting periods for commas to eke out his breath

The master put on his gloves and hat, feeling an unpleasant tightness in his chest and thorax, and walked out in the road Aristides trotted along by his side, endeavouring to keep pace with his short legs to the master's strides, when the master stopped suddenly, and Aristides bumped up against him 'Where were they talking?' asked the master, as if continuing the conversation

'At the Arcade,' said Aristides

When they reached the main street the master paused 'Run down home,' said he to the boy 'If Mliss is there, come to the Arcade and tell me If she isn't there, stay home, run!' And off trotted the short-legged Aristides

The Arcade was just across the way,—a long, rambling building containing a bar-room, billiard-room, and restaurant As the young man crossed the plaza he noticed that two or three of the passers-by turned and looked after him He looked at his clothes, took out his handkerchief and wiped his face, before he entered the bar-room It contained the usual number of loungers, who stared at him as he entered One of them looked at him so fixedly, and with such a strange expression, that the master stopped and looked again, and then saw it was only his own reflection in a large mirror This made the master think that perhaps he was a little excited, and so he took up a copy of the *Red Mountain Banner* from one of the tables, and tried to recover his composure by reading the column of advertisements

He then walked through the bar-room, through the restaurant, and into the billiard-room The child was not there In the latter apartment a person was standing by one of the tables with a broad-brimmed glazed hat on his head The master recognized him as the agent of the dramatic company, he had taken a dislike to him at

their first meeting, from the peculiar fashion of wearing his beard and hair Satisfied that the object of his search was not there, he turned to the man with a glazed hat He had noticed the master, but tried that common trick of unconsciousness, in which vulgar natures always fail Balancing a billiard-cue in his hand, he pretended to play with a ball in the centre of the table The master stood opposite to him until he raised his eyes, when their glances met, the master walked up to him

He had intended to avoid a scene or quarrel, but when he began to speak, something kept rising in his throat and retarded his utterance, and his own voice frightened him, it sounded so distant, low, and resonant

'I understand,' he began, 'that Melissa Smith, an orphan, and one of my scholars, has talked with you about adopting your profession Is that so?'

The man with the glazed hat leaned over the table, and made an imaginary shot, that sent the ball spinning round the cushions Then walking round the table he recovered the ball, and placed it upon the spot This duty discharged, getting ready for another shot, he said,—

'S'pose she has?'

The master choked up again, but, squeezing the cushion of the table in his gloved hand, he went on —

'If you are a gentleman, I have only to tell you that I am her guardian, and responsible for her career You know as well as I do the kind of life you offer her As you may learn of any one here, I have already brought her out of an existence worse than death,—out of the streets and the contamination of vice I am trying to do so again Let us talk like men She has neither father, mother, sister, or brother Are you seeking to give her an equivalent for these?'

The man with the glazed hat examined the point of his cue, and then looked around for somebody to enjoy the joke with him

'I know that she is a strange, wilful girl,' continued

the master, 'but she is better than she was I believe that I have some influence over her still I beg and hope, therefore, that you will take no further steps in this matter, but as a man, as a gentleman, leave her to me I am willing——' But here something rose again in the master's throat, and the sentence remained unfinished

The man with the glazed hat, mistaking the master's silence, raised his head with a coarse, brutal laugh, and said in a loud voice,—

'Want her yourself, do you? That cock won't fight here, young man!'

The insult was more in the tone than the words, more in the glance than tone, and more in the man's instinctive nature than all these The best appreciable rhetoric to this kind of animal is a blow The master felt this, and, with his pent-up, nervous energy finding expression in the one act, he struck the brute full in his grinning face The blow sent the glazed hat one way and the cue another, and tore the glove and skin from the master's hand from knuckle to joint It opened up the corners of the fellow's mouth, and spoilt the peculiar shape of his beard for some time to come

There was a shout, an imprecation, a scuffle, and the trampling of many feet Then the crowd parted right and left, and two sharp quick reports followed each other in rapid succession Then they closed again about his opponent, and the master was standing alone He remembered picking bits of burning wadding from his coat-sleeve with his left hand Some one was holding his other hand Looking at it, he saw it was still bleeding from the blow, but his fingers were clenched around the handle of a glittering knife He could not remember when or how he got it

The man who was holding his hand was Mr Morpher He hurried the master to the door, but the master held back, and tried to tell him as well as he could with his parched throat about 'Mliss' 'It's all right, my boy,' said Mr Morpher 'She's home!' And they passed out into the street together As they walked along Mr

Morpher said that Mliss had come running into the house a few moments before, and had dragged him out, saying that somebody was trying to kill the master at the Arcade. Wishing to be alone, the master promised Mr. Morpher that he would not seek the Agent again that night, and parted from him, taking the road toward the school-house. He was surprised on nearing it to find the door open,—still more surprised to find Mliss sitting there.

The master's nature, as I have hinted before, had, like most sensitive organizations, a selfish basis. The brutal taunt thrown out by his late adversary still rankled in his heart. It was possible, he thought, that such a construction might be put upon his affection for the child, which at best was foolish and Quixotic. Besides, had she not voluntarily abnegated his authority and affection? And what had everybody else said about her? Why should he alone combat the opinion of all, and be at last obliged tacitly to confess the truth of all they had predicted? And he had been a participant in a low bar-room fight with a common boor, and risked his life, to prove what? What had he proved? Nothing! What would the people say? What would his friend say? What would Mc-Snagley say?

In his self-accusation the last person he should have wished to meet was Mliss. He entered the door, and, going up to his desk, told the child, in a few cold words, that he was busy, and wished to be alone. As she rose he took her vacant seat, and, sitting down, buried his head in his hands. When he looked up again she was still standing there. She was looking at his face with an anxious expression.

'Did you kill him?' she asked.

'No!' said the master.

'That's what I gave you the knife for!' said the child, quickly.

'Gave me the knife?' repeated the master, in bewilderment.

'Yes, gave you the knife. I was there under the bar. Saw you hit him. Saw you both fall. He dropped his

old knife I gave it to you Why didn't you stick him?' said Mliss rapidly, with an expressive twinkle of the black eyes and a gesture of the little red hand

The master could only look his astonishment

'Yes,' said Mliss 'If you'd asked me, I'd told you I was off with the play-actors Why was I off with the play-actors? Because you wouldn't tell me you was going away I knew it I heard you tell the Doctor so I wasn't a-goin' to stay here alone with those Morphers I'd rather die first'

With a dramatic gesture which was perfectly consistent with her character, she drew from her bosom a few limp green leaves, and, holding them out at arm's length, said in her quick vivid way, and in the queer pronunciation of her old life, which she fell into when unduly excited,—

'That's the poison plant you said would kill me I'll go with the play-actors, or I'll eat this and die here I don't care which I won't stay here, where they hate and despise me! Neither would you let me, if you didn't hate and despise me too!'

The passionate little breast heaved, and two big tears peeped over the edge of Mliss's eyelids, but she whisked them away with the corner of her apron as if they had been wasps

'If you lock me up in jail,' said Mliss fiercely, 'to keep me from the play-actors, I'll poison myself Father killed himself,—why shouldn't I? You said a mouthful of that root would kill me, and I always carry it here,' and she struck her breast with her clenched fist

The master thought of the vacant plot beside Smith's grave, and of the passionate little figure before him Seizing her hands in his and looking full into her truthful eyes, he said,—

'Lissy, will you go with *me*?'

The child put her arms around his neck, and said joyfully, 'Yes'

'But now—to-night?'

'To-night'

And, hand in hand, they passed into the road,—the

narrow road that had once brought her weary feet to the master's door, and which it seemed she should not tread again alone The stars glittered brightly above them For good or ill the lesson had been learned, and behind them the school of Red Mountain closed upon them for ever

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

1850–1894

MARKHEIM

[From *The Merry Men* 1887]

'YES,' said the dealer, 'our windfalls are of various kinds Some customers are ignorant, and then I touch a dividend on my superior knowledge Some are dishonest,' and here he held up the candle, so that the light fell strongly on his visitor, 'and in that case,' he continued, 'I profit by my virtue '

Markheim had but just entered from the daylight streets, and his eyes had not yet grown familiar with the mingled shine and darkness in the shop At these pointed words, and before the near presence of the flame, he blinked painfully and looked aside

The dealer chuckled 'You come to me on Christmas Day,' he resumed, 'when you know that I am alone in my house, put up my shutters, and make a point of refusing business Well, you will have to pay for that, you will have to pay for my loss of time, when I should be balancing my books, you will have to pay, besides, for a kind of manner that I remark in you to-day very strongly I am the essence of discretion, and ask no awkward questions, but when a customer cannot look me in the eye, he has to pay for it ' The dealer once more chuckled, and then, changing to his usual business voice, though still with a note of irony, 'You can give, as usual, a clear account of how you came into the possession of the object?' he continued 'Still your uncle's cabinet? A remarkable collector, sir!'

And the little pale, round-shouldered dealer stood almost on tiptoe, looking over the top of his gold spectacles, and nodding his head with every mark of disbelief Markheim returned his gaze with one of infinite pity, and a touch of horror

'This time,' said he, 'you are in error I have not come to sell, but to buy I have no curios to dispose of, my uncle's cabinet is bare to the wainscot, even were it still intact, I have done well on the Stock Exchange, and should more likely add to it than otherwise, and my errand to-day is simplicity itself I seek a Christmas present for a lady,' he continued, waxing more fluent as he struck into the speech he had prepared, 'and certainly I owe you every excuse for thus disturbing you upon so small a matter But the thing was neglected yesterday, I must produce my little compliment at dinner, and, as you very well know, a rich marriage is not a thing to be neglected'

There followed a pause, during which the dealer seemed to weigh this statement incredulously The ticking of many clocks among the curious lumber of the shop and the faint rushing of the cabs in a near thoroughfare, filled up the interval of silence

'Well, sir,' said the dealer, 'be it so You are an old customer after all, and if, as you say, you have the chance of a good marriage, far be it from me to be an obstacle Here is a nice thing for a lady now,' he went on, 'this hand glass—fifteenth century, warranted, comes from a good collection, too, but I reserve the name, in the interests of my customer, who was just like yourself, my dear sir, the nephew and sole heir of a remarkable collector'

The dealer, while he thus ran on in his dry and biting voice, had stooped to take the object from its place, and, as he had done so, a shock had passed through Markheim, a start both of hand and foot, a sudden leap of many tumultuous passions to the face It passed as swiftly as it came, and left no trace beyond a certain trembling of the hand that now received the glass

'A glass,' he said hoarsely, and then paused and repeated it more clearly 'A glass? For Christmas? Surely not?'

'And why not?' cried the dealer 'Why not a glass?'

Markheim was looking upon him with an indefinable expression 'You ask me why not?' he said 'Why,

look here—look in it—look at yourself! Do you like to see it? No! nor I—nor any man.'

The little man had jumped back when Markheim had so suddenly confronted him with the mirror, but now, perceiving there was nothing worse on hand, he chuckled. 'Your future lady, sir, must be pretty hard favoured,' said he.

'I ask you,' said Markheim, 'for a Christmas present, and you give me this—this damned reminder of years, and sins, and follies—this hand-conscience! Did you mean it? Had you a thought in your mind? Tell me. It will be better for you if you do. Come, tell me about yourself. I hazard a guess now, that you are in secret a very charitable man?'

The dealer looked closely at his companion. It was very odd, Markheim did not appear to be laughing; there was something in his face like an eager sparkle of hope, but nothing of mirth.

'What are you driving at?' the dealer asked.

'Not charitable?' returned the other gloomily. 'Not charitable, not pious, not scrupulous, unloving, unbeloved, a hand to get money, a safe to keep it. Is that all? Dear God, man, is that all?'

'I will tell you what it is,' began the dealer, with some sharpness, and then broke off again into a chuckle. 'But I see this is a love match of yours, and you have been drinking the lady's health.'

'Ah!' cried Markheim, with a strange curiosity. 'Ah, have you been in love? Tell me about that.'

'I,' cried the dealer. 'I in love! I never had the time, nor have I the time to-day for all this nonsense. Will you take the glass?'

'Where is the hurry?' returned Markheim. 'It is very pleasant to stand here talking, and life is so short and insecure that I would not hurry away from any pleasure—no, not even from so mild a one as this. We should rather cling, cling to what little we can get, like a man at a cliff's edge. Every second is a cliff, if you think upon it—a cliff a mile high—high enough, if we fall, to dash us out of every feature of humanity. Hence it is best to

talk pleasantly Let us talk of each other why should we wear this mask? Let us be confidential Who knows, we might become friends?'

'I have just one word to say to you,' said the dealer 'Either make your purchase, or walk out of my shop!'

'True, true,' said Markheim 'Enough fooling To business Show me something else'

The dealer stooped once more, this time to replace the glass upon the shelf, his thin blond hair falling over his eyes as he did so Markheim moved a little nearer, with one hand in the pocket of his greatcoat, he drew himself up and filled his lungs, at the same time many different emotions were depicted together on his face—terror, horror, and resolve, fascination and a physical repulsion, and through a haggard lift of his upper lip, his teeth looked out

'This, perhaps, may suit,' observed the dealer and then, as he began to re-arise, Markheim bounded from behind upon his victim The long, skewerlike dagger flashed and fell The dealer struggled like a hen, striking his temple on the shelf, and then tumbled on the floor in a heap

Time had some score of small voices in that shop, some stately and slow as was becoming to their great age, others garrulous and hurried All these told out the seconds in an intricate chorus of tickings Then the passage of a lad's feet, heavily running on the pavement, broke in upon these smaller voices and startled Markheim into the consciousness of his surroundings He looked about him awfully The candle stood on the counter, its flame solemnly wagging in a draught, and by that inconsiderable movement, the whole room was filled with noiseless bustle and kept heaving like a sea the tall shadows nodding, the gross blots of darkness swelling and dwindling as with respiration, the faces of the portraits and the china gods changing and wavering like images in water The inner door stood ajar, and peered into that leaguer of shadows with a long slit of daylight like a pointing finger

From these fear-stricken rovings, Markheim's eyes

returned to the body of his victim, where it lay both humped and sprawling, incredibly small and strangely meaner than in life. In these poor, miserly clothes, in that ungainly attitude, the dealer lay like so much saw dust. Markheim had feared to see it, and, lo! it was nothing. And yet, as he gazed, this bundle of old clothes and pool of blood began to find eloquent voices. There it must lie; there was none to work the cunning hinges or direct the miracle of locomotion—there it must lie till it was found. Found! aye, and then? Then would this dead flesh lift up a cry that would ring over England, and fill the world with the echoes of pursuit. Aye, dead or not, this was still the enemy. 'Time was that when the brains were out,' he thought; and the first word struck into his mind. Time, now that the deed was accomplished—time, which had closed for the victim, had become instant and momentous for the slayer.

The thought was yet in his mind, when, first one and then another, with every variety of pace and voice—one deep as the bell from a cathedral turret, another ringing on its treble notes the prelude of a waltz—the clocks began to strike the hour of three in the afternoon.

The sudden outbreak of so many tongues in that dumb chamber staggered him. He began to bestir himself, going to and fro with the candle, beleaguered by moving shadows, and startled to the soul by chance reflections. In many rich mirrors, some of home design, some from Venice or Amsterdam, he saw his face repeated and repeated, as it were an army of spies; his own eyes met and detected him; and the sound of his own steps, lightly as they fell, vexed the surrounding quiet. And still, as he continued to fill his pockets, his mind accused him with a sickening iteration, of the thousand faults of his design. He should have chosen a more quiet hour; he should have prepared an alibi; he should not have used a knife; he should have been more cautious, and only bound and gagged the dealer, and not killed him; he should have been more bold, and killed the servant also; he should have done all things otherwise: poignant regrets, weary, incessant toiling of

within the house, was he alone? He knew he was, he had watched the servant set forth sweethearting, in her poor best, 'out for the day' written in every ribbon and smile. Yes, he was alone, of course, and yet, in the bulk of empty house above him, he could surely hear a stir of delicate footing—he was surely conscious, inexplicably conscious of some presence. Aye, surely, to every room and corner of the house his imagination followed it, and now it was a faceless thing, and yet had eyes to see with, and again it was a shadow of himself, and yet again behold the image of the dead dealer, reinspired with cunning and hatred.

At times, with a strong effort, he would glance at the open door which still seemed to repel his eyes. The house was tall, the skylight small and dirty, the day blind with fog, and the light that filtered down to the ground story was exceedingly faint, and showed dimly on the threshold of the shop. And yet, in that strip of doubtful brightness, did there not hang wavering a shadow?

Suddenly, from the street outside, a very jovial gentleman began to beat with a staff on the shop-door, accompanying his blows with shouts and railleries in which the dealer was continually called upon by name. Markheim, smitten into ice, glanced at the dead man. But no! he lay quite still, he was fled away far beyond earshot of these blows and shoutings, he was sunk beneath seas of silence, and his name, which would once have caught his notice above the howling of a storm, had become an empty sound. And presently the jovial gentleman desisted from his knocking and departed.

Here was a broad hint to hurry what remained to be done, to get forth from this accusing neighbourhood, to plunge into a bath of London multitudes, and to reach, on the other side of day, that haven of safety and apparent innocence—his bed. One visitor had come: at any moment another might follow and be more obstinate. To have done the deed, and yet not to reap the profit, would be too abhorrent a failure. The money, that was now Markheim's concern, and as a means to that, the keys

He glanced over his shoulder at the open door, where the shadow was still lingering and shivering, and with no conscious repugnance of the mind, yet with a tremor of the belly, he drew near the body of his victim. The human character had quite departed. Like a suit half-stuffed with bran, the limbs lay scattered, the trunk doubled, on the floor, and yet the thing repelled him. Although so dingy and inconsiderable to the eye, he feared it might have more significance to the touch. He took the body by the shoulders, and turned it on its back. It was strangely light and supple, and the limbs, as if they had been broken, fell into the oddest postures. The face was robbed of all expression, but it was as pale as wax, and shockingly smeared with blood about one temple. That was, for Markheim, the one displeasing circumstance. It carried him back, upon the instant, to a certain fair-day in a fishers' village: a grey day, a piping wind, a crowd upon the street, the blare of brasses, the booming of drums, the nasal voice of a ballad singer, and a boy going to and fro, buried over head in the crowd and divided between interest and fear, until, coming out upon the chief place of concourse, he beheld a booth and a great screen with pictures, dismally designed, garishly coloured: Brownrigg with her apprentice, the Mannings with their murdered guest, Weare in the death-grip of Thurtell, and a score besides of famous crimes. The thing was as clear as an illusion, he was once again that little boy, he was looking once again, and with the same sense of physical revolt, at these vile pictures, he was still stunned by the thumping of the drums. A bar of that day's music returned upon his memory, and at that, for the first time, a qualm came over him, a breath of nausea, a sudden weakness of the joints, which he must instantly resist and conquer.

He judged it more prudent to confront than to flee from these considerations, looking the more hardily in the dead face, bending his mind to realize the nature and greatness of his crime. So little a while ago that face had moved with every change of sentiment, that pale mouth had spoken, that body had been all on fire with

governable energies, and now, and by his act, that piece of life had been arrested, as the horologist, with interjected finger, arrests the beating of the clock So he reasoned in vain, he could rise to no more remorseful consciousness, the same heart which had shuddered before the painted effigies of crime, looked on its reality unmoved At best, he felt a gleam of pity for one who had been endowed in vain with all those faculties that can make the world a garden of enchantment, one who had never lived and who was now dead But of penitence, no, not a tremor

With that, shaking himself clear of these considerations, he found the keys and advanced towards the open door of the shop Outside, it had begun to rain smartly, and the sound of the shower upon the roof had banished silence Like some dripping cavern, the chambers of the house were haunted by an incessant echoing, which filled the ear and mingled with the ticking of the clocks And, as Markheim approached the door, he seemed to hear, in answer to his own cautious tread, the steps of another foot withdrawing up the stair The shadow still palpitated loosely on the threshold He threw a ton's weight of resolve upon his muscles, and drew back the door

The faint, foggy daylight glimmered dimly on the bare floor and stairs, on the bright suit of armour posted, halbert in hand, upon the landing, and on the dark wood-carvings, and framed pictures that hung against the yellow panels of the wainscot So loud was the beating of the rain through all the house that, in Markheim's ears, it began to be distinguished into many different sounds Footsteps and sighs, the tread of regiments marching in the distance, the chink of money in the counting, and the creaking of doors held stealthily ajar, appeared to mingle with the patter of the drops upon the cupola and the gushing of the water in the pipes The sense that he was not alone grew upon him to the verge of madness On every side he was haunted and begirt by presences He heard them moving in the upper chambers, from the shop, he heard the dead man getting

to his legs, and as he began with a great effort to mount the stairs, feet fled quietly before him and followed stealthily behind If he were but deaf, he thought, how tranquilly he would possess his soul! And then again, and hearkening with ever fresh attention, he blessed himself for that unresting sense which held the outposts and stood a trusty sentinel upon his life His head turned continually on his neck, his eyes, which seemed starting from their orbits, scouted on every side, and on every side were half-rewarded as with the tail of something nameless vanishing The four-and-twenty steps to the first floor were four-and-twenty agonies

On that first story, the doors stood ajar, three of them like three ambushes, shaking his nerves like the throats of cannon He could never again, he felt, be sufficiently immured and fortified from men's observing eyes, he longed to be home, girt in by walls, buried among bedclothes, and invisible to all but God And at that thought he wondered a little, recollecting tales of other murderers and the fear they were said to entertain of heavenly avengers It was not so, at least, with him He feared the laws of nature, lest, in their callous and immutable procedure, they should preserve some damning evidence of his crime He feared tenfold more, with a slavish, superstitious terror, some scission in the continuity of man's experience, some wilful illegality of nature He played a game of skill, depending on the rules, calculating consequence from cause, and what if nature, as the defeated tyrant overthrew the chess-board, should break the mould of their succession? The like had befallen Napoleon (so writers said) when the winter changed the time of its appearance The like might befall Markheim the solid walls might become transparent and reveal his doings like those of bees in a glass hive, the stout planks might yield under his foot like quicksands and detain him in their clutch, aye, and there were soberer accidents that might destroy him if, for instance, the house should fall and imprison him beside the body of his victim, or the house next door should fly on fire, and the firemen invade him from all sides These things he

feared, and, in a sense, these things might be called the hands of God reached forth against sin But about God Himself he was at ease, his act was doubtless exceptional, but so were his excuses, which God knew, it was there, and not among men, that he felt sure of justice

When he had got safe into the drawing-room, and shut the door behind him, he was aware of a respite from alarms The room was quite dismantled, uncarpeted besides, and strewn with packing cases and incongruous furniture, several great pier-glasses, in which he beheld himself at various angles, like an actor on a stage, many pictures, framed and unframed, standing, with their faces to the wall, a fine Sheraton sideboard, a cabinet of marquetry, and a great old bed, with tapestry hangings The windows opened to the floor, but by great good fortune the lower part of the shutters had been closed, and this concealed him from the neighbours Here, then, Markheim drew in a packing case before the cabinet, and began to search among the keys It was a long business, for there were many, and it was irksome, besides, for, after all, there might be nothing in the cabinet, and time was on the wing But the closeness of the occupation sobered him With the tail of his eye he saw the door—even glanced at it from time to time directly, like a besieged commander pleased to verify the good estate of his defences But in truth he was at peace The rain falling in the street sounded natural and pleasant Presently, on the other side, the notes of a piano were wakened to the music of a hymn, and the voices of many children took up the air and words How stately, how comfortable was the melody! How fresh the youthful voices! Markheim gave ear to it smilingly, as he sorted out the keys, and his mind was thronged with answerable ideas and images, church-going children and the pealing of the high organ, children afield, bathers by the brookside, ramblers on the brambly common, kite-flyers in the windy and cloud-navigated sky, and then, at another cadence of the hymn, back again to church, and the somnolence of summer Sundays, and the high genteel voice of the parson (which he smiled a little to

recall) and the painted Jacobean tombs, and the dim lettering of the Ten Commandments in the chancel

And as he sat thus, at once busy and absent, he was startled to his feet A flash of ice, a flash of fire, a bursting gush of blood, went over him, and then he stood transfixed and thrilling A step mounted the stair slowly and steadily, and presently a hand was laid upon the knob, and the lock clicked, and the door opened

Fear held Markheim in a vice What to expect he knew not, whether the dead man walking, or the official ministers of human justice, or some chance witness blindly stumbling in to consign him to the gallows But when a face was thrust into the aperture, glanced round the room, looked at him, nodded and smiled as if in friendly recognition, and then withdrew again, and the door closed behind it, his fear broke loose from his control in a hoarse cry At the sound of this the visitant returned

'Did you call me?' he asked pleasantly, and with that he entered the room and closed the door behind him

Markheim stood and gazed at him with all his eyes Perhaps there was a film upon his sight, but the outlines of the new-comer seemed to change and waver like those of the idols in the wavering candlelight of the shop, and at times he thought he knew him, and at times he thought he bore a likeness to himself, and always, like a lump of living terror, there lay in his bosom the conviction that this thing was not of the earth and not of God

And yet the creature had a strange air of the commonplace, as he stood looking on Markheim with a smile, and when he added 'You are looking for the money, I believe?' it was in the tones of everyday politeness

Markheim made no answer

'I should warn you,' resumed the other, 'that the maid has left her sweetheart earlier than usual and will soon be here If Mr Markheim be found in this house, I need not describe to him the consequences'

'You know me?' cried the murderer

The visitor smiled 'You have long been a favourite

of mine,' he said, 'and I have long observed and often sought to help you.'

'What are you?' cried Markheim: 'the devil?'

'What I may be,' returned the other, 'cannot affect the service I propose to render you.'

'It can,' cried Markheim; 'it does! Be helped by you? No, never; not by you! You do not know me yet; thank God, you do not know me!'

'I know you,' replied the visitant, with a sort of kind severity or rather firmness. 'I know you to the soul.'

'Know me!' cried Markheim. 'Who can do so? My life is but a travesty and slander on myself. I have lived to belie my nature. All men do; all men are better than this disguise that grows about and stifles them. You see each dragged away by life, like one whom bravos have seized and muffled in a cloak. If they had their own control—if you could see their faces, they would be altogether different, they would shine out for heroes and saints! I am worse than most; myself is more overlaid; my excuse is known to me and God. But, had I the time, I could disclose myself.'

'To me?' inquired the visitant.

'To you before all,' returned the murderer. 'I supposed you were intelligent. I thought—since you exist—you would prove a reader of the heart. And yet you would propose to judge me by my acts! Think of it; my acts! I was born and I have lived in a land of giants; giants have dragged me by the wrists since I was born out of my mother—the giants of circumstance. And you would judge me by my acts! But can you not look within? Can you not understand that evil is hateful to me? Can you not see within me the clear writing of conscience, never blurred by any wilful sophistry, although too often disregarded? Can you not read me for a thing that surely must be common as humanity—the unwilling sinner?'

'All this is very feelingly expressed,' was the reply, 'but it regards me not. These points of consistency are beyond my province, and I care not in the least by what compulsion you may have been dragged away, so as you are

but carried in the right direction But time flies, the servant delays, looking in the faces of the crowd and at the pictures on the hoardings, but still she keeps moving nearer, and remember, it is as if the gallows itself was striding towards you through the Christmas streets! Shall I help you, I, who know all? Shall I tell you where to find the money?'

'For what price?' asked Markheim

'I offer you the service for a Christmas gift,' returned the other

Markheim could not refrain from smiling with a kind of bitter triumph 'No,' said he, 'I will take nothing at your hands if I were dying of thirst, and it was your hand that put the pitcher to my lips, I should find the courage to refuse It may be credulous, but I will do nothing to commit myself to evil'

'I have no objection to a deathbed repentance,' observed the visitant

'Because you disbelieve their efficacy!' Markheim cried

'I do not say so,' returned the other, 'but I look on these things from a different side, and when the life is done my interest falls The man has lived to serve me, to spread black looks under colour of religion, or to sow tares in the wheat-field, as you do, in a course of weak compliance with desire Now that he draws so near to his deliverance, he can add but one act of service—to repent, to die smiling, and thus to build up in confidence and hope the more timorous of my surviving followers I am not so hard a master Try me Accept my help Please yourself in life as you have done hitherto, please yourself more amply, spread your elbows at the board, and when the night begins to fall and the curtains to be drawn, I tell you, for your greater comfort, that you will find it even easy to compound your quarrel with your conscience, and to make a truckling peace with God I came but now from such a deathbed, and the room was full of sincere mourners, listening to the man's last words and when I looked into that face, which had been set as a flint against mercy, I found it smiling with hope'

'And do you, then, suppose me such a creature?' asked Markheim 'Do you think I have no more generous aspirations than to sin, and sin, and sin, and, at the last, sneak into heaven? My heart rises at the thought Is this, then, your experience of mankind? or is it because you find me with red hands that you presume such baseness? and is this crime of murder indeed so impious as to dry up the very springs of good?'

'Murder is to me no special category,' replied the other 'All sins are murder, even as all life is war I behold your race, like starving mariners on a raft, plucking crusts out of the hands of famine and feeding on each other's lives I follow sins beyond the moment of their acting, I find in all that the last consequence is death, and to my eyes, the pretty maid who thwarts her mother with such taking graces on a question of a ball, drips no less visibly with human gore than such a murderer as yourself Do I say that I follow sins? I follow virtues also, they differ not by the thickness of a nail, they are both scythes for the reaping angel of Death Evil, for which I live, consists not in action but in character The bad man is dear to me, not the bad act, whose fruits, if we could follow them far enough down the hurtling cataract of the ages, might yet be found more blessed than those of the rarest virtues And it is not because you have killed a dealer, but because you are Markheim, that I offer to forward your escape'

'I will lay my heart open to you,' answered Markheim 'This crime on which you find me is my last On my way to it I have learned many lessons, itself is a lesson, a momentous lesson Hitherto I have been driven with revolt to what I would not, I was a bond-slave to poverty, driven and scourged There are robust virtues that can stand in these temptations, mine was not so I had a thirst of pleasure But to-day, and out of this deed, I pluck both warning and riches—both the power and a fresh resolve to be myself I become in all things a free actor in the world, I begin to see myself all changed, these hands the agents of good, this heart at peace Something comes over me out of the past, something of what

I have dreamed on Sabbath evenings to the sound of the church organ, of what I forecast when I shed tears over noble books, or talked, an innocent child, with my mother There lies my life, I have wandered a few years, but now I see once more my city of destination '

'You are to use this money on the Stock Exchange, I think?' remarked the visitor, 'and there, if I mistake not, you have already lost some thousands?'

'Ah,' said Markheim, 'but this time I have a sure thing '

'This time, again, you will lose,' replied the visitor quietly

'Ah, but I keep back the half!' cried Markheim

'That also you will lose,' said the other

The sweat started upon Markheim's brow 'Well, then, what matter?' he exclaimed 'Say it be lost, say I am plunged again in poverty, shall one part of me, and that the worse, continue until the end to override the better? Evil and good run strong in me, haling me both ways I do not love the one thing, I love all I can conceive great deeds, renunciations, martyrdoms, and though I be fallen to such a crime as murder, pity is no stranger to my thoughts I pity the poor, who knows their trials better than myself? I pity and help them, I prize love, I love honest laughter, there is no good thing nor true thing on earth but I love it from my heart And are my vices only to direct my life, and my virtues to lie without effect, like some passive lumber of the mind? Not so, good, also, is a spring of acts '

But the visitant raised his finger 'For six-and-thirty years that you have been in this world,' said he, 'through many changes of fortune and varieties of humour, I have watched you steadily fall Fifteen years ago you would have started at a theft Three years back you would have blenched at the name of murder Is there any crime, is there any cruelty or meanness, from which you still recoil?—five years from now I shall detect you in the fact! Downward, downward, lies your way, nor can anything but death avail to stop you '

'It is true,' Markheim said huskily, 'I have in some

degree complied with evil But it is so with all the very saints, in the mere exercise of living, grow less dainty, and take on the tone of their surroundings '

'I will propound to you one simple question,' said the other, 'and as you answer, I shall read to you your moral horoscope You have grown in many things more lax, possibly you do right to be so, and at any account, it is the same with all men But granting that, are you in any one particular, however trifling, more difficult to please with your own conduct, or do you go in all things with a looser rein?'

'In any one?' repeated Markheim, with an anguish of consideration 'No,' he added, with despair, 'in none! I have gone down in all '

'Then,' said the visitor, 'content yourself with what you are, for you will never change and the words of your part on this stage are irrevocably written down '

Markheim stood for a long while silent, and indeed it was the visitor who first broke the silence 'That being so,' he said, 'shall I show you the money?'

'And grace?' cried Markheim

'Have you not tried it?' returned the other 'Two or three years ago, did I not see you on the platform of revival meetings, and was not your voice the loudest in the hymn?'

'It is true,' said Markheim, 'and I see clearly what remains for me by way of duty I thank you for these lessons from my soul, my eyes are opened, and I behold myself at last for what I am '

At this moment, the sharp note of the door-bell rang through the house, and the visitant, as though this were some concerted signal for which he had been waiting, changed at once in his demeanour

'The maid!' he cried 'She has returned, as I forewarned you, and there is now before you one more difficult passage Her master, you must say, is ill you must let her in, with an assured but rather serious countenance —no smiles, no overacting, and I promise you success! Once the girl within, and the door closed, the same dexterity that has already rid you of the dealer will relieve

you of this last danger in your path Thenceforward you have the whole evening—the whole night, if needful—to ransack the treasures of the house and to make good your safety This is help that comes to you with the mask of danger Up!' he cried, 'up, friend, your life hangs trembling in the scales up, and act!'

Markheim steadily regarded his counsellor 'If I be condemned to evil acts,' he said, 'there is still one door of freedom open—I can cease from action If my life be an ill thing, I can lay it down Though I be, as you say truly, at the beck of every small temptation, I can yet, by one decisive gesture, place myself beyond the reach of all My love of good is damned to barrenness, it may, and let it be! But I have still my hatred of evil, and from that, to your galling disappointment, you shall see that I can draw both energy and courage '

The features of the visitor began to undergo a wonderful and lovely change they brightened and softened with a tender triumph, and, even as they brightened, faded and dislimned But Markheim did not pause to watch or understand the transformation He opened the door and went downstairs very slowly, thinking to himself His past went soberly before him, he beheld it as it was, ugly and strenuous like a dream, random as chance-medley—a scene of defeat Life, as he thus reviewed it, tempted him no longer, but on the farther side he perceived a quiet haven for his bark He paused in the passage, and looked into the shop, where the candle still burned by the dead body It was strangely silent Thoughts of the dealer swarmed into his mind, as he stood gazing And then the bell once more broke out into impatient clamour

He confronted the maid upon the threshold with something like a smile

'You had better go for the police,' said he 'I have killed your master '

THRAWN JANET

[From *The Merry Men* 1887]

THE Reverend Murdoch Soulis was long minister of the moorland parish of Balweary, in the vale of Dule A severe, bleak-faced old man, dreadful to his hearers, he dwelt in the last years of his life, without relative or servant or any human company, in the small and lonely manse under the Hanging Shaw In spite of the iron composure of his features, his eye was wild, scared, and uncertain, and when he dwelt, in private admonitions, on the future of the impenitent, it seemed as if his eye pierced through the storms of time to the terrors of eternity Many young persons, coming to prepare themselves against the season of the Holy Communion, were dreadfully affected by his talk He had a sermon on 1st Peter, v and 8th, 'The devil as a roaring lion,' on the Sunday after every seventeenth of August, and he was accustomed to surpass himself upon that text both by the appalling nature of the matter and the terror of his bearing in the pulpit The children were frightened into fits, and the old looked more than usually oracular, and were, all that day, full of those hints that Hamlet deprecated The manse itself, where it stood by the water of Dule among some thick trees, with the Shaw overhanging it on the one side, and on the other many cold, moorish hilltops rising towards the sky, had begun, at a very early period of Mr Soulis's ministry, to be avoided in the dusk hours by all who valued themselves upon their prudence, and guidmen sitting at the clachan ale-house shook their heads together at the thought of passing late by that uncanny neighbourhood There was one spot, to be more particular, which was regarded with special awe. The manse stood between the high road and the water of Dule, with a gable to each, its back was towards the kirk-town of Balweary, nearly half a mile away, in front of it, a bare garden, hedged with thorn, occupied the land between the river and the road The house was two stories high, with two large rooms on each It opened not directly on

the garden, but on a causewayed path, or passage, giving on the road on the one hand, and closed on the other by the tall willows and elders that bordered on the stream And it was this strip of causeway that enjoyed among the young parishioners of Balweary so infamous a reputation The minister walked there often after dark, sometimes groaning aloud in the instancy of his unspoken prayers, and when he was from home, and the manse door was locked, the more daring schoolboys ventured, with beating hearts, to 'follow my leader' across that legendary spot

This atmosphere of terror, surrounding, as it did, a man of God of spotless character and orthodoxy, was a common cause of wonder and subject of inquiry among the few strangers who were led by chance or business into that unknown, outlying country But many even of the people of the parish were ignorant of the strange events which had marked the first year of Mr Soulis's ministrations, and among those who were better informed, some were naturally reticent, and others shy of that particular topic Now and again, only, one of the older folk would warm into courage over his third tumbler, and recount the cause of the minister's strange looks and solitary life

Fifty years syne, when Mr Soulis cam' first into Ba'weary, he was still a young man—a callant, the folk said—fu' o' book learnin' and grand at the exposition, but, as was natural in sae young a man, wi' nae leevin' experience in religion The younger sort were greatly taken wi' his gifts and his gab, but auld, concerned, serious men and women were moved even to prayer for the young man, whom they took to be a self-deceiver, and the parish that was like to be sae ill-supplied It was before the days o' the moderates—weary fa' them, but ill things are like guid—they baith come bit by bit, a pickle at a time, and there were folk even then that said the Lord had left the college professors to their ain devices, an' the lads that went to study wi' them wad hae done mair and better sittin' in a peat-bog, like their

forebears of the persecution, wi' a Bible under their oxter and a speerit o' prayer in their heart There was nae doubt, onyway, but that Mr Soulis had been ower lang at the college He was careful and troubled for mony things besides the ae thing needful He had a feck o' books wi' him—mair than had ever been seen before in a' that presbytery, and a sair wark the carrier had wi' them, for they were a' like to have smoored in the Deil's Hag between this and Kilmackerlie They were books o' divinity, to be sure, or so they ca'd them, but the serious were o' opinion there was little service for sae mony, when the hail o' God's Word would gang in the neuk of a plaid Then he wad sit half the day and half the nicht forbye, which was scant decent—writin', nae less, and first, they were feared he wad read his sermons, and syne it proved he was writin' a book himsel', which was surely no fittin' for ane of his years an' sma' experience

Onyway it behoved him to get an auld, decent wife to keep the manse for him an' see to his bit denners, and he was recommended to an auld limmer—Janet M'Clour, they ca'd her—and sae far left to himsel' as to be ower persuaded There was mony advised him to the contrar, for Janet was mair than suspeckit by the best folk in Ba'weary Lang or that, she had had a wean to a dragoon, she hadnae come forrit[1] for maybe thretty year, and bairns had seen her mumblin' to hersel' up on Key's Loan in the gloamin', whilk was an unco time an' place for a God-fearin' woman Howsoever, it was the laird himsel' that had first tauld the minister o' Janet, and in thae days he wad have gane a far gate to pleesure the laird When folk tauld him that Janet was sib to the deil, it was a' superstition by his way of it, an' when they cast up the Bible to him an' the witch of Endor, he wad threep it doun their thrapples that thir days were a' gane by, and the deil was mercifully restrained

Weel, when it got about the clachan that Janet M'Clour was to be servant at the manse, the folk were fair mad wi' her an' him thegether, and some o' the

[1] To come forrit—to offer oneself as a communicant

guidwives had nae better to dae than get round her door cheeks and chairge her wi' a' that was ken't again her, frae the sodger's bairn to John Tamson's twa kye She was nae great speaker, folk usually let her gang her ain gate, an' she let them gang theirs, wi' neither Fair-guid-een nor Fair-guid-day, but when she buckled to, she had a tongue to deave the miller Up she got, an' there wasnae an auld story in Ba'weary but she gart somebody lowp for it that day, they couldnae say ae thing but she could say twa to it, till, at the hinder end, the guidwives up and claught haud of her, and clawed the coats aff her back, and pu'd her doun the clachan to the water o' Dule, to see if she were a witch or no, soum or droun The carline skirled till ye could hear her at the Hangin' Shaw, and she focht like ten, there was mony a guidwife bure the mark of her neist day an' mony a lang day after, and just in the hettest o' the collieshangie, wha suld come up (for his sins) but the new minister

'Women,' said he (and he had a grand voice), 'I charge you in the Lord's name to let her go'

Janet ran to him—she was fair wud wi' terror—an' clang to him, an' prayed him, for Christ's sake, save her frae the cummers, an' they, for their pairt, tauld him a' that was ken't, and maybe mair

'Woman,' says he to Janet, 'is this true?'

'As the Lord sees me,' says she, 'as the Lord made me, no a word o't Forbye the bairn,' says she, 'I've been a decent woman a' my days'

'Will you,' says Mr Soulis, 'in the name of God, and before me, His unworthy minister, renounce the devil and his works?'

Weel, it wad appear that when he askit that, she gave a girn that fairly frichtit them that saw her, an' they could hear her teeth play dirl thegether in her chafts, but there was naething for it but the ae way or the ither, an' Janet lifted up her hand and renounced the deil before them a'

'And now,' says Mr Soulis to the guidwives, 'home with ye, one and all, and pray to God for His forgiveness'

And he gied Janet his arm, though she had little on her but a sark, and took her up the clachan to her ain door like a leddy of the land, an' her scrieghin' and laughin' as was a scandal to be heard

There were mony grave folk lang ower their prayers that nicht, but when the morn cam' there was sic a fear fell upon a' Ba'weary that the bairns hid theirsels, and even the men folk stood and keekit frae their doors For there was Janet comin' doun the clachan—her or her likeness, nane could tell—wi' her neck thrawn, and her heid on ae side, like a body that has been hangit, and a girn on her face like an unstreakit corp By-an'-by they got used wi' it, and even speered at her to ken what was wrang, but frae that day forth she couldnae speak like a Christian woman, but slavered and played click wi' her teeth like a pair o' shears, and frae that day forth the name o' God cam' never on her lips Whiles she would try to say it, but it michtnae be Them that kenned best said least, but they never gied that Thing the name o' Janet M'Clour, for the auld Janet, by their way o't, was in muckle hell that day But the minister was neither to haud nor to bind, he preached about naething but the folk's cruelty that had gi'en her a stroke of the palsy, he skelpt the bairns that meddled her, and he had her up to the manse that same nicht, and dwalled there a' his lane wi' her under the Hangin' Shaw

Weel, time gaed by and the idler sort commenced to think mair lichtly o' that black business The minister was weel thocht o', he was aye late at the writing, folk wad see his can'le doon by the Dule water after twal' at e'en, and he seemed pleased wi' himsel' and upsitten as at first, though a' body could see that he was dwining As for Janet she cam' an' she gaed, if she didnae speak muckle afore, it was reason she should speak less then, she meddled naebody, but she was an eldritch thing to see, an' nane wad hae mistrysted wi' her for Ba'weary glebe

About the end o' July there cam' a spell o' weather, the like o't never was in that country side, it was lown an' het an' heartless, the herds couldnae win up the

Black Hill, the bairns were ower weariet to play, an' yet it was gousty too, wi' claps o' het wund that rumm'led in the glens, and bits o' shouers that slockened naething. We aye thocht it but to thun'er on the morn, but the morn cam', an' the morn's morning, and it was aye the same uncanny weather, sair on folks and bestial. Of a' that were the waur, nane suffered like Mr. Soulis, he could neither sleep nor eat, he tauld his elders, an' when he wasnae writin' at his weary book, he wad be stravaguin' ower a' the countryside like a man possessed, when a' body else was blythe to keep caller ben the house.

Abune Hangin' Shaw, in the bield o' the Black Hill, there's a bit enclosed grund wi' an iron yett, and it seems, in the auld days, that was the kirkyaird o' Ba'-weary, and consecrated by the Papists before the blessed licht shone upon the kingdom. It was a great howff o' Mr. Soulis's, onyway, there he would sit an' consider his sermons, and indeed it's a bieldy bit. Weel, as he cam' ower the wast end o' the Black Hill, ae day, he saw first twa, an syne fower, an' syne seeven corbie craws fleein' round an' round abune the auld kirkyaird. They flew laigh and heavy, an' squawked to ither as they gaed, and it was clear to Mr. Soulis that something had put them frae their ordinar. He wasnae easy fleyed, an' gaed straucht up to the wa's, an' what suld he find there but a man, or the appearance of a man, sittin' in the inside upon a grave. He was of a great stature, an' black as hell, and his e'en were singular to see.[1] Mr. Soulis had heard tell o' black men, mony's the time, but there was something unco about this black man that daunted him. Het as he was, he took a kind o' cauld grue in the marrow o' his banes, but up he spak for a' that, an' says he: 'My friend, are you a stranger in this place?' The black man answered never a word, he got upon his feet, an' begude to hirsle to the wa' on the far side, but he aye lookit at the minister, an' the minister stood an' lookit

[1] It was a common belief in Scotland that the devil appeared as a black man. This appears in several witch trials and, I think, in Law's *Memorials*, that delightful store house of the quaint and grisly.

back, till a' in a meenute the black man was ower the wa' an' rinnin' for the bield o' the trees. Mr Soulis, he hardly kenned why, ran after him, but he was sair forjaskit wi' his walk an' the het, unhalesome weather, and rin as he likit, he got nae mair than a glisk o' the black man amang the birks, till he won doun to the foot o' the hill-side, an' there he saw him ance mair, gaun, hap, step, an' lowp, ower Dule water to the manse.

Mr Soulis wasnae well pleased that this fearsome gangrel suld mak' sae free wi' Ba'weary manse, an' he ran the harder, an', wet shoon, ower the burn, an' up the walk, but the deil a black man was there to see. He stepped out upon the road, but there was naebody there, he gaed a' ower the gairden, but na, nae black man. At the hinder end, and a bit feared as was but natural, he lifted the hasp and into the manse, and there was Janet M'Clour before his een, wi' her thrawn craig, and nane sae pleased to see him. And he aye minded sinsyne, when first he set his een upon her, he had the same cauld and deidly grue.

'Janet,' says he, 'have you seen a black man?'

'A black man?' quo' she. 'Save us a'! Ye're no wise, minister. There's nae black man in a' Ba'weary.'

But she didnae speak plain, ye maun understand, but yam-yammered, like a powney wi' the bit in its moo.

'Weel,' says he, 'Janet, if there was nae black man, I have spoken with the Accuser of the Brethren.'

And he sat down like ane wi' a fever, an' his teeth chittered in his heid.

'Hoots,' says she, 'think shame to yoursel', minister,' an' gied him a drap brandy that she keept aye by her.

Syne Mr Soulis gaed into his study amang a' his books. It's a lang, laigh, mirk chalmer, perishin' cauld in winter, an' no very dry even in the tap o' the simmer, for the manse stands near the burn. Sae doun he sat, and thocht of a' that had come an' gane since he was in Ba'weary, an' his hame, an' the days when he was a bairn an' ran daffin' on the braes, and that black man aye ran in his heid like the owercome of a sang. Aye the mair he thocht, the mair he thocht o' the black man.

He tried the prayer, an' the words wouldnae come to him, an' he tried, they say, to write at his book, but he could nae mak' nae mair o' that There was whiles he thocht the black man was at his oxter, an' the swat stood upon him cauld as well-water, and there was other whiles, when he cam' to himsel' like a christened bairn and minded naething

The upshot was that he gaed to the window an' stood glowrin' at Dule water The trees are unco thick, an' the water lies deep an' black under the manse, an' there was Janet washin' the cla'es wi' her coats kilted She had her back to the minister, an' he, for his pairt, hardly kenned what he was lookin' at Syne she turned round, an' shawed her face, Mr Soulis had the same cauld grue as twice that day afore, an' it was borne in upon him what folk said, that Janet was deid lang syne, an' this was a bogle in her clay-cauld flesh He drew back a pickle and he scanned her narrowly She was tramp-trampin' in the cla'es, croonin' to hersel', and eh! Gude guide us, but it was a fearsome face Whiles she sang louder, but there was nae man born o' woman that could tell the words o' her sang, an' whiles she lookit side-lang doun, but there was naething there for her to look at There gaed a scunner through the flesh upon his banes, and that was Heeven's advertisement But Mr Soulis just blamed himsel', he said, to think sae ill of a puir, auld afflicted wife that hadnae a freend forbye himsel', an' he put up a bit prayer for him and her, an' drank a little caller water—for his heart rose again the meat—an' gaed up to his naked bed in the gloaming

That was a nicht that has never been forgotten in Ba'weary, the nicht o' the seventeenth of August, seventeen hun'er' an twal' It had been het afore, as I hae said, but that nicht it was hetter than ever The sun gaed doun amang unco-lookin' clouds, it fell as mirk as the pit, no a star, no a breath o' wund, ye couldnae see your han' afore your face, and even the auld folk cuist the covers frae their beds and lay pechin' for their breath Wi' a' that he had upon his mind, it was gey and unlikely Mr Soulis wad get muckle sleep He lay an' he tummled,

the gude, caller bed that he got into brunt his very banes, whiles he slept, and whiles he waukened, whiles he heard the time o' nicht, and whiles a tyke yowlin' up the muir, as if somebody was deid, whiles he thocht he heard bogles claverin' in his lug, an' whiles he saw spunkies in the room He behoved, he judged, to be sick, an' sick he was—little he jaloosed the sickness

At the hinder end, he got a clearness in his mind, sat up in his sark on the bedside, and fell thinkin' ance mair o' the black man an' Janet He couldnae weel tell how—maybe it was the cauld to his feet—but it cam' in upon him wi' a spate that there was some connexion between thir twa, an' that either or baith o' them were bogles And just at that moment, in Janet's room, which was neist to his, there cam' a stramp o' feet as if men were wars'lin', an' then a loud bang, an' then a wund gaed reishling round the fower quarters of the house, an' then a' was aince mair as seelent as the grave

Mr Soulis was feared for neither man nor deevil He got his tinder-box, an' lit a can'le, an' made three steps o't ower to Janet's door It was on the hasp, an' he pushed it open, an' keeked bauldly in It was a big room, as big as the minister's ain, an' plenished wi' grand, auld, solid gear, for he had naething else There was a fower-posted bed wi' auld tapestry, and a braw cabinet of aik, that was fu' o' the minister's divinity books, an' put there to be out o' the gate, an' a wheen duds o' Janet's lying here and there about the floor But nae Janet could Mr Soulis see, nor ony sign of a contention In he gaed (an' there's few that wad ha'e followed him) an' lookit a' round, an' listened But there was naethin' to be heard, neither inside the manse nor in a' Ba'weary parish, an' naethin' to be seen but the muckle shadows turnin' round the can'le An' then a' at aince, the minister's heart played dunt an' stood stock-still, an' a cauld wund blew amang the hairs o' his heid Whaten a weary sicht was that for the puir man's een' For there was Janet hangin' frae a nail beside the auld aik cabinet her heid aye lay on her shoother, her een were steeked, the tongue projekit frae her mouth, and her heels were twa feet clear abune the floor

'God forgive us all!' thocht Mr Soulis, 'poor Janet's dead '

He cam' a step nearer to the corp, an' then his heart fair whammled in his inside For by what cantrip it wad ill-beseem a man to judge, she was hingin' frae a single nail an' by a single wursted thread for darnin' hose

It's an awfu' thing to be your lane at nicht wi' siccan prodigies o' darkness, but Mr Soulis was strong in the Lord He turned an' gaed his ways oot o' that room, and lockit the door ahint him, and step by step, doon the stairs, as heavy as leed, and set doon the can'le on the table at the stairfoot He couldnae pray, he couldnae think, he was dreepin' wi' caul' swat, an' naething could he hear but the dunt-dunt-duntin' o' his ain heart He micht maybe have stood there an hour, or maybe twa, he minded sae little, when a' o' a sudden, he heard a laigh, uncanny steer upstairs, a foot gaed to an' fro in the cha'mer whaur the corp was hingin', syne the door was opened, though he minded weel that he had lockit it, an' syne there was a step upon the landin', an' it seemed to him as if the corp was lookin' ower the rail and doun upon him whaur he stood

He took up the can'le again (for he couldnae want the licht), and as saftly as ever he could, gaed straucht out o' the manse an' to the far end o' the causeway It was aye pit-mirk, the flame o' the can'le, when he set it on the grund, brunt steedy and clear as in a room, naething moved, but the Dule water seepin' and sabbin' doun the glen, an' yon unhaly footstep that cam' ploddin' doun the stairs inside the manse He kenned the foot over weel, for it was Janet's, and at ilka step that cam' a wee thing nearer, the cauld got deeper in his vitals He commended his soul to Him that made an' keepit him, 'and O Lord, said he, 'give me strength this night to war against the powers of evil '

By this time the foot was comin' through the passage for the door, he could hear a hand skirt alang the wa', as if the fearsome thing was feelin' for its way The saughs tossed an' maned thegether, a lang sigh cam' ower the hills, the flame o' the can'le was blawn aboot, an' there

stood the corp of Thrawn Janet, wi' her grogram goun an' her black mutch, wi' the heid aye upon the shouther, an' the girn still upon the face o't—leevin', ye wad hae said —deid, as Mr Soulis weel kenned—upon the threshold o' the manse

It's a strange thing that the saul of man should be that thirled into his perishable body, but the minister saw that, an' his heart didnae break

She didnae stand there lang, she began to move again an' cam' slowly towards Mr Soulis whaur he stood under the saughs A' the life o' his body, a' the strength o' his speerit, were glowerin' frae his een It seemed she was gaun to speak, but wanted words, an' made a sign wi' the left hand There cam' a clap o' wund, like a cat's fuff, oot gaed the can'le, the saughs skrieghed like folk, an' Mr Soulis kenned that, live or die, this was the end o't

'Witch, beldame, devil!' he cried, 'I charge you, by the power of God, begone—if you be dead, to the grave—if you be damned, to hell'

An' at that moment the Lord's ain hand out o' the Heevens struck the Horror whaur it stood, the auld, deid, desecrated corp o' the witch-wife, sae lang keepit frae the grave and hirsled round by deils, lowed up like a brunstane spunk and fell in ashes to the grund, the thunder followed, peal on dirling peal, the rairing rain upon the back o' that, and Mr Soulis lowped through the garden hedge, and ran, wi' skelloch upon skelloch, for the clachan

That same mornin', John Christie saw the Black Man pass the Muckle Cairn as it was chappin' six, before eicht, he gaed by the change-house at Knockdow, an' no lang after, Sandy M'Lellan saw him gaun linkin' doun the braes frae Kilmackerlie There's little doubt but it was him that dwalled sae lang in Janet's body, but he was awa' at last and sinsyne the deil has never fashed us in Ba'weary

But it was a sair dispensation for the minister, lang, lang he lay ravin' in his bed, and frae that hour to this, he was the man ye ken the day

PROVIDENCE AND THE GUITAR

[From *The New Arabian Nights* 1882]

CHAPTER I

MONSIEUR LÉON BERTHELINI had a great care of his appearance, and sedulously suited his deportment to the costume of the hour. He affected something Spanish in his air, and something of the bandit, with a flavour of Rembrandt at home. In person he was decidedly small and inclined to be stout, his face was the picture of good humour, his dark eyes, which were very expressive, told of a kind heart, a brisk, merry nature, and the most indefatigable spirits. If he had worn the clothes of the period you would have set him down for a hitherto undiscovered hybrid between the barber, the innkeeper, and the affable dispensing chemist. But in the outrageous bravery of velvet jacket and flapped hat, with trousers that were more accurately described as fleshings, a white handkerchief cavalierly knotted at his neck, a shock of Olympian curls upon his brow, and his feet shod through all weathers in the slenderest of Moliere shoes—you had but to look at him and you knew you were in the presence of a Great Creature. When he wore an overcoat he scorned to pass the sleeves, a single button held it round his shoulders, it was tossed backwards after the manner of a cloak, and carried with the gait and presence of an Almaviva. I am of opinion that M. Berthelini was nearing forty. But he had a boy's heart, gloried in his finery, and walked through life like a child in a perpetual dramatic performance. If he were not Almaviva after all, it was not for lack of making believe. And he enjoyed the artist's compensation. If he were not really Almaviva, he was sometimes just as happy as though he were.

I have seen him, at moments when he has fancied himself alone with his Maker, adopt so gay and chivalrous a bearing, and represent his own part with so much warmth and conscience, that the illusion became catch-

ing, and I believed implicitly in the Great Creature's pose

But, alas! life cannot be entirely conducted on these principles, man cannot live by Almavivery alone, and the Great Creature, having failed upon several theatres, was obliged to step down every evening from his heights, and sing from half a dozen to a dozen comic songs, twang a guitar, keep a country audience in good humour, and preside finally over the mysteries of a tombola

Madame Berthelini, who was art and part with him in these undignified labours, had perhaps a higher position in the scale of beings, and enjoyed a natural dignity of her own But her heart was not any more rightly placed, for that would have been impossible, and she had acquired a little air of melancholy, attractive enough in its way, but not good to see like the wholesome, sky-scraping, boyish spirits of her lord

He, indeed, swam like a kite on a fair wind, high above earthly troubles Detonations of temper were not unfrequent in the zones he travelled, but sulky fogs and tearful depressions were there alike unknown A well-delivered blow upon a table, or a noble attitude, imitated from Melingue or Frederic, relieved his irritation like a vengeance Though the heaven had fallen, if he had played his part with propriety, Berthelini had been content! And the man's atmosphere, if not his example, reacted on his wife, for the couple doted on each other, and although you would have thought they walked in different worlds, yet continued to walk hand in hand

It chanced one day that Monsieur and Madame Berthelini descended with two boxes and a guitar in a fat case at the station of the little town of Castel-le-Gâchis, and the omnibus carried them with their effects to the Hotel of the Black Head This was a dismal, conventual building in a narrow street, capable of standing siege when once the gates were shut, and smelling strangely in the interior of straw and chocolate and old feminine apparel Berthelini paused upon the threshold with a painful premonition In some former state, it

seemed to him, he had visited a hostelry that smelt not otherwise, and been ill received

The landlord, a tragic person in a large felt hat, rose from a business table under the key-rack, and came forward, removing his hat with both hands as he did so

'Sir, I salute you May I inquire what is your charge for artists?' inquired Berthelini, with a courtesy at once splendid and insinuating

'For artists?' said the landlord His countenance fell and the smile of welcome disappeared 'Oh, artists!' he added brutally, 'four francs a day' And he turned his back upon these inconsiderable customers

A commercial traveller is received, he also, upon a reduction—yet is he welcome, yet can he command the fatted calf, but an artist, had he the manners of an Almaviva, were he dressed like Solomon in all his glory, is received like a dog and served like a timid lady travelling alone

Accustomed as he was to the rubs of his profession, Berthelini was unpleasantly affected by the landlord's manner

'Elvira,' said he to his wife, 'mark my words Castel-le-Gâchis is a tragic folly'

'Wait till we see what we take,' replied Elvira

'We shall take nothing,' returned Berthelini, 'we shall feed upon insults I have an eye, Elvira, I have a spirit of divination, and this place is accursed The landlord has been discourteous, the Commissary will be brutal, the audience will be sordid and uproarious, and you will take a cold upon your throat We have been besotted enough to come, the die is cast—it will be a second Sedan'

Sedan was a town hateful to the Berthelinis, not only from patriotism (for they were French, and answered after the flesh to the somewhat homely name of Duval), but because it had been the scene of their most sad reverses In that place they had lain three weeks in pawn for their hotel bill, and had it not been for a surprising stroke of fortune they might have been lying there in pawn until this day To mention the name of

Sédan was for the Berthelinis to dip the brush in earthquake and eclipse Count Almaviva slouched his hat with a gesture expressive of despair, and even Elvira felt as if ill-fortune had been personally invoked

'Let us ask for breakfast,' said she, with a woman's tact

The Commissary of Police of Castel-le-Gâchis was a large red Commissary, pimpled, and subject to a strong cutaneous transpiration I have repeated the name of his office because he was so very much more a Commissary than a man The spirit of his dignity had entered into him He carried his corporation as if it were something official Whenever he insulted a common citizen it seemed to him as if he were adroitly flattering the Government by a side wind, in default of dignity he was brutal from an over-weening sense of duty His office was a den, whence passers-by could hear rude accents laying down, not the law, but the good pleasure of the Commissary

Six several times in the course of the day did M Berthelini hurry thither in quest of the requisite permission for his evening's entertainment, six several times he found the official was abroad Léon Berthelini began to grow quite a familiar figure in the streets of Castel-le-Gâchis, he became a local celebrity, and was pointed out as 'the man who was looking for the Commissary' Idle children attached themselves to his footsteps, and trotted after him back and forward between the hotel and the office Leon might try as he liked, he might roll cigarettes, he might straddle, he might cock his hat at a dozen different jaunty inclinations—the part of Almaviva was, under the circumstances, difficult to play

As he passed the market-place upon the seventh excursion the Commissary was pointed out to him, where he stood, with his waistcoat unbuttoned and his hands behind his back, to superintend the sale and measurement of butter Berthelini threaded his way through the market-stalls and baskets, and accosted the dignitary with a bow which was a triumph of the histrionic art

'I have the honour,' he asked, 'of meeting M le Commissaire?'

The Commissary was affected by the nobility of his address He excelled Leon in the depth if not in the airy grace of his salutation

'The honour,' said he, 'is mine!'

'I am,' continued the strolling-player, 'I am, sir, an artist, and I have permitted myself to interrupt you on an affair of business To-night I give a trifling musical entertainment at the Cafe of the Triumphs of the Plough—permit me to offer you this little programme—and I have come to ask you for the necessary authorization'

At the word 'artist' the Commissary had replaced his hat with the air of a person who, having condescended too far, should suddenly remember the duties of his rank

'Go, go,' said he, 'I am busy—I am measuring butter'

'Heathen Jew!' thought Leon 'Permit me, sir,' he resumed aloud 'I have gone six times already——'

'Put up your bills if you choose,' interrupted the Commissary 'In an hour or so I will examine your papers at the office But now go, I am busy'

'Measuring butter!' thought Berthelini 'Oh, France, and it is for this that we made '93!'

The preparations were soon made, the bills posted, programmes laid on the dinner-table of every hotel in the town, and a stage erected at one end of the Cafe of the Triumphs of the Plough, but when Leon returned to the office, the Commissary was once more abroad

'He is like Madame Benoîton,' thought Leon, 'Fichu Commissaire!'

And just then he met the man face to face

'Here, sir,' said he, 'are my papers Will you be pleased to verify?'

But the Commissary was now intent upon dinner

'No use,' he replied, 'no use, I am busy, I am quite satisfied Give your entertainment'

And he hurried on

'Fichu Commissaire!' thought Léon.

CHAPTER II

THE audience was pretty large, and the proprietor of the café made a good thing of it in beer But the Berthelinis exerted themselves in vain

Leon was radiant in velveteen, he had a rakish way of smoking a cigarette between his songs that was worth money in itself, he underlined his comic points, so that the dullest numskull in Castel-le-Gachis had a notion when to laugh, and he handled his guitar in a manner worthy of himself Indeed his play with that instrument was as good as a whole romantic drama, it was so dashing, so florid, and so cavalier

Elvira, on the other hand, sang her patriotic and romantic songs with more than usual expression, her voice had charm and plangency, and as Leon looked at her, in her low-bodied maroon dress, with her arms bare to the shoulder, and a red flower set provocatively in her corset, he repeated to himself for the many hundredth time that she was one of the loveliest creatures in the world of women

Alas! when she went round with the tambourine, the golden youth of Castel-le-Gâchis turned from her coldly Here and there a single halfpenny was forthcoming, the net result of a collection never exceeded half a franc, and the Maire himself, after seven different applications, had contributed exactly twopence A certain chill began to settle upon the artists themselves, it seemed as if they were singing to slugs, Apollo himself might have lost heart with such an audience The Berthelinis struggled against the impression, they put their back into their work, they sang loud and louder, the guitar twanged like a living thing, and at last Leon arose in his might, and burst with inimitable conviction into his great song, 'Y a des honnêtes gens partout!' Never had he given more proof of his artistic mastery, it was his intimate, indefeasible conviction that Castel-le-Gâchis formed an exception to the law he was now lyrically proclaiming, and was peopled exclusively by thieves and bullies, and yet, as I say, he

flung it down like a challenge, he trolled it forth like an article of faith, and his face so beamed the while that you would have thought he must make converts of the benches

He was at the top of his register, with his head thrown back and his mouth open, when the door was thrown violently open, and a pair of new-comers marched noisily into the cafe It was the Commissary, followed by the Garde Champetre

The undaunted Berthelini still continued to proclaim, 'Y a des honnêtes gens partout!' But now the sentiment produced an audible titter among the audience Berthelini wondered why, he did not know the antecedents of the Garde Champêtre, he had never heard of a little story about postage stamps But the public knew all about the postage stamps and enjoyed the coincidence hugely

The Commissary planted himself upon a vacant chair with somewhat the air of Cromwell visiting the Rump, and spoke in occasional whispers to the Garde Champetre, who remained respectfully standing at his back The eyes of both were directed upon Berthelini, who persisted in his statement

'Y a des honnetes gens partout,' he was just chanting for the twentieth time, when up got the Commissary upon his feet and waved brutally to the singer with his cane

'Is it me you want?' inquired Leon, stopping in his song

'It is you,' replied the potentate

'Fichu Commissaire!' thought Leon, and he descended from the stage and made his way to the functionary

'How does it happen, sir,' said the Commissary, swelling in person, 'that I find you mountebanking in a public cafe without my permission?'

'Without?' cried the indignant Leon 'Permit me to remind you——'

'Come, come, sir!' said the Commissary, 'I desire no explanations'

'I care nothing about what you desire,' returned the singer 'I choose to give them, and I will not be gagged I am an artist, sir, a distinction that you cannot comprehend I received your permission, and stand here upon the strength of it, interfere with me who dare'

'You have not got my signature, I tell you,' cried the Commissary 'Show me my signature! Where is my signature?'

That was just the question, where was his signature? Leon recognized that he was in a hole, but his spirit rose with the occasion, and he blustered nobly, tossing back his curls The Commissary played up to him in the character of tyrant, and as the one leaned farther forward, the other leaned farther back—majesty confronting fury The audience had transferred their attention to this new performance, and listened with that silent gravity common to all Frenchmen in the neighbourhood of the Police Elvira had sat down, she was used to these distractions, and it was rather melancholy than fear that now oppressed her

'Another word,' cried the Commissary, 'and I arrest you'

'Arrest me?' shouted Léon 'I defy you!'

'I am the Commissary of Police,' said the official

Leon commanded his feelings, and replied, with great delicacy of innuendo—

'So it would appear'

The point was too refined for Castel-le-Gâchis, it did not raise a smile, and as for the Commissary, he simply bade the singer follow him to his office, and directed his proud footsteps towards the door There was nothing for it but to obey Léon did so with a proper pantomime of indifference, but it was a leek to eat, and there was no denying it

The Maire had slipped out and was already waiting at the Commissary's door Now the Maire, in France, is the refuge of the oppressed He stands between his people and the boisterous rigours of the police He can sometimes understand what is said to him, he is not always puffed up beyond measure by his dignity.

'Tis a thing worth the knowledge of travellers When all seems over, and a man has made up his mind to injustice, he has still, like the heroes of romance, a little bugle at his belt whereon to blow, and the Maire, a comfortable *deus ex machina*, may still descend to deliver him from the minions of the law The Maire of Castel-le-Gâchis, although inaccessible to the charms of music as retailed by the Berthelinis, had no hesitation whatever as to the rights of the matter He instantly fell foul of the Commissary in very high terms, and the Commissary, pricked by this humiliation, accepted battle on the point of fact The argument lasted some little while with varying success, until at length victory inclined so plainly to the Commissary's side that the Maire was fain to re-assert himself by an exercise of authority He had been out-argued, but he was still the Maire And so, turning from his interlocutor, he briefly but kindly recommended Leon to get back instanter to his concert

'It is already growing late,' he added

Leon did not wait to be told twice He returned to the Cafe of the Triumphs of the Plough with all expedition Alas! the audience had melted away during his absence, Elvira was sitting in a very disconsolate attitude on the guitar-box, she had watched the company dispersing by twos and threes, and the prolonged spectacle had somewhat overwhelmed her spirits Each man, she reflected, retired with a certain proportion of her earnings in his pocket, and she saw to-night's board and to-morrow's railway expenses, and finally even to-morrow's dinner, walk one after another out of the cafe door and disappear into the night

'What was it?' she asked languidly

But Leon did not answer He was looking round him on the scene of defeat Scarce a score of listeners remained, and these of the least promising sort The minute hand of the clock was already climbing upward towards eleven

'It's a lost battle,' said he, and then taking up the money-box, he turned it out 'Three francs seventy-

five!' he cried, 'as against four of board and six of rail way fares, and no time for the tombola! Elvira, this is Waterloo' And he sat down and passed both hands desperately among his curls 'O Fichu Commissaire!' he cried, 'Fichu Commissaire!'

'Let us get the things together and be off,' returned Elvira 'We might try another song, but there is not six halfpence in the room'

'Six halfpence?' cried Leon, 'six hundred thousand devils! There is not a human creature in the town—nothing but pigs and dogs and commissaries! Pray heaven, we get safe to bed'

'Don't imagine things!' exclaimed Elvira, with a shudder

And with that they set to work on their preparations The tobacco-jar, the cigarette-holder, the three papers of shirt-studs, which were to have been the prizes of the tombola had the tombola come off, were made into a bundle with the music, the guitar was stowed into the fat guitar-case, and Elvira having thrown a thin shawl about her neck and shoulders, the pair issued from the cafe and set off for the Black Head

As they crossed the market-place the church bell rang out eleven It was a dark, mild night, and there was no one in the streets

'It is all very fine,' said Leon 'but I have a pre sentiment The night is not yet done'

CHAPTER III

The 'Black Head' presented not a single chink of light upon the street, and the carriage gate was closed

'This is unprecedented,' observed Leon 'An inn closed by five minutes after eleven! And there were several commercial travellers in the cafe up to a late hour Elvira, my heart misgives me Let us ring the bell'

The bell had a potent note, and being swung under the arch it filled the house from top to bottom with surly, clanging reverberations The sound accentuated

the conventual appearance of the building, a wintry sentiment, a thought of prayer and mortification, took hold upon Elvira's mind, and, as for Leon, he seemed to be reading the stage directions for a lugubrious fifth act

'This is your fault,' said Elvira 'this is what comes of fancying things!'

Again Leon pulled the bell-rope, again the solemn tocsin awoke the echoes of the inn, and ere they had died away, a light glimmered in the carriage entrance, and a powerful voice was heard upraised and tremulous with wrath

'What's all this?' cried the tragic host through the spars of the gate 'Hard upon twelve, and you come clamouring like Prussians at the door of a respectable hotel? Oh!' he cried, 'I know you now! Common singers! People in trouble with the police! And you present yourselves at midnight like lords and ladies? Be off with you!'

'You will permit me to remind you,' replied Leon, in thrilling tones, 'that I am a guest in your house, that I am properly inscribed, and that I have deposited baggage to the value of four hundred francs'

'You cannot get in at this hour,' returned the man 'This is no thieves' tavern, for mohocks and night rakes and organ-grinders'

'Brute!' cried Elvira, for the organ-grinders touched her home

'Then I demand my baggage,' said Leon, with unabated dignity

'I know nothing of your baggage,' replied the landlord

'You detain my baggage? You dare to detain my baggage?' cried the singer

'Who are you?' returned the landlord 'It is dark—I cannot recognize you'

'Very well, then—you detain my baggage,' concluded Leon 'You shall smart for this I will weary out your life with persecutions, I will drag you from court to court, if there is justice to be had in France, it shall be rendered between you and me And I will make you a

byword—I will put you in a song—a scurrilous song—an indecent song—a popular song—which the boys shall sing to you in the street, and come and howl through these spars at midnight!'

He had gone on raising his voice at every phrase, for all the while the landlord was very placidly retiring, and now, when the last glimmer of light had vanished from the arch, and the last footstep died away in the interior, Leon turned to his wife with a heroic countenance

'Elvira,' said he, 'I have now a duty in life I shall destroy that man as Eugène Sue destroyed the concierge Let us come at once to the Gendarmerie and begin our vengeance'

He picked up the guitar-case, which had been propped against the wall, and they set forth through the silent and ill-lighted town with burning hearts

The Gendarmerie was concealed beside the telegraph office at the bottom of a vast court, which was partly laid out in gardens, and here all the shepherds of the public lay locked in grateful sleep It took a deal of knocking to waken one, and he, when he came at last to the door, could find no other remark but that 'it was none of his business' Leon reasoned with him, threatened him, besought him, 'here,' he said, 'was Madame Berthelini in evening dress—a delicate woman—in an interesting condition'—the last was thrown in, I fancy, for effect, and to all this the man-at-arms made the same answer

'It is none of my business,' said he

'Very well,' said Leon, 'then we shall go to the Commissary' Thither they went, the office was closed and dark, but the house was close by, and Leon was soon swinging the bell like a madman The Commissary's wife appeared at a window She was a thread-paper creature, and informed them that the Commissary had not yet come home

'Is he at the Maire's?' demanded Leon

She thought that was not unlikely

'Where is the Maire's house?' he asked

And she gave him some rather vague information on that point

'Stay you here, Elvira,' said Leon, 'lest I should miss him by the way If, when I return, I find you here no longer, I shall follow at once to the Black Head '

And he set out to find the Maire's It took him some ten minutes wandering among blind lanes, and when he arrived it was already half an hour past midnight. A long white garden wall overhung by some thick chestnuts, a door with a letter-box, and an iron bell-pull, that was all that could be seen of the Maire's domicile Leon took the bell-pull in both hands, and danced furiously upon the side-walk The bell itself was just upon the other side of the wall, it responded to his activity, and scattered an alarming clangour far and wide into the night

A window was thrown open in a house across the street, and a voice inquired the cause of this untimely uproar

'I wish the Maire,' said Leon

'He has been in bed this hour,' returned the voice

'He must get up again,' retorted Leon, and he was for tackling the bell-pull once more

'You will never make him hear,' responded the voice 'The garden is of great extent, the house is at the farther end, and both the Maire and his housekeeper are deaf '

'Aha!' said Leon, pausing 'The Maire is deaf, is he? That explains ' And he thought of the evening's concert with a momentary feeling of relief 'Ah!' he continued, 'and so the Maire is deaf, and the garden vast, and the house at the far end?'

'And you might ring all night,' added the voice, 'and be none the better for it You would only keep me awake '

'Thank you, neighbour,' replied the singer 'You shall sleep '

And he made off again at his best pace for the Commissary's Elvira was still walking to and fro before the door

'He has not come?' asked Leon.

'Not he,' she replied.

'Good,' returned Leon. 'I am sure our man's inside. Let me see the guitar-case. I shall lay this siege in form, Elvira; I am angry, I am indignant, I am truculently inclined; but I thank my Maker I have still a sense of fun. The unjust judge shall be importuned in a serenade, Elvira. Set him up—and set him up.'

He had the case opened by this time, struck a few chords, and fell into an attitude which was irresistibly Spanish.

'Now,' he continued, 'feel your voice. Are you ready? Follow me!'

The guitar twanged, and the two voices upraised, in harmony and with a startling loudness, the chorus of a song of old Beranger's:

> Commissaire! Commissaire!
> Colin bat sa ménagere.

The stones of Castel-le-Gâchis thrilled at this audacious innovation. Hitherto had the night been sacred to repose and night-caps; and now what was this? Window after window was opened; matches scratched, and candles began to flicker; swollen sleepy faces peered forth into the starlight. There were the two figures before the Commissary's house, each bolt upright, with head thrown back and eyes interrogating the starry heavens; the guitar wailed, shouted, and reverberated like half an orchestra; and the voices, with a crisp and spirited delivery, hurled the appropriate burden at the Commissary's window. All the echoes repeated the functionary's name. It was more like an entr'acte in a farce of Moliere's than a passage of real life in Castel-le-Gâchis.

The Commissary, if he was not the first, was not the last of the neighbours to yield to the influence of music, and furiously throw open the window of his bedroom. He was beside himself with rage. He leaned far over the window-sill, raving and gesticulating; the tassel of his white night-cap danced like a thing of life: he opened

his mouth to dimensions hitherto unprecedented, and yet his voice, instead of escaping from it in a roar, came forth shrill and choked and tottering A little more serenading, and it was clear he would be better acquainted with the apoplexy

I scorn to reproduce his language, he touched upon too many serious topics by the way for a quiet story-teller Although he was known for a man who was prompt with his tongue, and had a power of strong expression at command, he excelled himself so remarkably this night that one maiden lady, who had got out of bed like the rest to hear the serenade, was obliged to shut her window at the second clause Even what she had heard disquieted her conscience, and next day she said she scarcely reckoned as a maiden lady any longer

Leon tried to explain his predicament, but he received nothing but threats of arrest by way of answer

'If I come down to you!' cried the Commissary

'Aye,' said Leon, 'do!'

'I will not!' cried the Commissary

'You dare not!' answered Leon

At that the Commissary closed his window

'All is over,' said the singer 'The serenade was perhaps ill-judged These boors have no sense of humour '

'Let us get away from here,' said Elvira with a shiver 'All these people looking—it is so rude and so brutal ' And then giving way once more to passion—'Brutes!' she cried aloud to the candle-lit spectators—'brutes! brutes! brutes!'

'Sauve qui peut,' said Léon 'You have done it now!'

And taking the guitar in one hand and the case in the other, he led the way with something too precipitate to be merely called precipitation from the scene of this absurd adventure

CHAPTER IV

To the west of Castel-le-Gâchis four rows of venerable lime-trees formed, in this starry night, a twilit avenue with two side aisles of pitch darkness Here and there stone benches were disposed between the trunks There

was not a breath of wind, a heavy atmosphere of perfume hung about the alleys, and every leaf stood stock still upon its twig. Hither, after vainly knocking at an inn or two, the Berthelinis came at length to pass the night. After an amiable contention, Leon insisted on giving his coat to Elvira, and they sat down together on the first bench in silence. Leon made a cigarette, which he smoked to an end, looking up into the trees, and, beyond them, at the constellations, of which he tried vainly to recall the names. The silence was broken by the church bell, it rang the four quarters on a light and tinkling measure, then followed a single deep stroke that died slowly away with a thrill, and stillness resumed its empire.

'One,' said Leon. 'Four hours till daylight. It is warm, it is starry, I have matches and tobacco. Do not let us exaggerate, Elvira—the experience is positively charming. I feel a glow within me, I am born again. This is the poetry of life. Think of Cooper's novels, my dear.'

'Leon,' she said fiercely, 'how can you talk such wicked, infamous nonsense? To pass all night out of doors—it is like a nightmare! We shall die.'

'You suffer yourself to be led away,' he replied soothingly. 'It is not unpleasant here, only you brood. Come, now, let us repeat a scene. Shall we try Alceste and Celimene? No? Or a passage from the *Two Orphans*? Come, now, it will occupy your mind, I will play up to you as I never have played before, I feel art moving in my bones.'

'Hold your tongue,' she cried, 'or you will drive me mad! Will nothing solemnize you—not even this hideous situation?'

'Oh, hideous!' objected Léon. 'Hideous is not the word. Why, where would you be? "Dites, la jeune belle, où voulez-vous aller?"' he carolled. 'Well, now,' he went on, opening the guitar-case, 'there's another idea for you—sing. Sing "Dites, la jeune belle"! It will compose your spirits, Elvira, I am sure.'

And without waiting an answer he began to strum

the symphony The first chords awoke a young man who was lying asleep upon a neighbouring bench

'Hullo!' cried the young man, 'who are you?'

'Under which king, Bezonian?' declaimed the artist 'Speak or die!'

Or if it was not exactly that, it was something to much the same purpose from a French tragedy

The young man drew near in the twilight He was a tall powerful, gentlemanly fellow, with a somewhat puffy face, dressed in a grey tweed suit, with a deer-stalker hat of the same material, and as he now came forward he carried a knapsack slung upon one arm

'Are you camping out here too?' he asked with a strong English accent 'I'm not sorry for company'

Léon explained their misadventure, and the other told them that he was a Cambridge undergraduate on a walking tour, that he had run short of money, could no longer pay for his night's lodging, had already been camping out for two nights, and feared he should require to continue the same manœuvre for at least two nights more

'Luckily, it's jolly weather,' he concluded

'You hear that, Elvira,' said Leon 'Madame Berthelini,' he went on, 'is ridiculously affected by this trifling occurrence For my part, I find it romantic and far from uncomfortable, or at least,' he added, shifting on the stone bench, 'not quite so uncomfortable as might have been expected But pray be seated'

'Yes,' returned the undergraduate, sitting down, 'it's rather nice than otherwise when once you're used to it, only it's devilish difficult to get washed I like the fresh air and these stars and things'

'Aha!' said Leon, 'Monsieur is an artist'

'An artist?' returned the other, with a blank stare 'Not if I know it!'

'Pardon me,' said the actor 'What you said this moment about the orbs of heaven——'

'Oh, nonsense!' cried the Englishman 'A fellow may admire the stars and be anything he likes'

'You have an artist's nature, however, Mr —— I beg

your pardon, may I, without indiscretion, inquire your name?' asked Leon

'My name is Stubbs,' replied the Englishman

'I thank you,' returned Leon 'Mine is Berthelini—Leon Berthelini, ex-artist of the theatres of Montrouge, Belleville, and Montmartre Humble as you see me, I have created with applause more than one important rôle The Press were unanimous in praise of my Howling Devil of the Mountains, in the piece of the same name Madame, whom I now present to you, is herself an artist, and I must not omit to state, a better artist than her husband She also is a creator, she created nearly twenty successful songs at one of the principal Parisian music halls But, to continue, I was saying you had an artist's nature, Monsieur Stubbs, and you must permit me to be a judge in such a question I trust you will not falsify your instincts, let me beseech you to follow the career of an artist'

'Thank you,' returned Stubbs, with a chuckle 'I'm going to be a banker'

'No,' said Leon, 'do not say so Not that A man with such a nature as yours should not derogate so far What are a few privations here and there, so long as you are working for a high and noble goal?'

'This fellow's mad,' thought Stubbs, 'but the woman's rather pretty, and he's not bad fun himself, if you come to that' What he said was different 'I thought you said you were an actor?'

'I certainly did so,' replied Léon 'I am one, or, alas! I was'

'And so you want me to be an actor, do you?' continued the undergraduate 'Why, man, I could never so much as learn the stuff, my memory's like a sieve, and as for acting, I've no more idea than a cat'

'The stage is not the only course,' said Léon 'Be a sculptor, be a dancer, be a poet or a novelist, follow your heart, in short, and do some thorough work before you die'

'And do you call all these things *art*?' inquired Stubbs

'Why, certainly!' returned Leon 'Are they not all branches?'

'Oh! I didn't know,' replied the Englishman. 'I thought an artist meant a fellow who painted.'

The singer stared at him in some surprise.

'It is the difference of language,' he said at last. 'This Tower of Babel, when shall we have paid for it? If I could speak English you would follow me more readily.'

'Between you and me, I don't believe I should,' replied the other. 'You seem to have thought a devil of a lot about this business. For my part, I admire the stars, and like to have them shining—it's so cheery—but hang me if I had an idea it had anything to do with art! It's not in my line, you see. I'm not intellectual, I have no end of trouble to scrape through my exams, I can tell you! But I'm not a bad sort at bottom,' he added, seeing his interlocutor looked distressed even in the dim star-shine, 'and I rather like the play, and music, and guitars, and things.'

Leon had a perception that the understanding was incomplete. He changed the subject.

'And so you travel on foot?' he continued. 'How romantic! How courageous! And how are you pleased with my land? How does the scenery affect you among these wild hills of ours?'

'Well, the fact is,' began Stubbs—he was about to say that he didn't care for scenery, which was not at all true, being, on the contrary, only an athletic undergraduate pretension, but he had begun to suspect that Berthelini liked a different sort of meat, and substituted something else—'The fact is, I think it jolly. They told me it was no good up here, even the guide-book said so, but I don't know what they meant. I think it is deuced pretty—upon my word, I do.'

At this moment, in the most unexpected manner, Elvira burst into tears.

'My voice!' she cried. 'Leon, if I stay here longer I shall lose my voice!'

'You shall not stay another moment,' cried the actor. 'If I have to beat in a door, if I have to burn the town, I shall find you shelter.'

With that he replaced the guitar, and comforting her with some caresses, drew her arm through his

'Monsieur Stubbs,' said he, taking off his hat, 'the reception I offer you is rather problematical, but let me beseech you to give us the pleasure of your society You are a little embarrassed for the moment, you must, indeed, permit me to advance what may be necessary I ask it as a favour, we must not part so soon after having met so strangely'

'Oh, come, you know,' said Stubbs, 'I can't let a fellow like you——' And there he paused, feeling somehow or other on a wrong tack

'I do not wish to employ menaces,' continued Leon with a smile, 'but if you refuse, indeed I shall not take it kindly'

'I don't quite see my way out of it,' thought the undergraduate, and then, after a pause, he said aloud and ungraciously enough, 'All right I—I'm very much obliged, of course' And he proceeded to follow them, thinking in his heart, 'But it's bad form, all the same, to force an obligation on a fellow'

CHAPTER V

Léon strode ahead as if he knew exactly where he was going, the sobs of Madame were still faintly audible, and no one uttered a word A dog barked furiously in a courtyard as they went by, then the church clock struck two, and many domestic clocks followed or preceded it in piping tones And just then Berthelini spied a light It burned in a small house on the outskirts of the town, and thither the party now directed their steps

'It is always a chance,' said Leon

The house in question stood back from the street behind an open space, part garden, part turnip-field, and several outhouses stood forward from either wing at right angles to the front One of these had recently undergone some change An enormous window, looking towards the north, had been effected in the wall and roof, and Léon began to hope it was a studio

If it's only a painter,' he said with a chuckle, 'ten to one we get as good a welcome as we want'

'I thought painters were principally poor,' said Stubbs

'Ah!' cried Leon, 'you do not know the world as I do The poorer the better for us!'

And the trio advanced into the turnip-field

The light was in the ground floor, as one window was brightly illuminated and two others more faintly, it might be supposed that there was a single lamp in one corner of a large apartment, and a certain tremulousness and temporary dwindling showed that a live fire contributed to the effect The sound of a voice now became audible, and the trespassers paused to listen It was pitched in a high, angry key, but had still a good, full, and masculine note in it The utterance was voluble, too voluble even to be quite distinct, a stream of words, rising and falling, with ever and again a phrase thrown out by itself, as if the speaker reckoned on its virtue

Suddenly another voice joined in This time it was a woman's, and if the man were angry, the woman was incensed to the degree of fury There was that absolutely blank composure known to suffering males, that colourless unnatural speech which shows a spirit accurately balanced between homicide and hysterics, the tone in which the best of women sometimes utter words worse than death to those most dear to them If Abstract Bones-and-Sepulchre were to be endowed with the gift of speech, thus, and not otherwise, would it discourse Léon was a brave man, and I fear he was somewhat sceptically given (he had been educated in a Papistical country), but the habit of childhood prevailed, and he crossed himself devoutly He had met several women in his career It was obvious that his instinct had not deceived him, for the male voice broke forth instantly in a towering passion

The undergraduate, who had not understood the significance of the woman's contribution, pricked up his ears at the change upon the man

'There's going to be a free fight,' he opined

There was another retort from the woman, still calm but a little higher

'Hysterics?' asked Leon of his wife 'Is that the stage direction?'

'How should I know?' returned Elvira, somewhat tartly

'Oh, woman, woman!' said Léon, beginning to open the guitar-case 'It is one of the burdens of my life, Monsieur Stubbs, they support each other, they always pretend there is no system, they say it's nature Even Madame Berthelini, who is a dramatic artist!'

'You are heartless, Leon,' said Elvira, 'that woman is in trouble'

'And the man, my angel?' inquired Berthelini, passing the ribbon of his guitar 'And the man, *m'amour*?'

'He is a man,' she answered

'You hear that?' said Leon to Stubbs 'It is not too late for you Mark the intonation And now,' he continued, 'what are we to give them?'

'Are you going to sing?' asked Stubbs

'I am a troubadour,' replied Leon 'I claim a welcome by and for my art If I were a banker could I do as much?'

'Well, you wouldn't need, you know,' answered the undergraduate

'Egad,' said Leon, 'but that's true Elvira, that is true'

'Of course it is,' she replied 'Did you not know it?'

'My dear,' answered Leon impressively 'I know nothing but what is agreeable Even my knowledge of life is a work of art superiorly composed But what are we to give them? It should be something appropriate'

Visions of 'Let dogs delight' passed through the undergraduate's mind, but it occurred to him that the poetry was English and that he did not know the air Hence he contributed no suggestion

'Something about our houselessness,' said Elvira

'I have it,' cried Leon And he broke forth into a song of Pierre Dupont's

> Savez-vous où gîte
> Mai, ce joli mois?

Elvira joined in, so did Stubbs, with a good ear and voice, but an imperfect acquaintance with the music Leon and the guitar were equal to the situation The actor dispensed his throat-notes with prodigality and enthusiasm, and, as he looked up to heaven in his heroic way, tossing the black ringlets, it seemed to him that the very stars contributed a dumb applause to his efforts, and the universe lent him its silence for a chorus That is one of the best features of the heavenly bodies, that they belong to everybody in particular, and a man like Leon, a chronic Endymion who managed to get along without encouragement, is always the world's centre for himself

He alone—and it is to be noted, he was the worst singer of the three—took the music seriously to heart, and judged the serenade from a high artistic point of view Elvira, on the other hand, was preoccupied about their reception, and, as for Stubbs, he considered the whole affair in the light of a broad joke

'Know you the lair of May, the lovely month?' went the three voices in the turnip-field

The inhabitants were plainly fluttered, the light moved to and fro, strengthening in one window, paling in another, and then the door was thrown open, and a man in a blouse appeared on the threshold carrying a lamp He was a powerful young fellow, with bewildered hair and beard, wearing his neck open, his blouse was stained with oil-colours in a harlequinesque disorder, and there was something rural in the droop and bagginess of his belted trousers

From immediately behind him, and indeed over his shoulder, a woman's face looked out into the darkness, it was pale and a little weary, although still young, it wore a dwindling, disappearing prettiness, soon to be quite gone, and the expression was both gentle and sour, and reminded one faintly of the taste of certain drugs For all that, it was not a face to dislike, when the prettiness had vanished, it seemed as if a certain pale beauty might step in to take its place, and as both the mildness and the asperity were characters of youth, it might be

hoped that, with years, both would merge into a constant, brave, and not unkindly temper

'What is all this?' cried the man

CHAPTER VI

LEON had his hat in his hand at once He came forward with his customary grace, it was a moment which would have earned him a round of cheering on the stage Elvira and Stubbs advanced behind him, like a couple of Admetus's sheep following the god Apollo

'Sir,' said Leon, 'the hour is unpardonably late, and our little serenade has the air of an impertinence Believe me, sir, it is an appeal Monsieur is an artist, I perceive We are here three artists benighted and without shelter, one a woman—a delicate woman—in evening dress—in an interesting situation This will not fail to touch the woman's heart of Madame, whom I perceive indistinctly behind Monsieur her husband, and whose face speaks eloquently of a well-regulated mind Ah! Monsieur, Madame—one generous movement, and you make three people happy! Two or three hours beside your fire—I ask it of Monsieur in the name of Art—I ask it of Madame by the sanctity of womanhood'

The two, as by a tacit consent, drew back from the door

'Come in,' said the man

'Entrez, Madame,' said the woman

The door opened directly upon the kitchen of the house, which was to all appearance the only sitting-room The furniture was both plain and scanty, but there were one or two landscapes on the wall handsomely framed, as if they had already visited the committee rooms of an exhibition and been thence extruded Leon walked up to the pictures and represented the part of a connoisseur before each in turn, with his usual dramatic insight and force The master of the house, as if irresistibly attracted, followed him from canvas to canvas with the lamp Elvira was led directly to the fire, where she proceeded to warm herself, while Stubbs stood in

the middle of the floor and followed the proceedings of Leon with mild astonishment in his eyes

'You should see them by daylight,' said the artist

'I promise myself that pleasure,' said Leon 'You possess, sir, if you will permit me an observation, the art of composition to a T'

'You are very good,' returned the other 'But should you not draw nearer to the fire?'

'With all my heart,' said Leon

And the whole party was soon gathered at the table over a hasty and not an elegant cold supper, washed down with the least of small wines Nobody liked the meal, but nobody complained, they put a good face upon it, one and all, and made a great clattering of knives and forks To see Leon eating a single cold sausage was to see a triumph, by the time he had done he had got through as much pantomime as would have sufficed for a baron of beef, and he had the relaxed expression of the over-eaten

As Elvira had naturally taken a place by the side of Leon, and Stubbs as naturally, although I believe unconsciously, by the side of Elvira, the host and hostess were left together Yet it was to be noted that they never addressed a word to each other, nor so much as suffered their eyes to meet The interrupted skirmish still survived in ill-feeling, and the instant the guests departed it would break forth again as bitterly as ever The talk wandered from this to that subject—for with one accord the party had declared it was too late to go to bed, but those two never relaxed towards each other, Goneril and Regan in a sisterly tiff were not more bent on enmity

It chanced that Elvira was so much tired by all the little excitements of the night, that for once she laid aside her company manners, which were both easy and correct, and in the most natural manner in the world leaned her head on Léon's shoulder At the same time, fatigue suggesting tenderness, she locked the fingers of her right hand into those of her husband's left, and, half closing her eyes, dozed off into a golden borderland between sleep and waking But all the time she was

aware of what was passing, and saw the painter's wife studying her with looks between contempt and envy

It occurred to Leon that his constitution demanded the use of some tobacco, and he undid his fingers from Elvira's in order to roll a cigarette It was gently done, and he took care that his indulgence should in no other way disturb his wife's position But it seemed to catch the eye of the painter's wife with a special significancy She looked straight before her for an instant, and then, with a swift and stealthy movement, took hold of her husband's hand below the table Alas! she might have spared herself the dexterity For the poor fellow was so overcome by this caress that he stopped with his mouth open in the middle of a word, and by the expression of his face plainly declared to all the company that his thoughts had been diverted into softer channels

If it had not been rather amiable, it would have been absurdly droll His wife at once withdrew her touch, but it was plain she had to exert some force Thereupon the young man coloured and looked for a moment beautiful

Leon and Elvira both observed the by-play, and a shock passed from one to the other, for they were inveterate match-makers, especially between those who were already married

'I beg your pardon,' said Léon suddenly 'I see no use in pretending Before we came in here we heard sounds indicating—if I may so express myself—an imperfect harmony'

'Sir——' began the man

But the woman was beforehand

'It is quite true,' she said 'I see no cause to be ashamed If my husband is mad I shall at least do my utmost to prevent the consequences Picture to yourself, Monsieur and Madame,' she went on, for she passed Stubbs over, 'that this wretched person—a dauber, an incompetent, not fit to be a sign-painter—receives this morning an admirable offer from an uncle—an uncle of my own, my mother's brother, and tenderly beloved—of a clerkship with nearly a hundred

and fifty pounds a year, and that he—picture to yourself!—he refuses it! Why? For the sake of Art, he says. Look at his art, I say—look at it! Is it fit to be seen? Ask him—is it fit to be sold? And it is for this, Monsieur and Madame, that he condemns me to the most deplorable existence, without luxuries, without comforts, in a vile suburb of a country town. O non!' she cried, non—je ne me tairai pas—c'est plus fort que moi! I take these gentlemen and this lady for judges—is this kind? is it decent? is it manly? Do I not deserve better at his hands after having married him and'—(a visible hitch)—'done everything in the world to please him?'

I doubt if there were ever a more embarrassed company at a table, every one looked like a fool, and the husband like the biggest.

'The art of Monsieur, however,' said Elvira, breaking the silence, 'is not wanting in distinction.'

'It has this distinction,' said the wife, 'that nobody will buy it.'

'I should have supposed a clerkship——' began Stubbs.

'Art is Art,' swept in Leon. 'I salute Art. It is the beautiful, the divine, it is the spirit of the world, and the pride of life. But——' And the actor paused.

'A clerkship——' began Stubbs.

'I'll tell you what it is,' said the painter. 'I am an artist, and as this gentleman says, Art is this and the other, but of course, if my wife is going to make my life a piece of perdition all day long, I prefer to go and drown myself out of hand.'

'Go!' said his wife. 'I should like to see you!'

'I was going to say,' resumed Stubbs, 'that a fellow may be a clerk and paint almost as much as he likes. I know a fellow in a bank who makes capital water-colour sketches, he even sold one for seven-and-six.'

To both the women this seemed a plank of safety, each hopefully interrogated the countenance of her lord, even Elvira, an artist herself!—but indeed there must be something permanently mercantile in the female nature. The two men exchanged a glance, it was tragic,

not otherwise might two philosophers salute, as at the end of a laborious life each recognized that he was still a mystery to his disciples

Leon arose

'Art is Art,' he repeated sadly 'It is not water-colour sketches, nor practising on a piano It is a life to be lived '

'And in the meantime people starve!' observed the woman of the house 'If that's a life, it is not one for me '

'I'll tell you what,' burst forth Léon, 'you, Madame, go into another room and talk it over with my wife, and I'll stay here and talk it over with your husband It may come to nothing, but let's try '

'I am very willing,' replied the young woman, and she proceeded to light a candle 'This way, if you please ' And she led Elvira upstairs into a bedroom 'The fact is,' said she, sitting down, 'that my husband cannot paint '

'No more can mine act,' replied Elvira

'I should have thought he could,' returned the other, 'he seems clever '

'He is so, and the best of men besides,' said Elvira, 'but he cannot act '

'At least he is not a sheer humbug like mine, he can at least sing '

'You mistake Leon,' returned his wife warmly 'He does not even pretend to sing, he has too fine a taste, he does so for a living And, believe me, neither of the men are humbugs They are people with a mission—which they cannot carry out '

'Humbug or not,' replied the other, 'you came very near passing the night in the fields, and, for my part, I live in terror of starvation I should think it was a man's mission to think twice about his wife But it appears not Nothing is their mission but to play the fool 'Oh!' she broke out, 'is it not something dreary to think of that man of mine? If he could only do it, who would care? But no—not he—no more than I can!'

'Have you any children?' asked Elvira

'No, but then I may'

'Children change so much,' said Elvira, with a sigh

And just then from the room below there flew up a sudden snapping chord on the guitar, one followed after another, then the voice of Leon joined in, and there was an air being played and sung that stopped the speech of the two women The wife of the painter stood like a person transfixed, Elvira, looking into her eyes, could see all manner of beautiful memories and kind thoughts that were passing in and out of her soul with every note, it was a piece of her youth that went before her, a green French plain, the smell of apple-flowers, the far and shining ringlets of a river, and the words and presence of love

'Leon has hit the nail,' thought Elvira to herself 'I wonder how'

The how was plain enough Leon had asked the painter if there were no air connected with courtship and pleasant times, and having learnt what he wished, and allowed an interval to pass, he had soared forth into

Ô mon amante,
Ô mon désir,
Sachons cueillir
L'heure charmante!

'Pardon me, Madame,' said the painter's wife, 'your husband sings admirably well'

'He sings that with some feeling,' replied Elvira critically, although she was a little moved herself, for the song cut both ways in the upper chamber, 'but it is as an actor and not as a musician'

'Life is very sad,' said the other, 'it so wastes away under one's fingers'

'I have not found it so,' replied Elvira 'I think the good parts of it last and grow greater every day'

'Frankly, how would you advise me?'

'Frankly, I would let my husband do what he wished He is obviously a very loving painter, you have not yet tried him as a clerk And you know—if it were only as the possible father of your children—it is as well to keep him at his best.'

'He is an excellent fellow,' said the wife

They kept it up till sunrise with music and all manner of good fellowship, and at sunrise, while the sky was still temperate and clear, they separated on the threshold with a thousand excellent wishes for each other's welfare Castel-le-Gachis was beginning to send up its smoke against the golden East, and the church bell was ringing six

'My guitar is a familiar spirit,' said Léon, as he and Elvira took the nearest way towards the inn, 'it resuscitated a Commissary, created an English tourist, and reconciled a man and wife'

Stubbs, on his part, went off into the morning with reflections of his own

'They are all mad,' thought he, 'all mad—but wonderfully decent'

GEORGE GISSING

1857–1903

CHRISTOPHERSON

[From *The House of Cobwebs* 1906]

IT was twenty years ago, and on an evening in May All day long there had been sunshine Owing, doubtless, to the incident I am about to relate, the light and warmth of that long-vanished day live with me still, I can see the great white clouds that moved across the strip of sky before my window, and feel again the spring langour which troubled my solitary work in the heart of London

Only at sunset did I leave the house There was an unwonted sweetness in the air, the long vistas of newly lit lamps made a golden glow under the dusking flush of the sky With no purpose but to rest and breathe, I wandered for half an hour, and found myself at length where Great Portland Street opens into Marylebone Road Over the way, in the shadow of Trinity Church, was an old bookshop, well known to me the gas-jet shining upon the stall with its rows of volumes drew me across I began turning over pages, and—invariable consequence—fingering what money I had in my pocket A certain book overcame me, I stepped into the little shop to pay for it

While standing at the stall, I had been vaguely aware of some one beside me, a man who was also looking over the books, as I came out again with my purchase, this stranger gazed at me intently, with a half-smile of peculiar interest He seemed about to say something I walked slowly away, the man moved in the same direction Just in front of the church he made a quick movement to my side, and spoke

'Pray excuse me, sir—don't misunderstand me—I only wished to ask whether you have noticed the name written on the flyleaf of the book you have just bought?'

The respectful nervousness of his voice naturally made

me suppose at first that the man was going to beg, but he seemed no ordinary mendicant I judged him to be about sixty years of age, his long, thin hair and straggling beard were grizzled, and a somewhat rheumy eye looked out from his bloodless, hollowed countenance, he was very shabbily clad, yet as a fallen gentleman, and indeed his accent made it clear to what class he originally belonged The expression with which he regarded me had so much intelligence, so much good nature, and at the same time such a pathetic diffidence, that I could not but answer him in the friendliest way I had not seen the name on the flyleaf, but at once I opened the book, and by the light of a gas-lamp read, inscribed in a very fine hand, 'W R Christopherson, 1849'

'It is my name,' said the stranger, in a subdued and uncertain voice

'Indeed? The book used to belong to you?'

'It belonged to me' He laughed oddly, a tremulous little crow of a laugh, at the same time stroking his head, as if to deprecate disbelief 'You never heard of the sale of the Christopherson library? To be sure, you were too young, it was in 1860 I have often come across books with my name in them on the stalls—often I had happened to notice this just before you came up, and when I saw you look at it, I was curious to see whether you would buy it Pray excuse the freedom I am taking Lovers of books—don't you think——?'

The broken question was completed by his look, and when I said that I quite understood and agreed with him he crowed his little laugh

'Have you a large library?' he inquired, eyeing me wistfully

'Oh dear, no Only a few hundred volumes Too many for one who has no house of his own'

He smiled good-naturedly, bent his head, and murmured just audibly

'My catalogue numbered 24,718'

I was growing curious and interested Venturing no more direct questions, I asked whether, at the time he spoke of, he lived in London

'If you have five minutes to spare,' was the timid reply, 'I will show you my house I mean'—again the little crowing laugh—'the house which *was* mine '

Willingly I walked on with him He led me a short distance up the road skirting Regent's Park, and paused at length before a house in an imposing terrace

'There,' he whispered, 'I used to live The window to the right of the door—that was my library Ah!'

And he heaved a deep sigh

'A misfortune befell you,' I said, also in a subdued voice

'The result of my own folly I had enough for my needs, but thought I needed more I let myself be drawn into business—I, who knew nothing of such things—and there came the black day—the black day '

We turned to retrace our steps, and walking slowly, with heads bent, came in silence again to the church

'I wonder whether you have bought any other of my books?' asked Christopherson, with his gentle smile, when we had paused as if for leave-taking

I replied that I did not remember to have come across his name before, then, on an impulse, asked whether he would care to have the book I carried in my hand, if so, with pleasure I would give it him No sooner were the words spoken than I saw the delight they caused the hearer He hesitated, murmured reluctance, but soon gratefully accepted my offer, and flushed with joy as he took the volume

'I still have a few books,' he said, under his breath, as if he spoke of something he was ashamed to make known 'But it is very rarely indeed that I can add to them I feel I have not thanked you half enough '

We shook hands and parted

My lodging at that time was in Camden Town One afternoon, perhaps a fortnight later, I had walked for an hour or two, and on my way back I stopped at a bookstall in the High Street Some one came up to my side, I looked, and recognized Christopherson Our greeting was like that of old friends

'I have seen you several times lately,' said the broken

gentleman, who looked shabbier than before in the broad daylight, 'but I—didn't like to speak I live not far from here '

'Why, so do I,' and I added, without much thinking what I said, 'do you live alone?'

'Alone? oh no With my wife '

There was a curious embarrassment in his tone His eyes were cast down and his head moved uneasily

We began to talk of the books on the stall, and turning away together continued our conversation Christopherson was not only a well-bred but a very intelligent and even learned man On his giving some proof of erudition (with the excessive modesty which characterized him), I asked whether he wrote No, he had never written anything—never, he was only a bookworm, he said Thereupon he crowed faintly and took his leave

It was not long before we again met by chance We came face to face at a street corner in my neighbour hood, and I was struck by a change in him He looked older, a profound melancholy darkened his countenance, the hand he gave me was limp, and his pleasure at our meeting found only a faint expression

'I am going away,' he said in reply to my inquiring look 'I am leaving London '

'For good?'

'I fear so, and yet'—he made an obvious effort—'I am glad of it My wife's health has not been very good lately She has need of country air Yes, I am glad we have decided to go away—very glad—very glad indeed!'

He spoke with an automatic sort of emphasis, his eyes wandering, and his hands twitching nervously I was on the point of asking what part of the country he had chosen for his retreat, when he abruptly added

'I live just over there Will you let me show you my books?'

Of course I gladly accepted the invitation, and a couple of minutes' walk brought us to a house in a decent street where most of the ground-floor windows

showed a card announcing lodgings As we paused at the door, my companion seemed to hesitate, to regret having invited me

‘I’m really afraid it isn’t worth your while,’ he said timidly ‘The fact is, I haven’t space to show my books properly ’

I put aside the objection, and we entered With anxious courtesy Christopherson led me up the narrow staircase to the second-floor landing, and threw open a door On the threshold I stood astonished The room was a small one, and would in any case have only just sufficed for homely comfort, used as it evidently was for all daytime purposes, but certainly a third of the entire space was occupied by a solid mass of books, volumes stacked several rows deep against two of the walls and almost up to the ceiling A round table and two or three chairs were the only furniture—there was no room, indeed, for more The window being shut, and the sunshine glowing upon it, an intolerable stuffiness oppressed the air Never had I been made so uncomfortable by the odour of printed paper and bindings

‘But,’ I exclaimed, ‘you said you had only a *few* books! There must be five times as many here as I have ’

‘I forget the exact number,’ murmured Christopherson, in great agitation ‘You see, I can’t arrange them properly I have a few more in—in the other room ’

He led me across the landing, opened another door, and showed me a little bedroom Here the encumberment was less remarkable, but one wall had completely disappeared behind volumes, and the bookishness of the air made it a disgusting thought that two persons occupied this chamber every night

We returned to the sitting-room Christopherson began picking out books from the solid mass to show me Talking nervously, brokenly, with now and then a deep sigh or a crow of laughter, he gave me a little light on his history I learnt that he had occupied these lodgings for the last eight years, that he had been twice

married, that the only child he had had, a daughter by his first wife, had died long ago in childhood, and lastly—this came in a burst of confidence, with a very pleasant smile—that his second wife had been his daughter's governess. I listened with keen interest, and hoped to learn still more of the circumstances of this singular household.

'In the country,' I remarked, 'you will no doubt have shelf room?'

At once his countenance fell, he turned upon me a woebegone eye. Just as I was about to speak again sounds from within the house caught my attention, there was a heavy foot on the stairs, and a loud voice, which seemed familiar to me.

'Ah!' exclaimed Christopherson with a start, 'here comes some one who is going to help me in the removal of the books. Come in, Mr Pomfret, come in!'

The door opened, and there appeared a tall, wiry fellow, whose sandy hair, light blue eyes, jutting jaw-bones, and large mouth made a picture suggestive of small refinement but of vigorous and wholesome manhood. No wonder I had seemed to recognize his voice. Though we only saw each other by chance at long intervals, Pomfret and I were old acquaintances.

'Hullo!' he roared out, 'I didn't know you knew Mr Christopherson.'

'I'm just as much surprised to find that *you* know him!' was my reply.

The old book-lover gazed at us in nervous astonishment, then shook hands with the newcomer, who greeted him bluffly, yet respectfully. Pomfret spoke with a strong Yorkshire accent, and had all the angularity of demeanour which marks the typical Yorkshireman. He came to announce that everything had been settled for the packing and transporting of Mr Christopherson's library, it remained only to decide the day.

'There's no hurry,' exclaimed Christopherson. 'There's really no hurry. I'm greatly obliged to you, Mr Pomfret, for all the trouble you are taking. We'll settle the date in a day or two—a day or two.'

With a good-humoured nod Pomfret moved to take his leave Our eyes met, we left the house together Out in the street again I took a deep breath of the summer air, which seemed sweet as in a meadow after that stifling room My companion evidently had a like sensation, for he looked up to the sky and broadened out his shoulders

'Eh, but it's a grand day! I'd give something for a walk on Ilkley Moors'

As the best substitute within our reach we agreed to walk across Regent's Park together Pomfret's business took him in that direction, and I was glad of a talk about Christopherson I learnt that the old book-lover's land-lady was Pomfret's aunt Christopherson's story of affluence and ruin was quite true Ruin complete, for at the age of forty he had been obliged to earn his living as a clerk or something of the kind About five years later came his second marriage

'You know Mrs Christopherson?' asked Pomfret

'No! I wish I did Why?'

'Because she's the sort of woman it does you good to know, that's all She's a lady—my idea of a lady Christopherson's a gentleman too, there's no denying it, if he wasn't, I think I should have punched his head before now Oh, I know 'em well! why, I lived in the house with 'em for several years She's a lady to the end of her little finger, and how her husband can 'a borne to see her living the life she has, it's more than I can understand By ——! I'd have turned burglar, if I could 'a found no other way of keeping her in comfort'

'She works for her living, then?'

'Aye, and for his too No, not teaching, she's in a shop in Tottenham Court Road, has what they call a good place, and earns thirty shillings a week It's all they have, but Christopherson buys books out of it'

'But has he never done anything since their marriage?'

'He did for the first few years, I believe, but he had an illness, and that was the end of it Since then he's only loafed He goes to all the book-sales, and spends

the rest of his time sniffing about the second-hand shops She? Oh, she'd never say a word! Wait till you've seen her '

'Well, but,' I asked, 'what has happened How is it they're leaving London?'

'Aye, I'll tell you, I was coming to that Mrs Christopherson has relatives well off—a fat and selfish lot, as far as I can make out—never lifted a finger to help her until now One of them's a Mrs Keeting, the widow of some City porpoise, I'm told Well, this woman has a home down in Norfolk She never lives there, but a son of hers goes there to fish and shoot now and then Well, this is what Mrs Christopherson tells my aunt, Mrs Keeting has offered to let her and her husband live down yonder, rent free, and their food provided She's to be housekeeper, in fact, and keep the place ready for any one who goes down '

'Christopherson, *I* can see, would rather stay where he is '

'Why, of course, he doesn't know how he'll live with out the bookshops But he's glad for all that, on his wife's account And it's none too soon, I can tell you The poor woman couldn't go on much longer, my aunt says she's just about ready to drop, and sometimes, I know, she looks terribly bad Of course, she won't own it, not she, she isn't one of the complaining sort But she talks now and then about the country—the places where she used to live I've heard her, and it gives me a notion of what she's gone through all these years I saw her a week ago, just when she had Mrs Keeting's offer, and I tell you I scarcely knew who it was! You never saw such a change in any one in your life! Her face was like that of a girl of seventeen And her laugh—you should have heard her laugh!'

'Is she much younger than her husband?' I asked

'Twenty years at least She's about forty, I think '

I mused for a few moments

'After all, it isn't an unhappy marriage?'

'Unhappy?' cried Pomfret 'Why, there's never been a disagreeable word between them, that I'll warrant.

Once Christopherson gets over the change, they'll have nothing more in the world to ask for He'll potter over his books——'

'You mean to tell me,' I interrupted, 'that those books have all been bought out of his wife's thirty shillings a week?'

'No, no To begin with, he kept a few out of his old library Then, when he was earning his own living, he bought a great many He told me once that he's often lived on sixpence a day to have money for books A rum old owl, but for all that he's a gentleman, and you can't help liking him I shall be sorry when he's out of reach'

For my own part, I wished nothing better than to hear of Christopherson's departure The story I had heard made me uncomfortable It was good to think of that poor woman rescued at last from her life of toil, and in these days of midsummer free to enjoy the country she loved A touch of envy mingled, I confess, with my thought of Christopherson, who henceforth had not a care in the world, and without reproach might delight in his hoarded volumes One could not imagine that he would suffer seriously by the removal of his old haunts I promised myself to call on him in a day or two By choosing Sunday, I might perhaps be lucky enough to see his wife

And on Sunday afternoon I was on the point of setting forth to pay this visit, when in came Pomfret He wore a surly look, and kicked clumsily against the furniture as he crossed the room His appearance was a surprise, for, though I had given him my address, I did not in the least expect that he would come to see me, a certain pride, I suppose, characteristic of his rugged strain, having always made him shy of such intimacy

'Did you ever hear the like of *that*!' he shouted, half angrily 'It's all over They're not going And all because of those blamed books!'

And spluttering and growling, he made known what he had just learnt at his aunt's home On the previous afternoon the Christophersons had been surprised by a

visit from their relative and would-be benefactress, Mrs Keeting. Never before had that lady called upon them; she came, no doubt (this could only be conjec-tured), to speak with them of their approaching removal. The close of the conversation (a very brief one) was overheard by the landlady, for Mrs Keeting spoke loudly as she descended the stairs. 'Impossible! Quite impossible! I couldn't think of it! How could you dream for a moment that I would let you fill my house with musty old books? Most unhealthy! I never knew anything so extraordinary in my life, never!' And so she went out to her carriage, and was driven away. And the landlady, presently having occasion to go up-stairs, was aware of a dead silence in the room where the Christophersons were sitting. She knocked—pre-pared with some excuse—and found the couple side by side, smiling sadly. At once they told her the truth. Mrs Keeting had come because of a letter in which Mrs Christopherson had mentioned the fact that her husband had a good many books, and hoped he might be permitted to remove them to the house in Norfolk. She came to see the library—with the result already heard. They had the choice between sacrificing the books and losing what their relative offered.

'Christopherson refused?' I let fall.

'I suppose his wife saw that it was too much for him. At all events, they'd agreed to keep the books and lose the house. And there's an end of it. I haven't been so riled about anything for a long time!'

Meantime I had been reflecting. It was easy for me to understand Christopherson's state of mind, and without knowing Mrs Keeting, I saw that she must be a person whose benefactions would be a good deal of a burden. After all, was Mrs Christopherson so very unhappy? Was she not the kind of woman who lived by sacrifice—one who had far rather lead a life disagree-able to herself than change it at the cost of discomfort to her husband? This view of the matter irritated Pomfret, and he broke into objurgations, directed partly against Mrs Keeting, partly against Christopherson. It

was an 'infernal shame', that was all he could say And after all, I rather inclined to his opinion

When two or three days had passed, curiosity drew me towards the Christophersons' dwelling Walking along the opposite side of the street, I looked up at their window, and there was the face of the old bibliophile Evidently he was standing at the window in idleness, perhaps in trouble At once he beckoned to me, but before I could knock at the house-door he had descended, and came out

'May I walk a little way with you?' he asked

There was worry on his features For some moments we went on in silence

'So you have changed your mind about leaving London?' I said, as if carelessly

'You have heard from Mr Pomfret? Well—yes, yes —I think we shall stay where we are—for the present'

Never have I seen a man more painfully embarrassed He walked with head bent, shoulders stooping, and shuffled, indeed, rather than walked Even so might a man bear himself who felt guilty of some peculiar meanness

Presently words broke from him

'To tell you the truth, there's a difficulty about the books' He glanced furtively at me, and I saw he was trembling in all his nerves 'As you see, my circumstances are not brilliant' He half-choked himself with a crow 'The fact is we were offered a house in the country, on certain conditions, by a relative of Mrs Christopherson, and, unfortunately, it turned out that my library is regarded as an objection—a fatal objection We have quite reconciled ourselves to staying where we are'

I could not help asking, without emphasis whether Mrs Christopherson would have cared for life in the country But no sooner were the words out of my mouth than I regretted them, so evidently did they hit my companion in a tender place

'I think she would have liked it,' he answered, with a strangely pathetic look at me, as if he entreated my forbearance

'But' I suggested, 'couldn't you make some arrangements about the books? Couldn't you take a room for them in another house, for instance?'

Christopherson's face was sufficient answer, it reminded me of his pennilessness 'We think no more about it,' he said 'The matter is settled—quite settled'

There was no pursuing the subject At the next parting of the ways we took leave of each other

I think it was not more than a week later when I received a postcard from Pomfret He wrote 'Just as I expected Mrs C seriously ill' That was all

Mrs C could, of course, only mean Mrs Christopherson I mused over the message—it took hold of my imagination, wrought upon my feelings and that afternoon I again walked along the interesting street

There was no face at the window After a little hesitation I decided to call at the house and speak with Pomfret's aunt It was she who opened the door to me

We had never seen each other, but when I mentioned my name and said I was anxious to hear news of Mrs Christopherson, she led me into a sitting-room, and began to talk confidentially

She was a good-natured Yorkshirewoman, very unlike the common London landlady 'Yes, Mrs Christopherson had been taken ill two days ago It began with a long fainting fit She had a feverish, sleepless night, the doctor was sent for, and he had her removed out of the stuffy, book-cumbered bedroom into another chamber, which luckily happened to be vacant There she lay utterly weak and worn, all but voiceless, able only to smile at her husband, who never moved from the bedside day or night He, too,' said the landlady, 'would soon break down he looked like a ghost, and seemed "half-crazed"'

'What,' I asked, 'could be the cause of this illness?'

The good woman gave me an odd look, shook her head, and murmured that the reason was not far to seek

'Did she think,' I asked, 'that disappointment might have something to do with it?'

Why, of course she did For a long time the poor lady had been all but at the end of her strength, and *this* came as a blow beneath which she sank

'Your nephew and I have talked about it,' I said 'He thinks that Mr Christopherson didn't understand what a sacrifice he asked his wife to make'

'I think so too,' was the reply 'But he begins to see it now, I can tell you He says nothing but——'

There was a tap at the door, and a hurried tremulous voice begged the landlady to go upstairs

'What is it, sir?' she asked

'I'm afraid she's worse,' said Christopherson, turning his haggard face to me with startled recognition 'Do come up at once, please'

Without a word to me he disappeared with the landlady I could not go away, for some ten minutes I fidgeted about the little room, listening to every sound in the house Then came a footfall on the stairs, and the landlady rejoined me

'It's nothing,' she said 'I almost think she might drop off to sleep, if she's left quiet He worries her, poor man, sitting there and asking her every two minutes how she feels I've persuaded him to go to his room, and I think it might do him good if you went and had a bit o' talk with him'

I mounted at once to the second-floor sitting-room, and found Christopherson sunk upon a chair, his head falling forwards, the image of despairing misery As I approached he staggered to his feet He took my hand in a shrinking, shamefaced way, and could not raise his eyes I uttered a few words of encouragement, but they had the opposite effect to that designed

'Don't tell me that,' he moaned, half resentfully 'She's dying—she's dying—say what they will, I know it'

'Have you a good doctor?'

'I think so—but it's too late—it's too late'

As he dropped to his chair again I sat down by him The silence of a minute or two was broken by a thunderous rat-tat at the house-door Christopherson leapt

to his feet, rushed from the room, I, half fearing that he had gone mad, followed to the head of the stairs.

In a moment he came up again, limp and wretched as before.

'It was the postman,' he muttered. 'I am expecting a letter.'

Conversation seeming impossible, I shaped a phrase preliminary to withdrawal, but Christopherson would not let me go.

'I should like to tell you,' he began, looking at me like a dog under punishment, 'that I have done all I could. As soon as my wife fell ill, and when I saw—I had only begun to think of it in that way—how she felt the disappointment, I went at once to Mrs Keeting's house to tell her that I would sell the books. But she was out of town. I wrote to her—I said I regretted my folly—I entreated her to forgive me and to renew her kind offer. There has been plenty of time for a reply, but she doesn't answer.'

He had in his hand what I saw was a bookseller's catalogue, just delivered by the postman. Mechanically he tore off the wrapper and even glanced over the first page. Then, as if conscience stabbed him, he flung the thing violently away.

'The chance has gone!' he exclaimed, taking a hurried step or two along the little strip of floor left free by the mountain of books. 'Of course she said she would rather stay in London! Of course she said what she knew would please me! When—when did she ever say anything else! And I was cruel enough—base enough—to let her make the sacrifice!' He waved his arms frantically. 'Didn't I know what it cost her? Couldn't I see in her face how her heart leapt at the hope of going to live in the country! I knew what she was suffering, I *knew* it, I tell you! And, like a selfish coward, I let her suffer—I let her drop down and die—die!'

'Any hour,' I said, 'may bring you the reply from Mrs Keeting. Of course it will be favourable, and the good news——'

'Too late, I have killed her! That woman won't

write She's one of the vulgar rich, and we offended her pride, and such as she never forgive '

He sat down for a moment, but started up again in an agony of mental suffering

'She is dying—and there, there, that's what has killed her!' He gesticulated wildly towards the books 'I have sold her life for these Oh!—oh!'

With this cry he seized half a dozen volumes, and, before I could understand what he was about, he had flung up the window-sash, and cast the books into the street Another batch followed, I heard the thud upon the pavement Then I caught him by the arm, held him fast, begged him to control himself

'They shall go!' he cried 'I loathe the sight of them They have killed my dear wife!'

He said it sobbing, and at the last words tears streamed from his eyes I had no difficulty now in restraining him He met my look with a gaze of infinite pathos, and talked on while he wept

'If you knew what she has been to me! When she married me I was a ruined man twenty years older I have given her nothing but toil and care You shall know everything—for years and years I have lived on the earnings of her labour Worse than that, I have starved and stinted her to buy books Oh, the shame of it! The wickedness of it! It was my vice—the vice that enslaved me just as if it had been drinking or gambling I couldn't resist the temptation—though every day I cried shame upon myself and swore to overcome it She never blamed me, never a word—nay, not a look—of a reproach I lived in idleness I never tried to save her that daily toil at the shop Do you know that she worked in a shop?—She, with her knowledge and her refinement leading such a life as that! Think that I have passed the shop a thousand times, coming home with a book in my hands! I had the heart to pass, and to think of her there! Oh! Oh!'

Some one was knocking at the door I went to open, and saw the landlady, her face set in astonishment, and her arms full of books

'It's all right,' I whispered. 'Put them down on the floor there, don't bring them in. An accident.'

Christopherson stood behind me, his look asked what he durst not speak. I said it was nothing, and by degrees brought him into a calmer state. Luckily, the doctor came before I went away, and he was able to report a slight improvement. The patient had slept a little and seemed likely to sleep again. Christopherson asked me to come again before long—there was no one else, he said, who cared anything about him—and I promised to call the next day.

I did so, early in the afternoon. Christopherson must have watched for my coming, before I could raise the knocker the door flew open, and his face gleamed such a greeting as astonished me. He grasped my hand in both his.

'The letter has come! We are to have the house.'

'And how is Mrs. Christopherson?'

'Better, much better, Heaven be thanked! She slept almost from the time when you left yesterday afternoon till early this morning. The letter came by the first post, and I told her—not the whole truth,' he added, under his breath. 'She thinks I am to be allowed to take the books with me, and if you could have seen her smile of contentment. But they will all be sold and carried away before she knows about it, and when she sees that I don't care a snap of the fingers—!'

He had turned into the sitting-room on the ground floor. Walking about excitedly, Christopherson gloried in the sacrifice he had made. Already a letter was dispatched to a bookseller, who would buy the whole library as it stood. But would he not keep a few volumes? I asked. Surely there could be no objection to a few shelves of books, and how would he live without them? At first he declared vehemently that not a volume should be kept—he never wished to see a book again as long as he lived. But Mrs. Christopherson? I urged. Would she not be glad of something to read now and then? At this he grew pensive. We discussed the matter, and it was arranged that a box should be packed with

select volumes and taken down into Norfolk together with the rest of their luggage Not even Mrs Keeting could object to this, and I strongly advised him to take her permission for granted

And so it was done By discreet management the piled volumes were stowed in bags, carried downstairs, emptied into a cart, and conveyed away, so quietly that the sick woman was aware of nothing In telling me about it, Christopherson crowed as I had never heard him, but methought his eye avoided that part of the floor which had formerly been hidden, and in the course of our conversation he now and then became absent, with head bowed Of the joy he felt in his wife's recovery there could, however, be no doubt The crisis through which he had passed had made him, in appearance, a yet older man, when he declared his happiness tears came into his eyes, and his head shook with a senile tremor

Before they left London, I saw Mrs Christopherson—a pale, thin, slightly made woman, who had never been what is called good-looking, but her face, if ever face did so, declared a brave and loyal spirit She was not joyous, she was not sad, but in her eyes, as I looked at them again and again, I read the profound thankfulness of one to whom fate has granted her soul's desire

MARY COLERIDGE

1861–1907

THE KING IS DEAD, LONG LIVE THE KING

[From *Gathered Leaves* 1910]

IT was not very quiet in the room where the king lay dying People were coming and going, rustling in and out with hushed footsteps, whispering eagerly to each other, and where a great many people are all busy making as little noise as possible, the result is apt to be a kind of bustle, that weakened nerves can scarcely endure

But what did that matter? The doctors said he could hear nothing now He gave no sign that he could Surely the sobs of his beautiful young wife, as she knelt by the bedside, must else have moved him

For days the light had been carefully shaded Now, in the hurry, confusion, and distress, no one remembered to draw the curtains close, so that the dim eyes might not be dazzled But what did that matter? The doctors said he could see nothing now

For days no one but his attendants had been allowed to come near him Now the room was free for all who chose to enter What did it matter? The doctors said he knew no one

So he lay for a long time, one hand flung out upon the counterpane, as if in search of something The queen took it softly in hers, but there was no answering pressure At length the eyes and mouth closed, and the heart ceased to beat

'How beautiful he looks,' they whispered one to another

When the king came to himself it was all very still —wonderfully and delightfully still, as he thought, wonderfully and delightfully dark It was a strange,

unspeakable relief to him—he lay as if in heaven The room was full of the scent of flowers, and the cool night air came pleasantly through an open window A row of wax tapers burned with soft radiance at the foot of the bed on which he was lying, covered with a velvet pall, only his head and face exposed Four or five men were keeping guard around him, but they had fallen fast asleep

So deep was the feeling of content which he experienced that he was loth to stir Not till the great clock of the palace struck eleven, did he so much as move Then he sat up with a light laugh

He remembered how, when his mind was failing him, and he had rallied all his powers in one last passionate appeal against the injustice which was taking him away from the world just when the world most needed him, he had heard a voice saying 'I will give thee yet one hour after death If, in that time, thou canst find three that desire thy life, live!'

This was his hour, his hour that he had snatched away from death How much of it had he lost already? He had been a good king, he had worked night and day for his subjects, he had nothing to fear, and he knew that it was very pleasant to live, how pleasant, he had never known before, for, to do him justice, he was not selfish, it was his unfinished work that he grieved about when the decree went forth against him Yet, as he passed out of the room where the watchers sat heavily sleeping, things were changed to him somehow The burning sense of injustice was gone Now that he came to think of it, he had done very little True that it was his utmost, but there were many better men in the world, and the world was large, very large it seemed to him now Everything had grown larger He loved his country and his home as well as ever, but in the night it had seemed as if they must perish with him, and now he knew that they were still unchanged

Outside the door he paused a moment, hesitating whither to go first Not to the queen The very thought of her grief unnerved him He would not see her till

he could once more clasp her in his arms, and bid her weep tears of joy only because he was come again After all, he had but an hour to wait Before the castle clock struck twelve, he would be back again in life, remembering these things only as a dream He sighed a little to think of it

'All that to do over again some day,' he said, as he recalled his last moments

Almost he turned again to the couch he had so lately left

'But I have never yet done anything through fear,' said the king

And he smiled as he thought of the terms of the compact His city lay before him in the moonlight

'I could find three thousand as easily as three,' he said 'Are they not all my friends?'

As he passed out of the gate, he saw a child sitting on the steps, crying bitterly

'What is the matter, little one?' said the sentinel on guard, stopping a moment

'Father and mother have gone to the castle, because the king's dead,' sobbed the child, 'and they've never come back again, and I'm so tired and so hungry! And I've had no supper, and my doll's broken Oh! I do wish the king were alive again!'

And she burst into a fresh storm of weeping It amused the king not a little

'So this is the first of my subjects that wants me back!' he said

He had no child of his own He would have liked to try and comfort the little maiden, but there were other calls upon him just then He was on his way to the house of his great friend, the man whom he loved more than all others A kind of malicious delight possessed him, as he pictured to himself the deep dejection he should find him in

'Poor Amyas!' he said 'I know what I should be feeling in his place I am glad he was not taken I could not have borne his loss'

As he entered the courtyard of his friend's house,

lights were being carried to and fro, horses were being saddled, an air of bustle and excitement pervaded the place Look where he might, he could not see the face he knew so well He entered at the open door His friend was not in the hall Room after room he vainly traversed—they were all empty A sudden horror took him Surely Amyas was not dead of grief?

He came at length to a small private apartment, in which they had spent many a happy, busy hour together, but his friend was not here either, though, to judge by appearances, he could only just have left it Books and papers were tumbled all about in strange confusion, and bits of broken glass strewed the floor

A little picture was lying on the ground The king picked it up, and recognized a miniature of himself, the frame of which had been broken in the fall He let it drop again, as if it had burnt him The fire was blazing brightly, and the fragments of a half-destroyed letter lay, unconsumed as yet, in the fender It was in his own writing He snatched it up, and saw it was the last he had written, containing the details of an elaborate scheme which he had much at heart He had only just thrown it back into the flames when two people entered the room, talking together, one a lady, the other a man, booted and spurred as though he came from a long distance

'Where is Amyas?' he asked

'Gone to proffer his services to the new king, of course,' said the lady 'We are, as you may think, in great anxiety He has none of the ridiculous notions of his predecessor, who, indeed, hated him cordially The very favour Amyas has hitherto enjoyed will stand in his way at the new court I only hope he may be in time to make his peace He can, with truth, say that he utterly disapproved of the foolish reforms which his late master was bent on making Of course, he was fond of him in a way, but we must think of ourselves, you know People in our position have no time for sentiment He started almost immediately after the king's death I am sending his retinue after him'

houses, and such like What right's *he* got to interfere, I'd like to know?'

'Down with all kings! says I,' put in a third, 'but if we're to have 'em, let 'em behave as sich I like a young fellow as isn't afraid of his missus, and knows port wine from sherry'

'Wanted to abolish capital punishment, he did!' cried a fourth 'Thought he'd get more work out of the poor fellows in prison, I suppose? Depend on it, there's some reason like that at the bottom of it We ain't so very particular about the lives of our subjects for nothing, we ain't,' an expression of opinion in which all the rest heartily concurred The clock struck again as the king turned away, he felt as if a storm of abuse from some one he had always hated would be a precious balm just then He entered the state prison, and made for the condemned cell Capital punishment was not abolished yet, and in this particular instance he had certainly felt glad of it

The cell was tenanted only by a little haggard-looking man, who was writing busily on his knee The king had only seen him once before, and he looked at him curiously

Presently the gaoler entered, and with him the first councillor, a man whom his late master had greatly loved and esteemed The convict looked up quickly

'It was not to be till to-morrow,' he said Then, as if afraid he had betrayed some cowardice, 'but I am ready at any moment May I ask you to give this paper to my wife?'

'The king is dead,' said the first councillor gravely 'You are reprieved His present majesty has other views You will, in all probability, be set at large to-morrow'

'Dead?' said the man with a stunned look

'Dead!' said the first councillor, with the impressiveness of a whole board

The man stood up, passing his hand across his brow

'Sir,' he said earnestly, 'I respected him For all he was a king, he treated me like a gentleman He, too, had a young wife Poor fellow, I wish he were alive, again!'

There were tears in the man's eyes as he spoke

The third quarter struck as the king left the prison He felt unutterably humiliated The pity of his foe was harder to bear than the scorn of his friends He would rather have died a thousand deaths than owe his life to such a man And yet, because he was himself noble, he could not but rejoice to find nobility in another He said to himself sternly that it was not worth what he had gone through He reviewed his position in no very self-complacent mood The affection he had so confidently relied upon was but a dream The people he was fain to work for were not ripe for their own improvement A foolish little child, a generous enemy, these were his only friends After all, was it worth while to live? Had he not better get back quietly and submit, making no further effort? He had learnt his lesson, he could 'lie down in peace, and sleep, and take his rest' The eternal powers had justified themselves What matter though every man had proved a liar? The bitterness had passed away, and he seemed to see clearly

Thick clouds had gathered over the moon, and the cold struck through him All at once a sense of loneliness that cannot be described rushed over him, and his heart sank Was there really no one who cared—no one? He would have given anything at that moment for a look, a single word of real sympathy He longed with sick longing for the assurance of love

There were yet a few moments left How had he borne to wait so long? This, at least, he was sure of, and this was all the world to him He began to find comfort and consolation in the thought, he forgave—indeed he almost forgot—the rest Yet he had fallen very low, for, as he stood at the door of his wife's room, he hesitated whether to go in What if this, too, were an illusion? Had he not best go back before he knew?

'But I have never yet done anything through fear,' said the king

His wife was sitting by the fire alone, her face hidden, her long hair falling round her like a veil At the first sight of her, a pang of self-reproach shot through him How could he ever have doubted?

She was wearing a ring that he had given her—a ring she wore always, and the light sparkled and flashed from the jewel Except for this, there was nothing bright in the room

He ardently desired to comfort her He wondered why all her ladies had left her Surely one might have stayed with her on this first night of her bereavement? She seemed to be lost in thought If she would only speak, or call his name! But she was quite silent

A slight noise made the king start A secret door in the wall opened, the existence of which he had thought was known only to himself and his queen, and a man stood before her

She put her finger to her lips, as though to counsel silence, and then threw herself into his arms

'You have come,' she said—'Oh, I am so glad! I had to hold his hand when he was dying I was frightened sitting here by myself I thought his ghost would come back, but he will never come back any more We may be happy always now,' and drawing the ring from her finger, she kissed it, weeping, and gave it to him

When midnight struck, the watchers wakened with a start, to find the king lying stark and stiff, as before, but a great change had come over his countenance

'We must not let the queen see him again,' they said

HUBERT CRACKANTHORPE

1870–1896

SAINT-PÉ

[From *Sentimental Studies* 1895]

I

REGULARLY, three times a week, every Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday, he and his dog came to beg He was very tall and very gaunt, and his clothes were all plastered with quaint patches, and ravelled along the hems But he was always scrupulously clean His flowing grey beard was silky and well combed, and the red skin of his hands glistened, as with much polishing And his sabots, which were many sizes too large, were stuffed with clean straw, and he always left them on the doorstep, and came into the house bare-footed

He called himself Saint-Pe—why, I could never discover—for one day he admitted to me that he had been baptized altogether differently He and the cure, and the officier de sante and I represented the classes at Sallespisse, but Saint-Pe alone *vivait en rentier* For from sunrise to sunset he was idle, he had not done a day's work since the war He lived in a ramshackle, one roomed, mud-floored building, from one corner of which at night, through the broken tiles he could lie and watch the stars But the house was his own property, and every Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday morning, he shuffled out of it in his clumsy sabots to beg around the neighbourhood

Saint-Pe's dog was named Pluton Once upon a time he had been of the race of St Hubert, and Saint-Pe, when he learned my name, hastened to recommend the animal to my special attention Whatever Pluton had been once in the distant days of his youth, he was now but a wriggling collection of bones, encased in a worn-out skin I never knew him venture to carry his tail other

wise than tight under his belly, and whenever I met him alone, or skulking along behind his master, he never failed to greet me with an interminable, complicated series of grovelling, Japanese-like obeisances

And, as I have said, the two came to the house every Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday, and while Pluton sneaked off to rummage obsequiously for refuse in the scullery, Saint-Pe mumbled out the whole lamentation of his woes, as lugubriously, as elaborately, as if he were a complete stranger Four sous per visit was my allowance to Saint-Pe, and when he had pocketed them somewhere amid those mysterious patches of his coat, he would clump away down the drive, noisily praying to the Virgin for the future repose of my soul

Eudore and Saint-Pe were neighbours, and Eudore hated Saint-Pe after his obstinate, uncompromising fashion, and never altogether forgave me for encouraging the old impostor 'C'est de la canaille' he would repeat sullenly, when, to tease him, I related Saint-Pe's doings, 'c'est comme des *lagas*, ça vit sur les gens'

But if, in Eudore's opinion, Saint-Pe was a worthless parasite, Pluton was a cursed thief One night Eudore had missed five of his young ducks, and he had shouted across the hedge to Saint-Pe that the very next time he would shoot that cur of his dead on the spot At which threat Saint-Pe shrugged his bony shoulders, and Pluton retreated inside the house, grovelling more obsequiously than ever

'Il est malin,' Saint-Pé confided to me the next morning 'Il trouve ce qu'il trouve — et ça ne paraît point—regardez' And, indeed, despite the five young ducks, Pluton looked more starved than before

II

One Tuesday, about the time of the sowing of the maize, Saint-Pe never appeared, and on the Thursday I missed him again So at sunset, when I had done my work, I strolled up to his house, wondering what could have happened to him The door was open, a half-cut loaf of

maize-bread stood on the table, but there was no sign of Saint-Pe Then I heard the scraping of a spade Saint Pe was behind the house, digging

He put down his spade and shuffled up to me And he began to repeat the whole of his elaborate lamentation—he was miserable, he was poor, life was hard, he had no one to look after him, he appealed to good, charitable folks to help him in his old age, 'and now,' he concluded, 'my dog, the old Pluton, the only thing that the good God had left to me, my dog, my dog, he is dead ' He led me behind his house, and lifting his coat, all plastered with patches, uncovered poor Pluton's corpse with his tail stretched behind him, stark and straight, as I had never seen it while he lived 'Et maintenant,' said Saint Pe proudly, pointing to the half-dug grave, 'et maintenant, monsieur, je travaille ' And once more, from the very beginning, he went through his lamentation, con cluding with the appeal to the good, charitable folks to help him

I asked him how it had happened He jerked his head towards the hedge, beyond which stood Eudore's house 'It was this morning, at day-break A shot—paf !' (And he imitated, dramatically, the gesture of shooting) 'And it was only one that he had taken—just one miser able little duck Only one I assure you, monsieur, he hadn't had time to take more than one ' And for the third time he repeated his lamentation

Eudore came out of his house, and, seeing us, strolled up to the hedge and looked over Saint-Pe went back to his digging Eudore stood silent for several minutes, presently he said, half to himself—

'Ça faisait pitie de voir une bête affamee comme ça '

Then, turning to Saint-Pe, he called in patois—

'Stop a minute, I will dig for you '

He pushed his way through a gap in the hedge, and taking the spade, dug out the grave And when he had finished, Saint-Pé lifted the stiff carcass tenderly and placed it inside, then shovelled the earth over it with his clumsy sabots